THE WAR
ILLUSTRATED

9

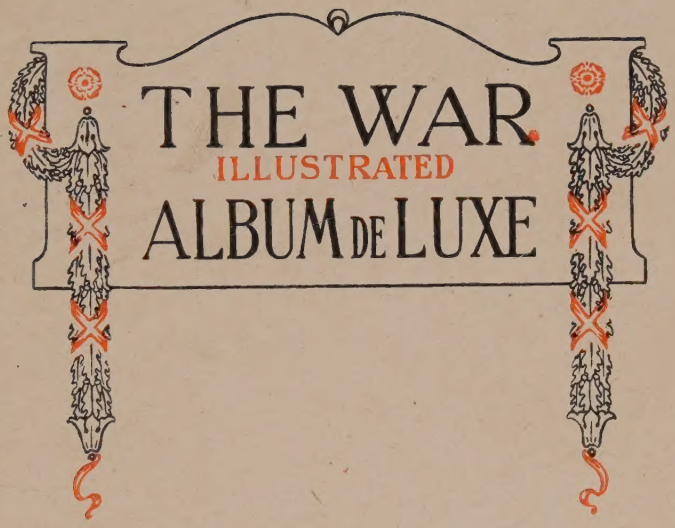

THE WAR
ILLUSTRATED
ALBUM DE LUXE

Photo by H. Walter Barnett.

FIELD-MARSHAL SIR EDMUND H. H. ALLENBY, G.C.B., K.C.M.G.

(Created a Viscount, August, 1919).

Commander-in-Chief in Palestine.

Frontispiece.

THE WAR ILLUSTRATED ALBUM DE LUXE

The Story of the Great
European War told by
Camera, Pen and Pencil

EDITED BY

J. A. HAMMERTON

CHAPTERS BY

ARTHUR D. INNES, M.A.
HAMILTON FYFE, EDWARD WRIGHT
EMILE CAMMAERTS

1,530 ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME X.

THE LAST PHASE

PUBLISHED BY
THE AMALGAMATED PRESS, LIMITED
LONDON, 1919

Editor's Note to Volume X

WITH this volume our pictorial history of the war is brought to its glorious and happy end. The period covered in these pages is from August 4th, 1918—when, with the opening of the fifth year of the world conflict, the tide of victory had turned definitely in favour of the Allies—to June 28th, 1919, when, in the Hall of Mirrors, at Versailles, Germany's plenipotentiaries affixed their signature to the Treaty of Peace dictated by their conquerors. The three months from August 8th to November 11th—when the Armistice ended the awful killing time—witnessed a succession of triumphs of the allied arms, and of British arms in particular, unprecedented in military annals. The succeeding months were occupied with negotiations of statesmen of an importance to humanity compared with which all previous human deliberations are insignificant. Epic contests and crowning mercies are the subject matter of the volume here presented to the world.

EVEN the briefest summary of the British operations on the western front in the last fourteen weeks of the war stirs the heart like a trumpet-call. On August 8th the British Fourth Army began its offensive east of Amiens with the object, triumphantly achieved, of clearing Amiens and of reducing the "pocket" there. Then came the great fight for Bapaume and the Second Battle of the Somme, the Canadians' break-through the Wotan line between Drocourt and Quéant, and the storming of the outer defences of the main Hindenburg Line. Cambrai fell to the British on October 9th, after a terrific onslaught on the Hindenburg defences the previous day over a front of twenty-one miles, this being the really decisive battle of the war. October 14th brought the battle for the Belgian Coast, with the capture of Zeebrugge and Ostend and the enforced German evacuation of Belgium. Valenciennes fell on November 1st, and on the 11th victorious Britons re-entered Mons, where invincible Britons had begun their heroic fight to save civilisation.

TO the glorious arms of France were ascribed in the same period the victories at Lassigny massif, Laon, La Fère, the Forest of Gobain, and in the Argonne Forest, where soldiers of America shared the laurels of their comrades of the sister Republic. September 12th-15th saw the Americans' swift and sweeping triumph in the salient of St. Mihiel, and on November 6th Old Glory was borne into Sedan. Elsewhere, too, the might of the Central Powers was crumbling into dust. All alike out-generalled and out-fought, the Bulgarians surrendered unconditionally on September 30th, the Turks on October 30th, the Austrians on November 3rd. All her buttresses thus knocked away, Germany succumbed, and on November 11th, of imperishable memory, accepted the Allies' terms, presented to them by Marshal Foch.

OF the other historic events recorded in this volume, there is only space to name the surrender of the German submarines off Harwich and of the German High Sea Fleet to Admiral Sir David Beatty off the Firth of Forth, the most dramatically impressive humiliation of a once great Power ever witnessed; and, less spectacular but of infinite importance to humanity, the meeting of the Peace Conference in Paris, with the inauguration of the League of Nations and the signing of the Peace Treaty at Versailles. Proportionate commemoration is made of all the outstanding incidents of the world-wide unrest as the great storm of war subsided, including the occupation by the Allies of the bridge-heads of the Rhine and the prosecution of military operations against the armed forces of Bolshevism in Northern Russia.

SURVEYING this now completed work as a whole, the Editor has no false shame in declaring his pride and pleasure in the satisfactory accomplishment of a task of a magnitude far greater than could be estimated in advance. Out of and around the Great War there will arise a literature much more vast than that already devoted to the Napoleonic Wars of a hundred years ago. But, however many the books may be that shall be published in the future, and whatever their nature, this pictorial record will never be superseded. In the ten volumes of THE WAR ILLUSTRATED ALBUM are preserved thousands of the best of the innumerable official photographs of every salient event in every department of human activity in the greatest crisis of world history, authentic pictures, palpitating with the life that was in them at the time, of the men who fought and the women who worked without intermission through five most awful years that freedom might not perish from off the earth. Of that noble army of men and women no more complete or adequate pictorial representation can ever be forthcoming than is contained in the series of volumes here concluded. Their gradual compilation has been a laborious task, but ample reward is contained in the knowledge that here is one monument to the heroes and heroines of the Great War which can never cease to enthral and inspire those before whose eyes its pages are unrolled.

J. A. H.

Table of Contents

Principal Literary Contents

	PAGE
The Moving Drama of the Great War: X.—The Last Phase. *By Arthur D. Innes, M.A.*	3249
Amiens in Its Darkest Hours. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3268
The Cambrai Battlefield. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3280
Star of Mons in the Ascendant. *By Edward Wright*	3291
Lieutenant-General Sir John Monash, K.C.B.	3294
General Gouraud	3314
The Flanders Battlefields. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3317
Mons After Four Years. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3322
In My Native Land Set Free. *By Emile Cammaerts*	3324
The Allied March to the Rhine. *By Edward Wright*	3330
France on the Rhine. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3332
General Mangin	3338
The Hour of the Great Reckoning. *By Edward Wright*	3346
M. Georges Clemenceau	3352
General Sir Edmund Allenby. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3386
Lieutenant-General Sir W. R. Marshall, G.C.M.G.	3416
General Sir G. F. Milne, G.C.M.G.	3432
Twilight of the German Gods. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3442
Last Sailing of the Hun Armada. *By Edward Wright*	3450
Everyday Heroes of the R.A.F. *By Hamilton Fyfe*	3491

List of Maps

From Battle-front to Rhine Bridge-heads	3328
The Passing of Germany's Dream of World Dominion	3340
Chart of Air Raids and Naval Bombardments	3490

Special Full-Colour Plates

Field-Marshal Sir Edmund Allenby, G.C.B.	Frontispiece
M. Clemenceau	Facing page 3280

Monochrome Colour Plates

Formal Entry of British Fifth Army into Lille	Facing page 3249
Over the Alps in Aeroplanes	" " 3265
Triumphant Entry of French into Strasbourg	" " 3297
Grenadier Guards in Cologne	" " 3328
Marshal Foch and the "Big Four" at Paris Peace Conference	" " 3344
H.M. Hercules Passing through Kiel Canal	" " 3360
Enemy Rulers Who Lost their Thrones	" " 3441
British Cruiser Squadrons Lying Off Rosyth	" " 3457
British Food Ships under Naval and Aerial Escort	" " 3472
Web into which Night-raiding Gothas Feared to Fly	" " 3488
How the British Navy Celebrated the Signing of the Armistice	" " 3536
Memorial Cross of Sacrifice	" " 3584

The Last Phase

PAGE
British Aerial Activity on Western Front 3251
General Instructing Machine-gunner 3252
Canadian General in Tank 3253
Victory Marches in Allied Capitals 3256
Great Captains in London's Pageant 3257
French Engineers Searching for Mines. 3259
British Pilots Preparing for Flight 3264

Britain's Glorious Victories in the West

Driving the Boche from Albert's Smoking Ruins . . . 3266
Broken Walls and Railway Wrack of Re-won Albert . . 3267
Along the Line of Triumph from Somme to Rheims . . 3269
Small Details that were Part of a Great Story . . . 3270
Heroes of Hill 70 Who Closed In on Lens 3271
Horse, Foot and Guns In Pursuit of the Foe . . . 3272
Where Anzacs Gained Fresh Glory in France . . . 3273
Ways That Led To and Through the "Wotan Switch" . 3274
Canadian Heroes of the Great Allied Advance . . . 3275
Great Canal Barrier Broken by British Troops . . . 3276
Maple Leaf Warriors Breach the "Wotan" Line . . 3277
Joy at Awakening From a Four Years' Nightmare . . 3278
Active Anzac Guns that Gave the Foe No Rest . . . 3279
Canadian Chariots Gathered to Capture Cambrai . . . 3281
Chaotic Ruin Wrought by the Hun in Cambrai . . . 3282
Messengers of Mars In Training for the Field . . . 3283
Clearing the Line as Australia Advanced 3284
Joy in Lille Delivered From the German 3285
In Lille: Jubilation After Silent Suffering 3286
President Poincaré and the Liberation of Lille . . . 3287
Canada, Conqueror of Vimy, Takes Valenciennes . . . 3288
Prince of Wales Joins In French Rejoicing 3289
Followers of the Flying Fancy on the Field 3290
War Closed in Hallowed Mons, Where It Began . . . 3292
PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR—LIEUT.-GEN. SIR JOHN MONASH, K.C.B. 3293

With France Triumphant

Lassigny and Soissons Re-won by French Heroism . . 3296
Proud Moments in the Progress of the French Army . . 3297
Sir Douglas Haig Salutes the French in Flanders . . 3298
Handiwork of the Invader in Tortured Arras . . . 3299
Italy's King Honours French Commander-in-Chief . . 3300
Under German Gun Fire in Aisne and Champagne . . 3301
Canine Contingent in the French Trenches 3302
Courage and Courtesy Flourish in France 3303
Metz Welcomes General Pétain With Great Joy . . . 3304
Art's Spirit Shining Amid the Murk of War . . . 3305
Life's Daily Claims Behind the Clash of War . . . 3306
French Land-Mines and Trip-Mines for the Teutons . . 3307
Wonderful Dug-outs and Sacred Soil Recaptured . . . 3308
War-time Field Work of the Daughters of France . . 3309
Wonderful Impressions of a Charge Dead On . . . 3310
Poilus Protected Against Teutonic Poisoners . . . 3311
Observers Aloft for Gunners in the Valley 3312
PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR—GENERAL GOURAUD 3313

The Restoration of Belgium

With Belgium's Armies Advancing to Bruges . . . 3316
Belgium's Hero King Re-Enters Bruges Re-Won . . . 3318
At Last! Rapturous Greeting to Conquering Heroes . . 3319
Great Allied Peace Pageant in Belgium's Capital. . . 3520
Dauntless Men of Little Nation's Fight 3321
Broken and Disgraced the Boche Evacuates Belgium . . 3323
Rejoicings in Tournai Released From Tyranny . . . 3325
Working While Waiting for the Day of Deliverance . . 3326

The Great March to the Rhine

British Advance to Keep Watch on the Rhine . . . 3329
British National Anthem Rings Across the Rhine . . 3331
French Arms Beyond the Rhine 3333
To the Rhine! Retribution After Fifty Years . . . 3334
New World Knights Guard River of Old Romance . . 3335
Signs of the Conquest from Kiel and Cologne. 3336
PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR—GENERAL MANGIN 3337

From Armistice to Peace

PAGE
In Spa Where Fateful Gatherings Took Place . . . 3341
Victory Leaders' Historic Task at Versailles . . . 3342
Deciding the Terms of Germany's Surrender . . . 3343
Securing by the Pen What Was Won by the Sword . . 3344
Historic Photograph of Germans at the Bar of Justice. . 3345
German Delegates Who Heard Their Country's Fate . . 3347
Austria, Vanquished and Fallen, Submits to the Allies . . 3349
Signing the Peace Treaty at Versailles 3350
Men Who "In Faith" Signed the Treaty of Peace . . 3351

Italy's Crowning Victories

Handy With British Guns in Italian Heights . . . 3354
Triumphant Italians Installed in Trieste 3355
Allied Troops Who Shared In Italy's Triumph . . . 3356
How Italy Swept Austria from Adriatic Sea . . . 3357
On the Edge of Great Events Among the Alps . . . 3358
Italian Boats that Went By Mountain Ways . . . 3359
Titanic Feat of Italian Seamen at Trieste 3360
Italy's Road to Victory Through the Mountains . . . 3361
Great Guns to the Firing Line by Powerful Crane . . 3362
Wounded Men Return by Wire Through Space . . . 3363
How Italy Guarded Against Prisoner Spies 3364

The Americans on Land and Sea

American Manhood Makes Good on the Marne . . . 3366
America's Winning Ace in the St. Mihiel Salient . . . 3367
Ready to Reinforce Those Who Fight for Freedom . . 3368
Resourceful, Resolute, and Not To Be Stayed . . . 3369
Forward With Freedom's Fine Fighting Reserves . . 3370
America's First Army Moves Towards the Moselle . . 3371
American Troops in the Triumphant Advance . . . 3372
America Mobilising Her Many Millions 3373
America's Aid in Mitigating the Wounds of War . . . 3374
Activity of Shipways and Gun-Works in America . . 3375
Taking a Hand in the War Against Piracy 3376
Ready to Vindicate Her Rights to Sail the Seas . . . 3377
Glimpses of Some Warships of the American Navy . . 3378
America Getting Ready for War in All Elements . . 3379
The First U.S. President to Visit Europe 3380
American Activity Against All Freedom's Foes . . . 3381
Welcome Home for Heroes of America's Navy . . . 3382

Final Victories Over the Turk

Help from the Hedjaz in Ousting the Ottoman . . . 3384
Hedjaz Arabs in Arms Against Turkish Tyranny . . . 3385
Arabs Who Helped the Allies in the Hedjaz . . . 3387
"Hadji Guglielmo" and Some of His Hangman Gang . 3388
Palestine Finally Freed From Turkish Misrule . . . 3389
British Camelry Out After Turkish Patrols 3390
Western Science in an Eastern Environment . . . 3391
Echoes and Episodes of General Allenby's Advance . . 3392
Doughty Gurkhas and Punjabis in the Desert . . . 3393
Miracles and Magic in the Mysterious East . . . 3394
With General Allenby in His Palestine Advance . . . 3396
Where British Armies Pressed Forward in the East . . 3397
Brothers in Arms from East and West in Bagdad . . 3398
Obstacle Race After the Turks Along the Tigris . . . 3399
On the Teuton-Freed Tigris from Basra to Bagdad . . 3400
Gallant Gurkhas Making Good in Mesopotamia . . . 3401
Bits of River Beauty from Basra to Bagdad . . . 3402
Trench and Transport Scenes Along the Tigris . . . 3403
Humane Treatment of the Turks Taken in the Pursuit . 3404
Men of the East Render Ready Help to the West . . 3405
Indian Prince's Red Cross Gift for the Tigris . . . 3406
Means and Modes of Locomotion in Mesopotamia . . 3407
From the Ruins of Babylon to Modernised Bagdad . . 3408
Splendid Work of the Gunboats on the Tigris . . . 3409
With General Marshall's Men in Mesopotamia . . . 3410
Prowess and Pity in Mesopotamia and Palestine . . . 3411
Gallipoli: Where the British Kept Watch and Ward . . 3412
Allies' Flags Fly Proudly Off the Golden Horn . . . 3413
Allies' Flags Fly at Constantinople and Cattaro . . . 3414
PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR—LIEUT.-GEN. SIR W. R. MARSHALL, G.C.M.G. 3415

Closing Events in the Balkans

PAGE

Allied Reinforcements Move Up from Salonika . . . 3418
Hardy Albanian Highlanders Help the Allies . . . 3419
Fine Fighting Triumphs of Greeks and Serbs . . . 3420
Patriotic Guardians of the Glory of Old Greece . . . 3421
Busy Balkan Highways and Byway Solitude . . . 3422
Field-Gun Breasting a Bank in the Balkan Line . . . 3423
Minor Mishaps to Mules and Motor-Cars . . . 3424
British Trench Artillery on the Balkan Front . . . 3425
Church Parade 'Midst Macedonian Hills . . . 3426
Entrenching in the Hills near Monastir . . . 3427
Serbia Resurgent Re-Enters Into Her Own . . . 3428
Dawn of the Day of Deliverance for Serbia . . . 3429
Bulgaria Breaks Away From the Central Powers . . . 3430
PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR—GENERAL SIR G. F. MILNE, G.C.M.G. . . . 3431

Germany and Her Allies In Defeat

Heads of Hundom Plotting New Frightfulness . . . 3434
Prisoners of War, Spoils of War, and Dogs of War . . . 3435
Appalling German Abuse of a Wayside Calvary . . . 3436
Lords of Misrule and Some of Their Poor Puppets . . . 3437
"Kamerad! Kamerad! Pardon!" . . . 3438
Germany Preparing for the War After the War . . . 3439
With the Kaiser in Bruges: Hun Camera Records . . . 3440
Giant German Periscope With Telescopic Tube . . . 3441
War Lords Who Sought Personal Safety in Flight . . . 3443
Under the Red Flag in Republican Berlin . . . 3444
Without and Within: Germany Deciding Her Destiny . . . 3445
Imperial Berlin Invaded by Red Revolution . . . 3446
"Red" Victims of Chaos in the Prussian Capital . . . 3447
Ebert Beats Extremists in Barricaded Berlin . . . 3448

The War by Sea

Ending the Vain Dream of German Sea-Dominion . . . 3451
Locked in the Firth of Forth at Set of Sun . . . 3452
Britain's Most Glorious Hour Since Trafalgar . . . 3453
Some Arrivals at "U Boat Avenue," Harwich . . . 3454
Tragedy of the Sea Revealed After Four Years . . . 3455
Striking Marvels of Britain's Naval Power . . . 3456
British Naval Activity Against the Bolshevists . . . 3457
Under the Union Jack in Wintry Baltic Waters . . . 3458
Under the White Ensign in Kiel's Black Waters . . . 3459
Murder on the High Seas by the Kaiser's Minions . . . 3460
Links in the Line That Girdled the Globe . . . 3461
Fearing Neither Gale Nor Lurking Submarine . . . 3462
Stealthy Hun Highwaymen of the High Seas . . . 3463
Britannia's Day of Triumph . . . 3464
German U Boats' Day of Doom . . . 3465
How Our Coast Patrols Countered the Pirates . . . 3466
Under-Water Homes of Our Modern Mermen . . . 3467
Keeping the British Flag Up and the U Boats Down . . . 3468
Hazards by Gun Fire and Facts by Heliograph . . . 3469
Camera Records of Prussian Piracy . . . 3470
Young Seacraft in the Pouch of the Kangaroo . . . 3471
Pirate Craft Wrecked by Gale Off Jutland . . . 3472
Iron Walls and Iron Will That Guarded Our Island . . . 3473
Shattered But Not Submerged by Sea Pirates . . . 3474
"He Sinks Into Thy Depths with Bubbly Groan" . . . 3475
Scenes in the War Above and Under Water . . . 3476
Britons Strong to Save and Determined to Destroy . . . 3477
Science Aids in Detecting the Unseen Submarine . . . 3478
Bubbles That Burst Where U Boats Met Their Fate . . . 3479
Eyes of the Navy Search East African Coastline . . . 3480
A Bolt From the Blue for the Lurking U Boat . . . 3481
Ships That Kept Watch and Ward in the Adriatic . . . 3482
Cynical Abuse of the S.O.S. Signal at Sea . . . 3484
Men of the Allied Navies in Their Lighter Mood . . . 3485
Naval and Aircraft Activity in the Adriatic . . . 3486
Sea Power—As It Is Understood by Germany . . . 3487

The War in the Air

Some Wonderful Exploits of British Airmen . . . 3488
Paris Precautions Against the Raiding Gothas . . . 3489
Up and Down: British and German Giants of the Air . . . 3492
War in the Air: Our Allies' Wonderful Machines . . . 3493
Concrete and Cave Retreats from the Air-Raiders . . . 3494
Various Victims of Vagrant and Warring Airmen . . . 3495
Truth: The Most Potent Poison to the Hun . . . 3496
Arms and Apparatus for Night-Flying Airmen . . . 3497
Lights and Shades of the War in the Air . . . 3498
Marks and Men of Mark in Rival Air Fleets . . . 3499
Searchlights & Sidelights on Raids & Raiders . . . 3500

World-wide Echoes of the War

PAGE

Rallying Points of Activity Against Russian Anarchy . . . 3502
Bolshevist Regime in Russia: Lenin and His Satellites . . . 3503
With Britain's Ordered Forces in Distracted Russia . . . 3504
Barring the Red Terror From the White North . . . 3505
Mating the Huns' Insidious Moves in Siberia . . . 3506
Allies' Activity Against Bolshevist Anarchy . . . 3507
Indomitable Gunners—Italian and British . . . 3508
Varied War Activities of the Devoted V.A.D. . . . 3509
Britons Released by Revolutionary Berlin . . . 3510
How Nature Hides and Heals the Wounds of War . . . 3511
Eastern Students of Western Ways of Warfare . . . 3512
Trophies of War That Swelled Two City Triumphs . . . 3513
Under Changing Skies: East in West and West in East . . . 3514
Gunners in Training and Guns Trained on the Hun . . . 3515
Duty and Piety from Dieppe to the Piave . . . 3516
Warm Welcome Waiting at the Journey's End . . . 3517
Men and Machines That Overcame All Obstacles . . . 3518
City of London Honours Leaders From Overseas . . . 3519
The Dragon-Flag Unfurled Against The Hun . . . 3520
British Prisoners in the Hands of the Huns . . . 3521
How Interned Britons Fared at Ruhleben . . . 3522

Last Glimpse of Britain in War-time

Edith Cavell's Home-coming to Rest in Life's Green . . . 3524
Soul-inspiring Scenes in Abbey, Street and Shrine . . . 3525
London's Delirious Joy at the Coming of Peace . . . 3526
Royal Welcome Home for Prisoners of War . . . 3527
Women From Far and Near United in War Work . . . 3528
Royal Recognition of Teeming Tyneside Toil . . . 3529
Royal Progress Through the Industrial North . . . 3530
Interesting Incidents in Loyal Lancashire . . . 3531
England's Great Effort in Making Munitions . . . 3532
Builders of the Ships for the Fleet That Flies . . . 3533
Ministering Women Whom Men Held in Honour . . . 3534
Vignettes of Women's Varied War Work . . . 3535
Women's War Energy Expressed in Many Manners . . . 3536
Work of Women in Salvaging Waste of War . . . 3537
Almost Ready for Active Service . . . 3538
Turning a Big Gun in a British Ordnance Factory . . . 3539
Our Soldiers' Christmas Links with Little Folks . . . 3540
Skill and Heroism Helped to Win the War . . . 3541
Empire Soldiers in Mimic Warfare at Aldershot . . . 3542
The Golden Harvest in Fields Immune from War . . . 3543
New Troops in Training in the Old Homeland . . . 3544

Golden Deeds of Heroism

Heroes and Heroines Honoured for War Service . . . 3546
Decorated for Deeds of Great Heroism . . . 3547
Valour Crowned With the Victoria Cross . . . 3548
Crosses and Medals Conferred for High Courage . . . 3549
Honour for Heroes Who Maintained the Tradition . . . 3550
Decorated for Conspicuous Courage and Devotion . . . 3551
Valiant Men Rewarded With the Victoria Cross . . . 3552
Heroes Honoured for Valour and Devotion . . . 3553
Honoured as the Bravest Amongst the Brave . . . 3554
Decorated for Deeds of Gallantry and Devotion . . . 3555
Decorations Won by Daring and Devotion to Duty . . . 3556
Heroes of the Season Awarded the Coveted Cross . . . 3557
Britain's Chosen Sons: More Heroes of the V.C. . . . 3558
Decorated for Valour: More of Britain's Brave Sons . . . 3559
Winners of the V.C. in the Last Weeks of War . . . 3560

Records of the Regiments

Wellington Battalion, N.Z. . . . 3562
The 1st (Royal) Dragoons . . . 3563
The Durham Light Infantry . . . 3564
The Worcesters . . . 3565
The Royal Munster Fusiliers . . . 3567
The Honourable Artillery Company . . . 3568
The South Lancashires . . . 3569
Royal Highlanders of Canada . . . 3570
The Somerset Light Infantry . . . 3571
The Welsh Guards . . . 3572
Pipers of the Black Watch Celebrate a Victory . . . 3573
Man-Hunting 'Mid the Shattered Walls of Puisieux . . . 3574
The 7th Canadian Infantry . . . 3575
Gunners and Kilties Score on the Somme . . . 3576
The North Staffordshires . . . 3577
Changing Guard Somewhere on the Somme . . . 3578
The Roll of Honoured Dead . . . 3579–3595
Diary of the War . . . 3596–3600

To face page

FORMAL ENTRY OF THE VICTORIOUS BRITISH FIFTH ARMY INTO LIBERATED LILLE, OCTOBER 28, 1918.

The Moving Drama of the Great War

X.—The Last Phase

Progress of Events in all Theatres of the War from Beginning of the Fifth Year to the Signing of Peace

Written by
ARTHUR D. INNES, M.A.,
Author of "A History of the British Nation," etc.

"THE MOVING DRAMA OF THE WAR." These were the words which stood at the head of the pages of this record four years ago, when the curtain had been rung up and the first scenes enacted in the most terrific, the most tremendous of dramas, with the world for its stage and the nations for its actors. A drama which would have taxed the uttermost powers of Æschylus or Shakespeare, but a drama fundamentally Æschylean.

We said then, and we say again now, that its theme was the same eternal theme which most of all stirred the soul of the great Greek tragedian—the Pride of Power which dares to deem itself boundless, to defy the Ancient of Days, to pile Pelion upon Ossa for the scaling of Olympus, to challenge the Righteousness which is from Everlasting to Everlasting; the spirit which the Greeks called *hybris*, a word for which we have no modern equivalent, a spirit which is doomed by the law of the universe to suffer that overwhelming retribution which they called Nemesis, the vindication of the Eternal Justice.

And never was drama, with that divine theme for its *motif*, wrought out with more impressive, more decisive artistry. Through four long flaming years, four thunderous acts, the tragedy was working up to its triumphant climax in suchwise that only to those whose faith was most resolute the coming victory seemed assured, though it was only the feeble and the fearful who at any time relaxed in the grim determination to see the thing through to the end, whatever the end might be.

At the moment when the fifth act opened, the might of the Power of Evil was to all appearance undiminished. In the last encounter, the Titans had struck out fiercely and so strongly that the warriors of the high gods had been all but beaten down, and there were many who feared that at the next assault the foe would deliver the *coup de grace*.

The Victory of Armageddon

And then, in four short wonderful months, the Titans went down. They struck; the blow was parried, and beneath the storm of hammer-strokes which fell upon them, they crashed to their knees, lay prone, and bit the dust. Where in all the world's history was there ever a reversal so unlooked for, so sudden, so swift, so overwhelming, so complete? Twice men have known something that may in some sort be compared with it, when in the ten tremendous days of July, 1588, the overshadowing might of Spain was shattered; and when, two thousand years before, the Great King saw his power go down in the bay of Salamis, between the rising and the setting of the sun. Something like it, too, there was when Charles, "the Hammer," smote the Moslem at Poictiers, when the hordes of Attila were overthrown on the field of Chalons, and when the towers of Nineveh crashed in flames.

In each case the victory meant the delivery of the world from a paralysing, a soul-destroying domination. In two of them the issue was between barbarism and civilisation; in two—perhaps we may say in three—between opposed types of civilisation. All had the same dramatic element of surprise. But in the magnitude of the forces engaged, as in the conclusive character of the results, all those five triumphs are thrown into the shade by the victory of our Armageddon.

We have already recorded what may be called the introductory scene in this last act of the drama.

In July, in the last weeks of the war's fourth year, the enemy was confident of victory. One more smashing blow, and the doom of the Allies would be sealed. Yet Foch had said, "I still prefer my cards to Ludendorff's." Ludendorff scoffed at Foch's claim to holding the master cards. The blow was delivered—"it missed his helm but" scratched, not gashed "his thigh." Held up along two-thirds of the line of attack, the Germans succeeded in thrusting a fresh salient towards Paris. But the counter-stroke, swift and unlooked for, was not parried. The new ground lost was recovered; the enemy was thrust out of a valuable area won three months before; the instant menace was checked; the southern pocket was emptied, and the enemy was back on the line of the Vesle by the first day of the fifth year.

Men began to breathe more freely. But though the French now apparently had the initiative, past experience left plenty of room to doubt whether it was more than apparent, whether there was anything more than a slight, if real, recovery, whether it would be sufficient to meet the German onslaught. Where would that next blow fall?

Geography of the Front

It did not fall; or, rather, the next blow was delivered, not by the Germans, but by the British. And now, to form any sort of coherent idea of the events of the next three months, we must once again impress on our minds the geographical positions of the front.

From north to south the line lay from Nieuport on the coast to just in front of Ypres. Below Ypres came the Kemmel salient, lost in the April thrust towards Calais. Then from Givenchy to the north bank of the Scarpe facing Lens, the British line had remained unshaken. Pivoting on this point, it had swung back past Albert, but still covering Amiens, linking up with the French at the Luce. Thence it curved eastward from behind Montdidier by Soissons and Rheims on to the Verdun corner, where it turned south again, running to Belfort, but with the German salient of St. Mihiel somewhat to the south of Verdun. On the twentieth day after Mangin's surprise, the Germans had extricated themselves from the dangerous pocket on the south of the Vesle. It began to look as if Mangin had effectively parried the German blow, but nothing more.

Then, on August 8th, Haig struck in front of Amiens, at the point of junction with the French, on the south of Albert. On his right and centre the surprise was complete, driving the enemy back seven miles; on the left it encountered a stubborn resistance.

On the second day (Friday) the dominating positions at Morlancourt and Chipilly were carried, and the whole line was advanced a mile or two. On the same day the whole of Debeney's army came into action—only the left, in immediate touch with the British, had hitherto been engaged—and Montdidier was enveloped; on the third day Montdidier was carried, Chaulnes and Roye were under the allied fire, and the railway line between them was cut; on the fourth day (Sunday) the French Third Army, under Humbert, on Debeney's right, facing the Lassigny *massif*, joined in. Lassigny was a hard nut to crack, and till it should be cracked, a rapid advance of the centre would be undesirable. The public

wanted to hear that we were in Chaulnes and Roye; but as they had already ceased to be of practical value to the enemy, no costly effort was made to force an entry. Once more did the slowing down mean that the effort was exhausted? The menace to Amiens had indeed disappeared, but on the tenth day the Germans were still maintaining their hold on the Lassigny position.

On that day the question of exhaustion was answered by Mangin on Humbert's right—between Lassigny and Soissons—Mangin, who had struck the first blow thirty days earlier. Not a big movement this time, but yet another deliberate extension of the battle area, which in three days had the effect of turning, and consequently clearing, Lassigny, carrying the advance into the outskirts of Roye and Chaulnes, and threatening Noyon.

Haig's Thirteen Days' Battle

In the thirteen days' battle, then (August 8—20) inaugurated by Haig, there had been no real pause, no moment allowed for recovery and concentration; instead, there had been a systematic extension of the battle line—Rawlinson opening on the extreme right of the British, then Debeney on his right, then Humbert on Debeney's right, finally Mangin on Humbert's right—always compelling the enemy to reinforce on the left of his defence. Now it was Haig's turn to assume a fresh British initiative in a fresh quarter.

On the fourteenth day, August 21st, Byng, with the Third Army, was launched against the enemy on a section of the line midway between Arras and Albert, facing Bapaume, which was six miles from the centre of the seven-mile front on which the movement opened. Like Mangin's on the 17th, the progress on the first day, Wednesday, was small and was accompanied by no large captures, but on the two succeeding days the offensive extended on the right past Arras to Morlancourt on the extreme left of Rawlinson's advance, and another couple of miles on its own left, the whole line moving forward well over the Ancre and capturing Albert and Thiepval. On the fourth day, Saturday, the outskirts of Bapaume and of Croissilles, north-west of it, were reached; on Sunday, the 25th, the thrust was again extended on the left past Arras, beyond the Scarpe and up the Scarpe Valley; and Monchy, that scene of historic combats in the earlier battles of the Scarpe, was reached once more.

Now we can see that, in the course of the seventeen days from August 8th, three sectors, forming together one continuous line, had come into the engagement. First Rawlinson, Debeney, Humbert; then Mangin, on the right; then Byng, on the left. The right centre had gone forward with Mangin's move, while Debeney and the left centre had remained apparently stabilised. It was not so, however, with Mangin; he, when Byng started, maintained the forward pressure on the right, the centre still remaining almost stationary; while his advance was threatening Noyon on one side, and the flank of the Chemin des Dames on the other, when Monchy at the other end of the battle-line was reached.

Severity of Allied Pressure

In the following days an even pressure was kept up along the entire front from the Scarpe to the Aisne. Wancourt and Monchy were captured; on the 27th the French entered Roye; next day they swept through Chaulnes, while Croissilles fell to the British; on the 29th the French were in Noyon, and the British in Bapaume and Combles—farther east, indeed, in this quarter than they had ever been before. The capture of Mt. St. Quentin on the Saturday ensured that of Peronne on Sunday, September 1st. The severity of the pressure, the difficulties of the Germans in what had now manifestly become a retreat to the Hindenburg Line, received significant confirmation in the north; for it compelled them to withdraw troops and consequently to draw back in the Kemmel salient, straightening their line from in front of Ypres to in front of Givenchy. Little more than three weeks of fighting had incidentally brought about the capture by the British alone of nearly 60,000 prisoners and over 650 guns.

To summarise: the breaking-up of the German offensive had been the work of Mangin and his French colleagues—not forgetting the services of the American contingent—in the last fortnight of July. A week later the true offensive of the Allies had opened with the blow of the British on their extreme right, in front of Amiens, the attack extending regularly along the successive French armies on the right till at the end of a fortnight it had reached its limit in that direction, with Mangin and the Aisne.

At the end of that fortnight its second phase had again opened with a British blow—Byng's advance—starting the extension of the battle-line to the left, and carrying it in the course of another week beyond the Scarpe and to the point of junction with the old line, which from there up to Givenchy had held its own unshaken against the German flood. In these three weeks nearly all the ground overrun by the enemy between the Scarpe and the junction of the Vesle with the Aisne had been recovered.

Opening of Third Phase

On September 2nd, then, the third phase opened with a third British blow—again on the extreme left, under Horne. In the region of the Scarpe the troops were now confronted by the Quéant-Drocourt "switch-line," covering Douai, forming a part of the system popularly known as the Hindenburg Line, which had hitherto defied attack and justified the German claim that it was impregnable.

That proud claim was now to be shattered. No troops in the world are more irresistible in headlong fiery attack than the Canadians, and it was they who, having been secretly transferred from the position farther south where they had recently been adding to their laurels, were launched on that day against the "impregnable" defences on the south of the Scarpe, along with Lancashire men, and smashed clean through it at the first onslaught, making a breach, the breadth of which was soon extended to a front of six miles, through the village of Cagnicourt. As a mere feat of arms the achievement was brilliant; the position which had been carried, too, would be of material service in future operations; but, beyond this, the one smashing stroke had completely dissipated the belief—by this time almost ingrained in many minds—that the Germans had prepared or could prepare defences which could not be broken through.

The piercing of the "Wotan" switch-line did not, however, immediately clear the way to Douai. It had been largely a victory of Tank tactics, but in front of Douai there still lay water defences, which had hitherto proved insurmountable for Tanks. The blow did not bring about an immediate decision, to the disappointment of over-sanguine prophets.

A Grinding Advance

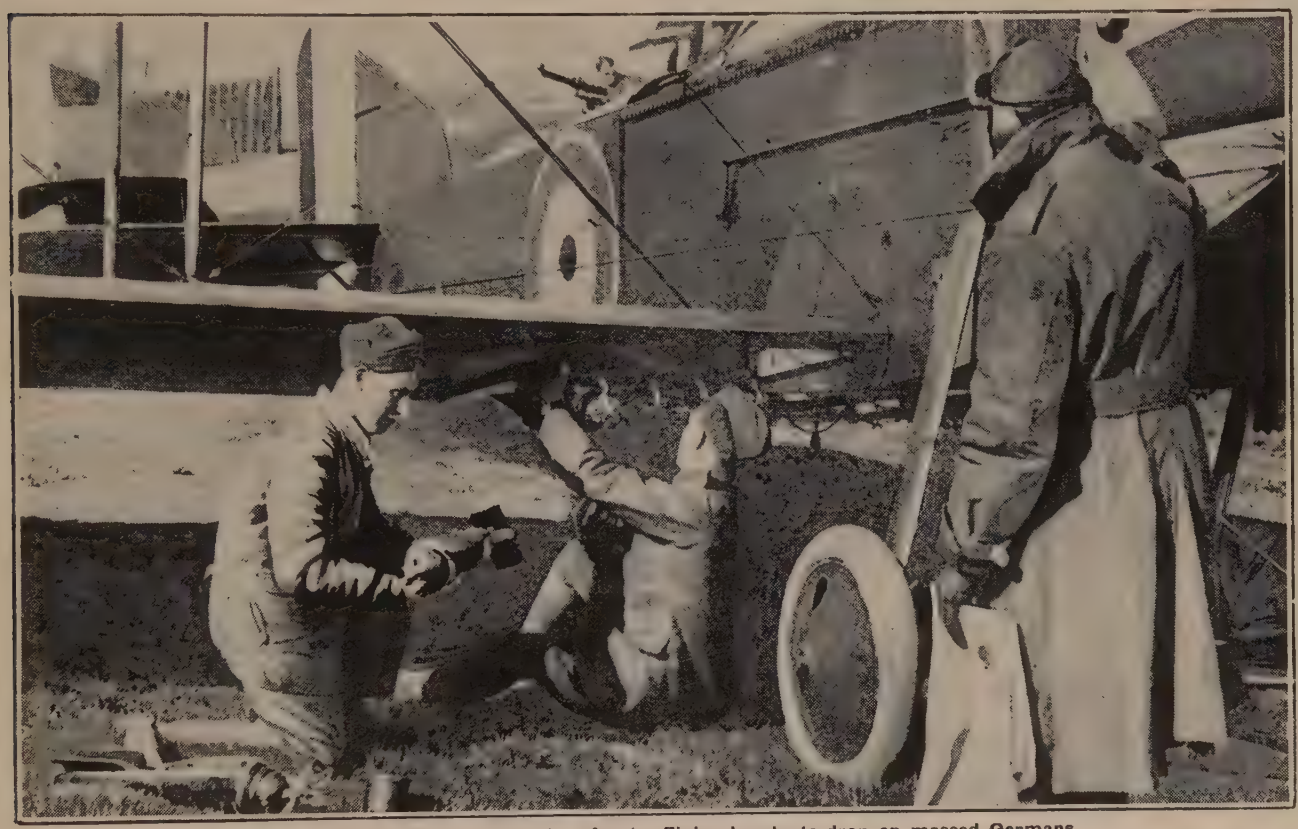
For ten days there were no sensational developments, only a continuous grinding advance along the whole line from Horne's army on its left to Mangin's on the right. Byng was pressing towards Cambrai, Rawlinson between Cambrai and St. Quentin, Debeney and Humbert towards St. Quentin and between St. Quentin and La Fère; with Mangin hammering at the Gobain *massif* on the flank of La Fère covering Laon, and on the west end of the Chemin des Dames heights. Taking the whole line, Mangin was making the least progress, for a double reason. North of La Fère the Germans were retreating, of set purpose, to the strongest positions of the Hindenburg Line; in front of Mangin they were holding on with all their might to positions which they never meant to abandon, positions of immense strength which were to be held at all costs. Mangin hammered, not because he was trying to carry the positions, but because by doing so he compelled the enemy to concentrate there every available man and gun to prevent them from being carried. The time would come when those positions, instead of being a strength to the German armies, would

become a dangerous salient from which they would have to extract themselves as best they could.

Nor was this all that was happening in those days; for farther north the salient between Givenchy and Ypres was all but completely flattened out when Plumer's troops drove the Germans out of "Plug Street." This was not because a new offensive had been assumed in this area, but because our men were hurrying up an evacuation imposed upon the enemy by the necessity for reducing their numbers here in order to provide reinforcements elsewhere.

Fighting Over Old Ground

Almost the whole way, except in the immediate neighbourhood of the broken Quéant-Drocourt line, the British and French were still fighting over old ground won long before and lost in the Germans' spring offensive. By this time, however—September 12th—there was little enough left to recover, save the Chemin des Dames.



British aerial activity on the western front. Fixing bombs to drop on massed Germans.

Nor was an equivalent for this to be wanting long. Away on their left to the south of Verdun, the Germans, at a very early stage of the war, had driven a wedge into the French line, the salient of St. Mihiel. As with that other salient far to the north where Plumer was operating, the Germans would seem to have come to the conclusion that an evacuation, for the shortening of the line and the redistribution of troops, had become advisable, not to say necessary. But the moment reluctantly chosen by them for evacuation was also the moment chosen by the Allies for ejection.

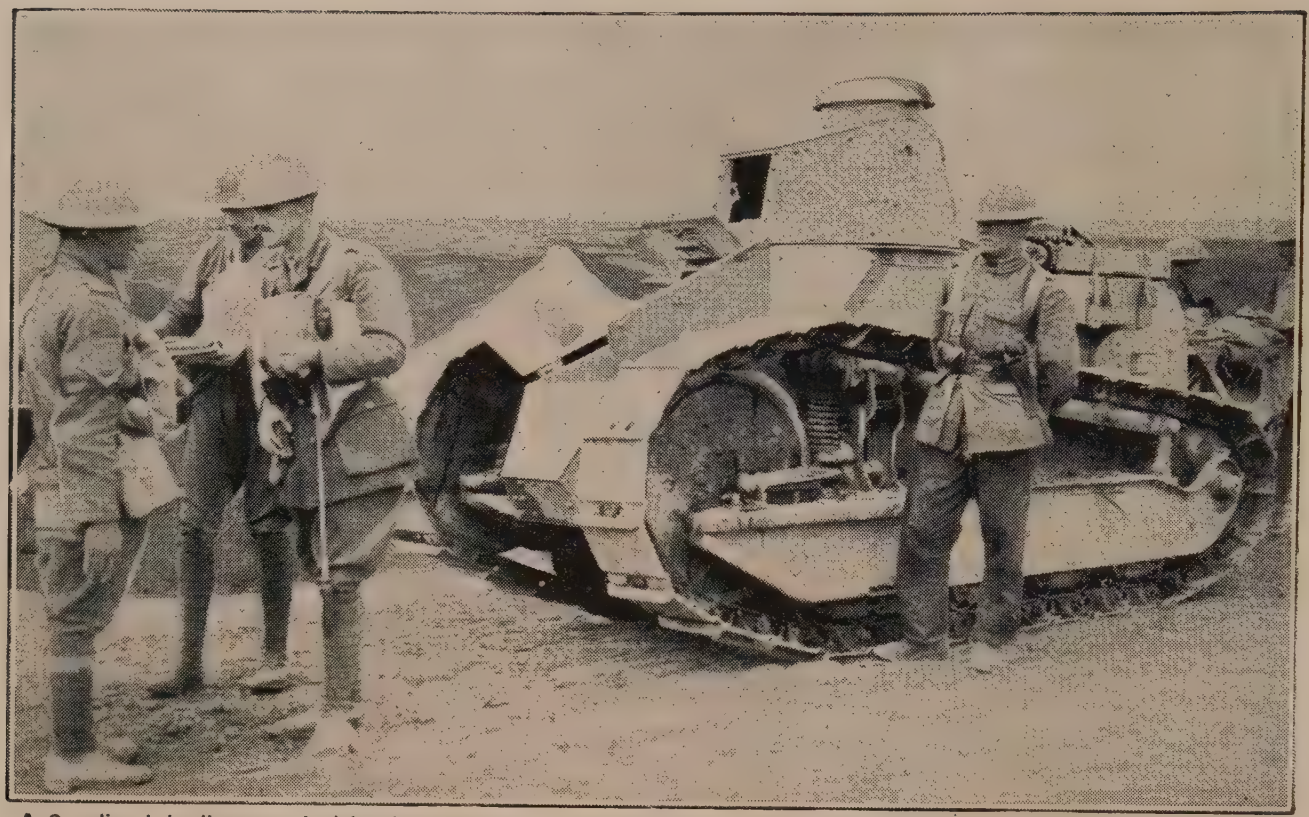
Two months before, American troops had made their effective début in the fighting-line, and had surprised the Germans most unpleasantly by the energy and the finish of their work, which the most experienced veterans could not have bettered. But those were American contingents fighting beside the Allies; the Germans could still persuade themselves that no great American army would ever be available, or, in the alternative, that it would prove inefficient. That fond imagination was now emphatically dispelled. During those two months the American First Army had completed its organisation and taken its own place in the allied line.

On September 13th, the French co-operating, it attacked the St. Mihiel salient on both sides, the main onslaught being on the south. The evacuation was converted into a struggle to withdraw with the least possible loss—a fight to escape. Actual disaster was, indeed, avoided, but what was effected was anything but a retirement "according to plan."

On the first day the salient was doomed; on the second it was wiped out, and a substantial supply of prisoners was in the hands of the Americans, whose losses had been comparatively small, and whose operations had been conducted with the accuracy of clockwork. They had proved once for all their efficiency as a fighting force, alike in Staff work and in combat. Moreover, the fact that so formidable a force had been organised and brought into action at a much earlier date than anyone had anticipated or even deemed possible was of immense significance for the future. The most sanguine of Germans, the most pessimistic people among the Allies, could no longer doubt that in 1919 the American armies would turn the scale decisively. And, finally, the operation had again demonstrated that the allied effort was not exhausting itself, but was still continuously expanding.

Capture of St. Mihiel

The capture of St. Mihiel was an incident of high dramatic interest. The Verdun area had been the stage of one of the most tremendous and critical struggles of the war. While it was going on, the salient had been the standing witness of the aggressive might of Germany, a great wedge in the French line, an ever-present menace, so strong that any serious attempt on it would have entailed inevitable defeat and disaster. Now, in two days, the American attack had flattened it out. Had the Germans been prepared to hold it at all costs in full strength, the victory would perhaps not have been won without a very prolonged struggle at very much heavier



A Canadian brigadier-general giving instructions to a machine-gunner before starting out on a reconnaissance in a Tank on the western front.

cost. As matters stood, there appears to be no doubt that the task of the Americans, brilliantly as it was accomplished, was very much simplified by the fact that a designed evacuation was in progress. On the other hand, that evacuation was in itself decisive evidence of the straits to which the Hun Command found itself reduced by the pressure of British and French. It had forced them to make up their minds to a shortening of the front on their left wing, even at the cost of surrendering St. Mihiel.

Voluntary retirement was at best an admission that the position along the whole line had become highly critical. And the actual circumstances combined for the Allies the éclat of a brilliantly executed and highly successful attack with the positive proof that the enemy knew himself to be in a very tight corner. Moreover, to the enemy they demonstrated that there could be no relaxation of strength on his left wing for the relief of other portions of the line, since the allied offensive was now threatening that wing itself with the same vigour as elsewhere.

Meanwhile, this phase of the operations was being completed in the Cambrai-St. Quentin area by the steady advance of the British towards Cambrai, thrusting the Germans back into the Hindenburg Line itself. By strenuous fighting, the Havrincourt Wood was mastered just before the American attack on St. Mihiel. During the St. Mihiel week the line drove forward through Gouzeaucourt and Epéhy, and then there came a moment's pause before the next tremendous shock.

No Pause for Six Weeks

Now let us remark that for six weeks the allied offensive had been developing uninterruptedly, extending continuously and pausing nowhere—without, indeed, even the semblance of a pause anywhere for so long a time as a week. Starting at the angle before Amiens, fresh sector after fresh sector had linked up with the advance, till it had won back all that had been lost between March and the middle of July from Ypres to the neighbourhood of the Chemin des Dames; and, finally, it had broken out on the most remote sector of the Franco-Belgian front, beyond Verdun, without any diminution of intensity where British and French were fighting. It was the longest sustained movement that had yet taken place.

The lay observer was beginning to believe that this time Ludendorff had nothing up his sleeve—and that possibly Foch had. He began to speculate about the next stroke—would it be a ramming of the Hindenburg Line, or a storming of the Chemin des Dames, or perhaps a diversion on the Italian front?

On the Balkan Front

The lay observer had hardly remarked that there were other regions than these where things might happen that would matter. Mesopotamia was a side-show, and Palestine another, with an interest attaching to it more romantic than practical. Russia was an unintelligible chaos in which some unexpected and incomprehensible people called Czecho-Slavs had turned up from somewhere unknown, and were apparently fighting the Entente's battles at imminent risk of annihilation; but very few people had anything like a clear idea as to who they were, what they were doing, why they were doing it, and whether Japanese or Americans or both were or were not trying in a leisurely manner to do something to help this mystery-force. And then there was the Balkan front, where nothing particular seemed likely to happen, so long as Franco-British troops were there in sufficient numbers to prevent Greece from joining Bulgaria and Turkey.

So the ordinary spectator scarcely noticed the first intelligence that something was happening on the Balkan front just when the Americans were making good at St. Mihiel.

Since some period far away in the remote past, Bulgars and Allies were understood to have been sitting and looking at each other, each too strongly posted for the other to venture an attack. But on September 15th French and Serbian divisions opened the ball, driving a great wedge through the Bulgar lines. Great as are the

natural advantages of the defence in that mountainous region, the attack met with unqualified success, the reorganised Serbs distinguishing themselves greatly; while, away on their right, in the neighbourhood of Lake Doiran, British and Greeks kept the opposing Bulgars so thoroughly occupied that they could give no help.

Campaign over in a Fortnight

It did not seem that mid-September could have been chosen as a favourable moment for beginning an arduous campaign in exceedingly difficult country against an enemy who had been preparing and strengthening his positions for a couple of years. Nevertheless, the campaign drove forward. There was hard fighting, but the success was continuous; prisoners and war materials were captured in considerable quantities. Within the week it was evident that the whole Bulgar line would have to retire in conformity with the hasty and disintegrating retreat of its centre, which had gone so far that on the ninth day French troops were in Prilep. Three days later they were pushing, with the Serbs, past Veles towards Uskub, and the British, with the Greeks, were over the Bulgarian frontier. The Bulgar forces were cut clean in two—severed as the Germans had hoped, but failed, to sever British and French before Amiens.

Precisely a fortnight after the campaign opened it was over. On September 30th an armistice was signed which was, to all intents and purposes, an unconditional surrender on the part of Bulgaria. The Turks' was the only enemy State left in the Balkan Peninsula, and since his communications with the Central Powers lay through a Bulgaria pledged to cut them, there was little enough hope left for him or his allies in the East.

Dramatic enough! The near East had been at one period of the war the centre of roseate anticipations; it had become a stage of heroic disaster; it had apparently degenerated into a sort of derelict area in which there had been established a dreary deadlock after the overwhelming of Serbia and Rumania, an area where nothing happened, and, as it seemed, nothing could happen.

And then, in a time so short that the general public absorbed in the western front, had hardly awakened to the fact that something was going on which might have an interesting development, the decisive thing had actually befallen. Nothing but an overwhelming victory in the West and a reconquest of the Balkans could restore to the Central Empires any hope of an expansion of "influence" in the East. Moreover, "poetic justice" was vindicated. The glory of the achievement belonged to the indomitable Serbians. The Bulgarian collapse was manifestly—in part, at least—the outcome of Bulgarian resentment against the Teutonic allies who had exploited Bulgaria for their own ends. The monarch who had plunged her into the war had removed himself to safe quarters outside his kingdom, which was quick to declare itself a Republic.

Simultaneously another "side-show" was proving itself anything but a side-show. For it had become quite clear that it was an essential object with the Allies to reorganise Western Asia as well as to defeat the Central Powers in Europe. The reorganisation required the military overthrow of the Turkish Sovereignty as a preliminary; since, so long as the Turkish Sovereignty remained, it could scarcely be prevented from becoming, in effect, a Teutonic Sovereignty, and, therefore, a standing menace. The domination of the Balkan Peninsula and of Western Asia were, in short, essentials of the Hun programme which could only be permanently wiped off the board by the military overthrow of the Hun's allies in the Balkans and in Western Asia. And, in addition to this, complete victory in those regions, but nothing short of complete victory, would enable the Allies to take the Central Powers in the rear in Europe itself.

Preparations in Palestine

Now, since the capture of Jerusalem the armies in Palestine had remained quiescent. No big action had been fought, no appreciable advance made, though a good deal had been going on behind the scenes while General Allenby was quietly preparing not to continue the conflict but to end it.

A GENERAL GOES ON RECONNAISSANCE IN A TANK.—The photographs on these two pages illustrate an incident in the advance of the British forces on the western front, when a Canadian brigadier-general went over newly-captured ground in a "whippet." In this photograph he is dimly seen through the Tank's upper opening.

One phase of the British activity during this period is especially to be noted; between the middle of June and the middle of September something like an equality between the air forces of the opposing armies had been turned into an overwhelming British predominance, so that in the early days of September our 'planes were perpetually over the enemy lines, while our lines were hardly crossed by an enemy 'plane. We knew accurately what the enemy was doing, and the enemy did not know what we were doing. The enemy forces were outnumbered by three to two in infantry, cavalry, and guns. He lay almost in a straight line from west to east, from the coast and the coastal plain at Gilgal to Jordan, and beyond Jordan across the mountains of Judah, in such defensible country that a successful frontal attack would demand a much more overwhelming force than merely two to one.

Smashing the Turks' Front

The battle devised and carried out by General Allenby ranks as classical. The design was, briefly, to smash clean through the Turkish line, envelop the main part of the army, cut off its retreat over the Jordan, and—in the military sense—annihilate it. The essential thing was to open in the Turkish line a gate through which the British cavalry could pour northward along the route followed thousands of years ago by the armies of Rameses to Carmel and the plains of Esdraelon and Megiddo, capture the railway communications, and seize the northern passages of the Jordan, whose gorge is elsewhere all but impassable. To do this it was necessary to effect undetected an overwhelming concentration at the point of attack on the coastal plain, attenuating the right wing for that purpose.

The unsuspected concentration was carried out at night; the enemy was beguiled by what was taken for an attack in force on the British right, and before the Turkish command knew what was happening, on the morning of September 19th the thunderbolt on the left had smashed through his first and second lines, opening a wide gap through which the cavalry raced on their enveloping movement while the infantry held and bent up the opposing line. On the same day the cavalry reached and captured the northern junction. Thousands of prisoners had already been taken. On the next day the ancient Shechem was secured, and what remained of the Turkish army was being herded in between the pursuing troops—Indian, Australian, British (in the narrower sense), and French.

On September 23rd practically the whole army of Palestine had been wiped out—for the most part as prisoners of war. Only a remnant of stragglers had succeeded in making good their escape across the river.

No pause was given. Within a week the victorious troops were at the gates of Damascus, and the ancient capital of the Syrian tribes, the city of Benhadad and Hazael, had passed for ever from the grip of the once conquering Turk.

Startling Events in the East

The events in the East were startling, from the astonishing swiftness and completeness of the enemy overthrow. If the war were to be prolonged, their importance would be incalculable. Nevertheless, their immediate interest lay in the conclusive proof they gave that the Central Empires were powerless, in the face of the western advance, to stir a finger in defence of their eastern allies. The moment at which those decisive actions had taken place was precisely that at which two months' fighting had driven the whole German force back into the Hindenburg system and its extensions, and everything depended on the question whether that system was or was not impregnable.

At last the moment had come for the decisive struggle, which was to be carried through precisely on the principles which had been so completely successful since Haig had struck the first great blow of the offensive before Amiens. The French and the Serbs had severed the two wings of the Bulgar Army, and Allenby was on his way to Damascus, when, on September 26th, the great attack in the West was opened.

It began far on the allied right, where the Americans lay west of the Meuse, with Gouraud's army on their left, where it threatened to drive the German line back on the Ardennes, and to turn the German position about Laon and the Chemin des Dames into an untenable salient. Gouraud's business was to hold a maximum German force engaged rather than to gain ground, while the Americans drove forward on the east of the Argonne. Hence the French advance on that day was slight, while their comrades on the right thrust so hard and so deep that the enemy was compelled to concentrate to the utmost of his power in order to avert disaster.

Attacking the Cambrai Sector

On the next morning the British Third Army attacked on the Cambrai sector, where the German defences were at their strongest, and penetration would be fraught with the most serious danger to the Germans, who were compelled to treat it as the main engagement, where the ground must be held at all costs with every available man and gun, and where the heaviest British pressure had been exerted ever since the rupture of the Wotan line. Hence the northern sector from Ypres to the sea had already been depleted to the last degree. Therefore it was on this depleted sector that the third day saw the third blow, making it imperatively necessary, somehow, to find the men and guns to save the flank from being turned. And then, on the fourth day, the British Fourth Army came into the action between Cambrai and St. Quentin along with the French left wing on their right.

So that on three sectors all at once—Ypres, Cambrai to St. Quentin, and the Argonne—the Germans were fighting for life, undermanned and without reserves to draw upon, and with no certainty that a fresh attack might not develop any day on one or more of the sectors where their forces were already reduced to the minimum needed for a normal defence.

Now, we may best regard all these movements as a group of exactly co-ordinated operations, forming two main and one subsidiary battles. On the right, the advance of the Americans and of Gouraud; in the centre, the attack upon the whole Hindenburg Line from St. Quentin to the north of Cambrai; on the left, Plumer's threat to the northern flank from Lille to the sea. The second and fourth moves were, in fact, a single battle on a single plan, the opening against Cambrai being designed to weaken the resistance to the attack, two days later, of the Fourth Army.

On the night of the 26th, following upon the Argonne attack, the whole St. Quentin-Cambrai front was subjected to heavy bombardment, and the infantry advance began on a thirteen-mile front from Gouzeaucourt, north, in the morning, the Tanks playing an invaluable part. Such fear, indeed, did they seem to inspire that on sundry occasions when the real monsters were not available the appearance of dummies produced something like panic, though this has not been specifically recorded of the particular operation with which we are dealing.

The passage of the canal in the Mœuvres region was effected before the dawn had fully broken, the line of it was carried—it had been possible to force the passage only on a very narrow front—and then the general crossing became possible. On that day and the next the whole of the attacking front was pressed forward almost up to the western outskirts of Cambrai, passing Marquises on the north-west and Marcoing and Gouzeaucourt farther south.

Rawlinson's Great Attack

On the third morning Rawlinson's Fourth Army, accompanied by an American contingent, launched its assault, supported by the French Fourth Army on its right facing St. Quentin. This was, in fact, the main attack. Especially noteworthy in this day's advance was the capture of Bellenglise, where the canal was crossed partly,

indeed, by foot-bridges, but very generally by dropping down the precipitous canal wall, wading or swimming, and scaling the other side. The Americans, too, had hot work farther north, smashing through and capturing Bellecourt and Nauroy, in which they were supported by Australian troops, while the Third Army was continuing its forward thrust on the left.

The advance had broken deeply into the Hindenburg system and breached the "Hindenburg Line" proper. On the 30th the gap was extended, and the enemy was forced to retire behind the Scheldt Canal. On October 1st French troops were at last in St. Quentin, which had been so nearly reached eighteen months before. In some cases, it seems impossible that these tasks should have been accomplished if the Germans had kept up a vigorous resistance; in others, however, the opposition was exceedingly stubborn, and from the outset there were repeated and heavy counter-attacks, which showed the importance attached to the recovery of the lost positions by the German command.

King Albert's Command

During the next four days this phase of the battle, the Battle of Cambrai or the Hindenburg Line, was completed. Cambrai itself was not yet evacuated, but it could not now be held for long, being already outflanked both north and south. Crévecœur, on the Scheldt Canal, was carried on the day on which St. Quentin was entered, Le Catelet on October 3rd, so that on October 5th the right of the Third Army was well over the Scheldt Canal, and the main Hindenburg Line was a thing of the past.

After the first brilliant opening on September 26th in the Argonne area, when the Americans had captured and pushed beyond Montfaucon, they had been unable to make any further progress, and Gouraud, on their left, very little, the country being particularly difficult apart from the special efforts which had been expended in improvements upon its natural advantages for the defence. But, meanwhile, the menace to the German right flank had been developed by the blow on September 28th and the days immediately following.

On this sector the general command had been entrusted to the King of the Belgians, who had at his disposal the Belgian Army on the extreme north, some French troops, and the greater part of Plumer's British Second Army. Facing it were the German armies which, as noted above, had already been depleted to the last limit.

When the attack opened, on September 28th, the day following the attack before Cambrai, it met with immediate and startling success. The Germans were in occupation of the old lines from which they had been driven by prolonged hard fighting in the autumn of 1917, and to which they returned in the second offensive of April, 1918; running from La Bassée to Armentières and by the Messines Ridge immediately in front of Ypres and so to Dixmude. Now, in forty-eight hours, Belgians and British swept over the whole of what had been lost in April, and more. Houthulst Wood was carried, Poelcapelle, the whole Passchendaele Ridge, Messines and Wytschaete and Plug Street, were cleared. The depth of the advance was already so great that it was necessarily halted by the immediate impossibility of bringing up supports and supplies in a wide area void of communications.

Organising Ground Newly Won

The pressure, however, was so severe that in the next days the whole line, now outflanked at both ends, from Armentières to Lens, was retired; days spent by the Belgians and British largely in the organising of communication over the ground newly won. The three weeks which opened with the American attack on St. Mihiel had been prolific of exciting events, including not less than five any one of which at any other period of the war would have seemed a satisfactory achievement for two or three months' hard effort.

Moreover, although little progress—on the map—had been made in the Argonne sector since the advance of the Americans beyond Montfaucon and of the French to Mont Cuvelet, when the attack opened, Gouraud's pressure and Berthelot's extension of it on his left compelled the German retirement from the long-held positions dominating Rheims before the first week of October was ended, completing the record of victory on the western front down to October 7th.

In other quarters, Allenby was sweeping the country now some distance beyond Damascus. The Bulgarian surrender left the Balkans to be defended by the enemy with only such German and Austrian forces as were already there, since neither of those Powers could reinforce; but it was still uncertain what resistance the redoubtable Mackensen would be able to put up at Nish, the vital point on the railway communication with Constantinople.

Prince Max Chancellor

The Austrians, however, were in retreat before an Italian advance in Albania, and Italian warships made an effective attack on their squadron at Durazzo. On the Italian front successful raiding on the Asiago Plateau and elsewhere suggested that this was another region where a big attack might be developed, perhaps with decisive results. There was no doubt that within a few days Turkey must follow Bulgaria's example.

And, finally, the fact that the German Government knew itself to be in desperate straits was made manifest by the appointment of Prince Max of Baden as Chancellor, and by his issuing a peace-note addressed to President Wilson professing complete agreement on the part of Germany with the "fourteen points" which he had laid down as necessary to a permanent peace—a manœuvre which, in the view of the Allies, meant merely that the enemy wanted a suspension of hostilities to be utilised for recuperation and the organisation of a new defensive line to take the place of the now-shattered Hindenburg system.

In vain is the net spread in the sight of any bird. The second phase of the victorious offensive opened on October 8th with an attack along the whole line from just south of Cambrai to St. Quentin by the Third and Fourth British Armies, with their American comrades and the French First Army; while at the same time Gouraud struck in the Argonne and the Americans on the north of Verdun. Until September 28th nearly all the fighting had been on old ground full of familiar names, in front of the old Hindenburg Line. Then the break through had taken us into new fields, among villages and townlets whose names and locations conveyed nothing, and were for the most part not to be found on the maps hitherto studied. British and French troops had never before been on the east of the Scheldt Canal between Cambrai and St. Quentin since August, 1914.

On the British front the main trench positions had already been overrun, and the trenches now facing us were incomplete. Practically the stage of open fighting had been reached—if not before the attack began, at least within a very few hours. Some of the fighting on the first day was heavy, but the resistance relaxed somewhat as the advance went forward. In one section progress was for a time retarded by the action of enemy tanks, which would probably not have been present unless the enemy had himself been making ready to attack when he found himself unexpectedly forestalled—for here again the British infantry advance had not been preceded by a warning bombardment.

Retreat Towards Le Cateau

Cambrai itself was not a point of attack, but Niergnies, five miles south-east of it, was carried, and the whole southward line to St. Quentin pushed forward, the Americans capturing Prémont and Braucourt after stiff fighting. There were large hauls of prisoners on this and the following day when the enemy was retreating, hard-pressed, towards Le Cateau. Meanwhile, the advance went forward north of Cambrai. That evening the Canadians penetrated Ramillies—the stage of one

Splendid Victory Marches in Two Allied Capitals

The French Victory Procession passing through the Arc de Triomphe, Paris, July 14th, 1919. Marshals Foch, Joffre, and Petain rode at the head of the French troops, and Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig and other British generals headed the British contingent. In the foreground is the golden pyramid raised in memory of the glorious dead.

View of the scene at the Victoria Memorial, showing the Guards passing the saluting-point on the occasion of the British Victory March in London, July 19th, 1919. Detachments from all the Allied armies took part, and, in addition, the Navy, Air Force, and various women's services were represented. A pavilion was erected at the base of the Memorial, at which King George took the salute.

Great Captains in London's Triumph Pageant

Marshal Foch, Generalissimo of the Allied armies, dipping his baton on reaching the saluting-point at the pavilion erected at the base of the Queen Victoria Memorial. He headed the French contingent in the great Triumph Pageant in London, July 19th, 1919.

Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig was received with the utmost enthusiasm when riding at the head of the British troops in the Victory March. He is seen acknowledging the cheers of his grateful countrymen, and shared with Marshal Foch and Admiral Sir David Beatty the greatest acclamations of the spectators on this historic occasion. Haig and Beatty were created Earls in August, 1919.

of Marlborough's most brilliant battles a couple of centuries back—and during the night Cambrai itself was entered from both north and south, and cleared on the following morning (October 9th). Through that day the advance continued along the whole line, crossing most of the length of the Le Cateau-St. Quentin road and railway, and reached within two miles of Le Cateau itself.

The battle had now passed clean over the trenches, and in the open fighting on October 9th the cavalry did excellent work both in co-operating with infantry attacks and in herding back the retreating enemy with most inconvenient haste. Only on the 10th, the German resistance, stiffening on the line of the River Selle, was able to repulse the efforts of the pursuing host to cross that stream.

Germans' Lost Ground

Northward also the British had been hard on the heels of the retirement, from Armentières to Lens, towards Lille and Douai. While the opening of a vigorous attack on the Selle line was being delayed by the necessity for repairing the railway wrested from the Germans, this northern pressure was being carried to the outskirts of Douai itself. But besides this the advancement of the allied line eastwards from St. Quentin, coupled with the pressure of Berthelot, Gouraud, and the Americans on their right, had now made the Laon salient too dangerous to be maintained. Immediate evacuation had become imperative, since a little delay would make it impossible; and on October 13th the French entered Laon itself.

Nowhere did the Germans now hold an inch of ground won since 1914; practically their whole line had been carried well behind positions which before had never even been reached, and they had been smashed out of defences of which they had hitherto boasted, not without warrant, that no conceivable attack could ever penetrate them.

If there was a temporary halt before the Selle, the northern armies under Plumer and the King of the Belgians were now ready to continue their advance, which was renewed on October 14th from Dixmude to Wervicq, south-west of Menin, the immediate objective of the British and the French and Belgians, on their left being Menin, Roulers, and the great road between. The attack was expected, and it appeared that the enemy had thrown his whole strength into the front line, so that after the first stubborn opposition was broken there was no support. The capture of Roulers and Menin meant that Lille was outflanked on the north. The pressure on the southern flank carried the British to the outskirts of Douai, which was entered on the 17th. But it had already been realised that Lille was doomed; on the 18th it had been evacuated, and its long martyrdom was over.

Occupation of Zeebrugge

The fall of Lille meant the going of the whole northern line up to the sea. The day before Lille itself was entered, Air Force and Naval contingents landed in Ostend and found that the Germans had already withdrawn; and on the same evening the King of the Belgians, accompanied by his Queen, entered the city amid scenes of passionate enthusiasm. Douai went on the same day; with the occupation of Zeebrugge the last German hold on the coast vanished; a day or two later the Allies were in Bruges. On October 20th the northern or left flank of the Allies was resting on the inland frontier of Holland. The long menace from the sea was finally done with.

By this time the armies facing the Selle were again advancing. A week had sufficed for the reconstruction of communications, and the attack upon the Selle positions was opened before dawn on October 17th by the Fourth Army from Le Cateau, south (forming the British right), the French on their right co-operating. The Selle was crossed. After two days of hard fighting, when the higher ground beyond the Selle had been won, the enemy's resistance weakened, and on the 19th he had been driven behind the Sambre-et-Oise Canal.

On the 20th the attack developed with the advance of the Third and the wing of the First Army on the left, from in front of Valenciennes to Le Cateau; so that the whole line was pressing towards the great lateral railway running from Valenciennes by Le Quesnoy, the Mormal Forest covering Maubeuge and Avesnes to Hirson, and so south-eastwards.

Again the first resistance was stubborn, and as the enemy was driven from one point after another, counter-attacks were repeatedly launched, but never met with more than a temporary success. Thus the capture of the high ground east of the Selle was completed, the tanks, which had overcome the water-obstacles, playing their usual effective part; and the First Army on the left, capturing Denain, had soon pushed forward till it was not two miles from Valenciennes itself. By October 22nd this phase of the preliminaries to the main assault had been completed.

British Steady Pressure

Meanwhile, also, away on the right, French armies were penetrating the "Hunding" section of the Hindenburg Line; and, still farther away, the Kriemhilde section, which had so long held up the American advance, was at last giving way. On the left, too, the British Fifth Army was in the outskirts of Tournai.

The attack of the Fourth and Third British Armies was renewed on the 23rd, extending to the First Army on the following day. Along the whole front steady progress was made against stubborn resistance. The enemy constantly threw in fresh divisions, but his reserves were exhausted, and the divisions were often far short of their full strength. He was fighting a losing battle all through, and he knew it.

By the 25th the British were on the skirts of the Mormal Forest, were almost at Le Quesnoy, and were over an eight-mile stretch of the railway between Valenciennes and Avesnes, which had ceased to be a line of communication between the German armies. On the north, too, Valenciennes was outflanked by the First Army. Some of the German troops were still fighting as obstinately as ever; in other cases they were ceasing to show fight at all. It was recorded that in these three days the prisoners taken by the British and the two American divisions accompanying them numbered over 20,000, with 475 guns. But it was again time for a brief pause for the preparation of the next forward stride, so that during the last days of the month there were only local operations, to establish and organise the line which had now been reached.

Elsewhere, however, the interval was sufficiently full of interest. Within the Balkan peninsula the retirement of the enemy was practically completed; for as early as the 14th the Allies had occupied the nodal point of Nish, the evacuation of which showed that he had given up hope of maintaining his position, and ten days later French and Serbian troops reached the Danube. Constantinople was completely isolated, and the surrender of the Turk—imminent ever since the Bulgarian collapse—was now only a question of days. To secure that end, the decisive blows which were now struck in Asia were hardly needed. Allenby was sweeping up what was left of the troops in northern Syria, and when he entered Aleppo on October 26th the last remnant of resistance was wiped out.

Marshall's Crowning Victories

On the same day General Marshall, in Mesopotamia, advancing up the Tigris and on the east of it towards Mosul, came in touch with the Turkish forces; and it might be said that the next five days were occupied in mopping them up in a series of skilfully conducted engagements, culminating in that of October 31st, when practically the whole of the remaining force was compelled to surrender. Constantinople had already been seeking to negotiate an armistice which amounted simply to unconditional surrender, and on the day of Marshall's victory Turkey went out of the war.

The fate of the East had been a foregone conclusion ever since the Bulgarian surrender, and all the signs left

ON THE TRAIL OF THE HUN.—French engineers searching the streets of Noyon for mines laid by the Germans when evacuating the town. Notices forbade everyone to enter places abandoned by the Hun until danger of death from exploding mines had been removed by experts.

little room for doubt that Austria would very soon go the way of her eastern allies. Her political disintegration had passed the merely ominous stage. The recognition by the Allies of the Czecho-Slavs as belligerents on the side of the Entente marked the *fait accompli* as concerned one section of the "ramshackle empire," and the independence of the Jugo-Slavs was also recognised before the end of October, while the attitude of Hungary was unmistakable. Too late in the day the Imperial Government had begun to talk of autonomy for the national groups which owned its sovereignty—concessions which would have been undreamed of had it not been conscious of its own helpless weakness. Its final downfall, however, was to be wrought by military disaster. The moment had come for a decisive blow on the Italian front.

Last Italian Offensive

Since the failure of the last Austrian offensive the opposing lines had remained virtually unchanged, save for some improvements in the allied positions on the Asiago plateau. Across the Brenta the Austrians held most of Monte Grappa coming down to the Piave under Montello; and thence to the sea they held the left bank of the Piave, while the Italians held the right. On the night of October 25th Lord Cavan, in command of the British contingent, and the Italian Tenth Army seized islands in the river just below Montello, and opened the main attack two days later, carrying the left bank on a short front, and creating a cavity in the Austrian line. Next day the salient, which threatened to turn the Austrian left, was pushed forward, forcing the enemy to exert all the strength he could to hold it back, while the attack extended all along the line to the sea, till on the third day the whole of the left bank had been carried.

On the left of Lord Cavan the Italian Twelfth Army was now slowly and doggedly driving the enemy back from Monte Grappa on to M. Cozen, the barrier covering the rail communication at Feltre. Cozen was carried on the fourth day (Wednesday, October 30th), and Feltre itself was occupied. The occupation of Feltre definitely broke the Austrian line into two halves, east and west, on the plain and in the mountains—two halves each of which must retreat and, retreating, be more widely severed from the other, without hope of sending or receiving reinforcement. On the 31st the Italians had recaptured the whole of the Asiago plateau, and the Austrians in the plain were back on the Tagliamento. Since Lord Cavan's first surprise move 50,000 prisoners had been taken.

Surrender of Austria

The decision had been achieved. Austria had received the knock-out blow. On November 3rd General Diaz, the commander of the Italian armies, signed the armistice, which was a complete Austrian surrender. Austria was out of the war, and no longer an obstacle to the invasion of Germany on flank and rear. Germany was left in isolation.

Thus, in the course of the last week of October, the period of the momentary "lull" on the main western front, Allenby completed the conquest of Syria, Marshall wiped the Turks out of Mesopotamia, the last enemy troops were cleared out of the Balkans, Turkey surrendered unconditionally, and the Austrians were so thoroughly smashed up in Italy that within three days Austria had followed Turkey's example. The decisive blow against Germany was on the point of being struck, though it had not yet been delivered. But in this same week Germany herself was not only calling for an armistice (of course, on humanitarian grounds!) but had made conclusive confession of defeat.

It became known on October 28th that Ludendorff's resignation had been accepted. Ludendorff, then, had failed, and had failed past hope of redeeming his failure. Who would believe that if Ludendorff could not save the situation it might still be saved by Hindenburg or another?

Hence it was with assured confidence that shattering victory would be achieved in no long time, that the allied attack on the western front was renewed on November 1st.

The objective of the initial operation on the part of

the British was the capture of Valenciennes. The assault, therefore, was launched only on a short front of some six miles, immediately south of it. Realising the importance of holding his ground at this point, the enemy put up the most stubborn resistance of which he was capable. Three streams had retarded the advance between Valenciennes and the Mormal Forest. The Selle had been carried, and after it the Ecaillon. Now it was the turn of the Rhonelle. Then Valenciennes, completely outflanked, was entered, cleared, and passed on the second day. On the third the enemy was retiring, with our troops at his heels.

Meanwhile, the American main army, with the French on their left, were also driving forward towards the Hirson-Longuyon railway; and now, on November 4th, the whole British right went forward, having hitherto awaited the completion of the Valenciennes operation. The Battle of the Sambre began.

Battle of the Sambre

In two hours after the first start, the troops on the right had captured Catillon, and two battalions were already over the river at that point and were pushing forward. In the course of the morning the whole line in front of Le Cateau had forced the passage in the face of obstinate but inadequate resistance, the Germans holding out at some points until they found themselves completely enveloped by infantry—and tanks. At Landrecies there was particularly hard fighting, and it was captured only when turned both on north and south. Beyond Landrecies the resistance, at first stubborn, broke down, and the advancing troops thrust into the Mormal Forest, at points even pressing through it before the next morning.

On the north of the forest the fortress of Le Quesnoy at first was surrounded by the New Zealand Division, the main part of which, instead of assaulting, pushed on past it, driving well to the east. By the mid-afternoon the position had become untenable, the encircling troops fought their way into the streets of the town, and the German commander formally surrendered with his garrison of 1,000 men.

The remaining divisions on the left of the Third Army, north of Le Quesnoy, also made satisfactory progress, capturing Orsinval and other villages, and reaching Commegnies on their right while advancing somewhat less rapidly on their left, where, however, they carried the two Wargnies. It was on the right of the First Army, directly east of Valenciennes, that the most obstinate resistance was met with; for when the Aunelle had been passed and Sebourg and other villages taken, a fierce counter-attack compelled relinquishment of some of the ground thus won. This slight check was the only one encountered along the entire line on this great day, for the divisions on the left found no strong opposition, while the French on the right of the Fourth Army made a corresponding advance.

Americans in Sedan

Again on the next day, November 5th, the whole attack was pressed, but now it was on the rear-guards of a retreating foe. The Canadians made good what had been won and lost again on the previous day beyond the Aunelle, though it was still on this small section that progress proved most difficult and was to some extent held up at Ancre and on the Honnelle stream. On their right the Third Army pushed on almost to Bavai; the line was well to the east of the Morval Forest and was approaching Avesnes. Débeney was far east of Guise, on the way towards Hirson and its railway junction, while farther away the American First Army, with the French on their left, had cleared the enemy out of the Argonne, and he was in full retreat on to the line of the Meuse.

Next day the victorious Americans were into the western portion of Sedan, and by evening had mastered all of it that lies on the left bank of the Meuse. The Ancre check was overcome; on November 7th Bavai was in our hands, and on November 8th Avesnes. Meanwhile, the advance had extended north to the Fifth Army, capturing Condé, and farther north still the enemy abandoned Tournai, which was also entered on the 8th, and fully occupied on the following day. The whole approximately straight front of the four armies (Fifth, First, Third, and Fourth) was now well on the way towards Mons at its northern end, and the right centre entered Maubeuge on November 9th, on which day the Second Army joined the advance and passed the Scheldt on the north of the Fifth Army. On the 10th it was only in the immediate neighbourhood of Mons that the Germans were still continuing to fight hard, putting up a fierce and, for the time, successful machine-gun defence.

Throughout these days the Air Force, despite very unfavourable weather conditions, wrought immense havoc among the retreating Germans, especially upon the military impedimenta crowding along the roads; the cavalry also making fine use of the opportunity which had been denied to them throughout the four long years of trench warfare. Moreover, while every day piled up the huge tale of captured guns and military stores, the number of prisoners alone taken in the advance exceeded the whole number of casualties of every sort among the Allies.

It was left to the Canadians to achieve the crowning dramatic triumph of the military operations.

Recapture of Mons

For all Britons at least a sentiment attached to Mons such as was aroused by no other name in the whole theatre of the war, since the retreat from it in the very first month had provided one of the most heroic episodes in all our annals, covering the "Old Contemptibles" with undying glory more than matching that of Sir John Moore's retreat to Corunna. Held off on November 10th by the fierce machine-gun defence, the Canadians attacked and captured Mons before dawn on the 11th, killing or taking prisoners the whole of the defending force. The capture of Mons was the one finishing touch needed to complete the sense of unqualified victory, and it came only just in time, for on the same morning, an hour before noon, hostilities were suspended. The Germans had signed the Armistice on the terms laid down by the allied command. The last shot of the Great War had been fired.

The note addressed by the German Chancellor to President Wilson inviting proposals for an armistice, coupled with Ludendorff's resignation in the last week of October, when the Austrian collapse was being manifested, had left little room for doubt that Germany (or her rulers) knew herself beaten. The Allies had given the only possible reply to the Peace Note—if the Germans wished for peace they must obtain the terms for a cessation of hostilities from the commander of the allied forces—terms dictated by the victor in the field. This was the answer returned on November 5th, the day after the last of Germany's dupes had fallen out of the war. The German Government could only writhe in desperate efforts to save its face, to preserve in the German people a belief that they could still negotiate on equal terms. It was already too late. A sort of heroic climax had been designed, in which the fleet was presumably to perish, but to perish gloriously. But the fleet declined the rôle assigned to it. Instead of coming out like the Spartans at Thermopylæ, to sell its life magnificently at terrific cost, it mutinied and hoisted the red flag on November 3rd.

Abdication of the Kaiser

The Kaiser found that he had lost control; he abdicated and fled to a neutral asylum in Holland, followed by the Crown Prince; the Chancellor resigned, and it was a Republican Government, with Ebert at its head, which bowed to the terms dictated by Marshal Foch and Admiral Wemyss, as to the meaning of which there was no sort of ambiguity.

The armistice terms were not peace terms; they were the conditions on which the conquerors would consent to stay the tide of conquest, while they should agree upon and formulate the terms of the peace itself which the Germans would be required to accept, based upon

President Wilson's famous "fourteen points," as the Allies in concert should interpret them. Hostilities would be suspended only on condition of entire security that Germany would be powerless to make a fresh resort to arms. The armistice was the preliminary to a peace which the Allies would dictate without possibility of their terms being challenged.

The Armistice Terms

All invaded territories were to be evacuated within fourteen days; all German forces to be withdrawn from the territories on the left bank of the Rhine, which were to be occupied by the Allied forces, and from a neutral zone six miles deep on its right bank; the Allies to control the administration of the districts on the left bank, and to hold three bridge-heads on the right bank at Cologne, Coblenz, and Mainz, each with a perimetre of about twenty miles. Aeroplanes and guns of all sorts were to be delivered in huge numbers to the Allies, with railway locomotives, waggons, and motor-lorries. All allied subjects were to be repatriated at once, without reciprocity. All submarines and over seventy surface warships of various types were to be handed over to the Allies, the remainder to be concentrated in German naval bases, disarmed, and placed under supervision of the Allies; and the blockade of the German ports was to remain in force. As it proved later, it was unfortunate that the Allies claimed only for the time the internment of the warships manned by German crews instead of their direct surrender. But except in this strictly technical sense, the surrender of the great fleet was part and parcel of the armistice terms. Such were the main provisions, of a sternness rendered necessary because the Germans had proved that they could only be trusted when powerless, and also because in no other way could they be made to feel that they were conquered and at the mercy of the conquerors. In no other way could the legend of the German superman be obliterated.

Surrender of German Fleet

Ten days after the signing of the armistice the surrender of the German fleet had taken full effect. "The day" had come, but it was the Day of the British, not the German Navy's triumph. The fleet which was to have wrested the trident from Britannia's feeble hand, which was to have achieved the German conception of the Freedom of the Seas, had accomplished—what? Destruction; destruction of a vast quantity of merchant shipping, of hospital ships carrying nurses and wounded men; of passenger ships loaded with women and children. Nothing else. Since its surface ships had been cleared off the outer seas, every fraction of it, large or small, which had sought or been forced to an engagement had fled to the shelter of its minefields.

Nearly two and a half years had elapsed since any portion of it had shown itself on the surface of waters outside the sheltered ports. "Our future is on the seas," the Kaiser had once proclaimed; "under" the seas would have been more appropriate. For effective purposes, the German Navy had become exclusively a submarine navy, and in that capacity had proved its power of destroying unescorted shipping, though only by sweeping aside the laws of sea-warfare hitherto universally recognised. It had not anywhere for a moment breached the British barrier which, maintaining those laws in their integrity, had for four years closed the German ports absolutely to all shipping which had not British leave to pass.

And now, on November 20th, the first batch of the hundred and fifty U boats was delivered over to Rear-Admiral Tyrwhitt, off the Norfolk coast. On the day following nine battleships, five battle-cruisers, seven light cruisers, and forty-nine destroyers were met outside the Firth of Forth by Sir David Beatty's Battle Fleet in the early morning, and the grand procession moved to its anchorage—fifteen miles separated the leading ship of the vast armada from the rearmost—two long British lines, and between them the long German line, the strength of what had been the second mightiest navy in the world. At sunset the German flag was hauled down, never to be hoisted again.

Next day the surrendered fleet was escorted on its way to Scapa Flow, where it was to await the fate which might be ordained for it by the allied peace terms. For even now the western mind had failed to grasp the German conception of honour.

Except at the beginning of the nineteenth century, when Denmark was compelled to hand over her small fleet to the British, no such surrender has been made since Rome crushed Carthage. It was the plain and unqualified proof that the Power which had boasted itself able to challenge, if not to wreck, the British supremacy on the seas had found itself in fact wholly incapable of asserting any sort of rivalry in fair fight, and was compelled to pay the wholly deserved penalty for choosing instead to adopt the methods of plain piracy. Misled by the belief that Carthage had once been a maritime power in the same sense as Britain, and had had her fleet destroyed by the organisation of Rome, a great military but non-maritime Power, Germany had conceived that she could similarly crush the British Navy. There is one thing which is politically more fatal than neglect to study history—and that is to study it under obsessions which impose a false interpretation of its lessons. From the outset of the war there had never been the faintest chance that anything but blind blundering or a complete moral collapse on the part of the British could give final naval victory to the Germans.

Alsace-Lorraine Restored

The surrender of the German Fleet for internment bore a special significance for the British, who could feel that they might claim with a clear conscience that it marked their own particular triumph in the common glories of the war. For the Germans it was in some sense the most humiliating event, for the reasons summed up in the German complaint that such a thing had never been demanded of an unbeaten fleet, and the British admiral's placid retort—"You had only to come out." For the French the culminating touch came when French troops entered again upon their own at Metz and Strasburg, for the first time since 1870. The wheel had turned, full circle.

Eight-and-forty years ago the Germans had pronounced their Vae victis. The conquerors then were the conquered now. And they had brought the reversal on their own heads by wanton aggression born of the overweening arrogance which is the sure precursor of Nemesis. Once more Lorraine and Alsace were French—in the body, as they had ever been in the spirit. Marshal Pétain entered a rejoicing Metz on November 19th; on the 25th Marshal Foch proclaimed in Strasburg the reunion of Alsace with France.

The military occupation of German territory on the left bank of the Rhine, and of the three bridge-heads respectively, had been assigned to the British, the Americans, and the French, in that order from north to south. There was a pause of six days after the armistice. The whole line was upon French or Belgian soil; the Germans had much French and Belgian territory to evacuate before they could reach their own frontier, and the advance had to be so arranged that there must always be a clear space of at least half a dozen miles between the leading troops on one side and the rearmost troops on the other, to prevent any possibility of collision. A sufficient retirement of the Germans was necessary therefore before a start could be made.

Advance to the Rhine

Before reaching the German border, the crossing of which by the Allies was timed for December 1st, the British section of the advance had to traverse some hundred miles of Belgian territory which for four evil years had been in German occupation. Behind them, the last rush had carried them over a wide stretch of ground on which the retreating enemy had not only done

his best to destroy all means of communication, but had left a profusion of unlocated "delay-mines," sometimes camouflaged in a manner which can only be called hideously repulsive.

The postponement of the start till November 17th would thus in any case have been necessitated in order to organise the transport of the supplies for the advancing troops; and admirably as this dangerous task was accomplished, it still meant that supplies could only be forwarded with extreme difficulty. Hence it may easily be understood that had this been a fighting advance in pursuit of a fighting foe whose communications were all intact, the retreat would have enjoyed immense advantages. Resistance would unquestionably have been annihilated in the course of months, but, also unquestionably, only at heavy cost. And it is extremely doubtful whether even so the completeness of the German defeat in the field would have been brought home to the enemy more decisively in the long run—the thing that mattered—than by the ultimate peace terms. This is the sufficient answer to those who considered that the granting of an armistice on any terms was a mistake.

British on German Soil

On November 11th the German Army could not have escaped its doom had there been no armistice. But the cost of its annihilation would have purchased no sufficient advantages as compared with those secured by the armistice terms. On December 1st the allied troops crossed on to German soil. On December 12th they crossed the Rhine and began the occupation of the bridge-heads.

By the close of the year the occupation was completed. The movement of troops ceased. The war was over except in the technical sense that a breach of the terms of the armistice, or an ultimate refusal to accept the peace terms when promulgated, might necessitate a resumption of hostilities, so that as yet the armies could only be partially disbanded.

In certain of its aspects the Great War was without precedent in history.

Less than fifty years ago the furious fighting of Gravelotte and Mars-le-Tours gave the accepted slaughter records, when French and Germans between them had a casualty list of 30,000 on one day. At Waterloo there may have been 150,000 men engaged before the Prussians came on the field. Napoleon's Grand Army for the invasion of Russia numbered approximately half a million. No British general had ever had under his command a force one fifth of that size. Nelson had twenty-seven ships at Trafalgar and fifteen at the Nile; if 150 English craft took part in the fight with the Armada, not more than half a dozen of them exceeded 600 tons burden. The tonnage of H.M.S. Queen Elizabeth exceeded that of the whole of Queen Elizabeth's fleet. Former battles which were not over twenty-four hours after they began might almost be counted on the fingers.

Manœuvring Impossible

Here, in four and a half years of war, there were more British soldiers killed than had taken the field in the twenty-three years of the Napoleonic wars; yet French and Germans, Russians and Austrians, every one of them suffered losses considerably heavier. A regiment was a bigger fraction in the biggest armies of the past than a division in the armies of the Great War. Napoleon himself could never have dreamed of war on such a scale.

And this produced another unprecedented characteristic. The opposing armies in the west lay for four years facing each other in two long unbroken lines resting on the sea at one end and the Swiss frontier at the other. Outflanking, enveloping, turning the position were impossible manœuvres except where at one point or another there was a salient offering a chance for pincers.

But warfare in the past may be said to have consisted mainly in manœuvring for positions whereby the enemy would be compelled to expose his flank or alternatively to attack a position which could not be turned. Here there were no flanks to be exposed, no positions which could be turned; frontal attacks or stalemate were the only alternatives. No manœuvring was required to ensure that any and every attack must be a frontal one.

Development of Artillery

Hence the third phenomenon peculiar to this war—since the attack must be frontal, the front itself must be impregnably fortified, so that wherever the attack might be delivered, and in whatever force, its chance of penetration should be made infinitesimal. For always the object in view in a frontal attack must be to effect a concentration strong enough to pierce through the defence, or enforce a general retirement to escape such penetration. For the purposes of such a concentration, an enormous advantage is enjoyed by the holder of the interior lines, but both sides must be prepared to repulse the attack whenever and wherever the enemy delivers it.

The nature of the fortification, again, was novel, being imposed by novel factors in the attack, the immense development of artillery, and especially of high explosives which level all the raised works, however powerful, on which the engineers of the defence relied in the past. For four years the armies lived underground; the war was a war of trenches such as no one had dreamed of in the past.

And, finally, while the trench warfare lasted, the part of cavalry was almost in abeyance; they could be employed neither as the eyes of the force, nor for shock, nor for pursuit. There was no shock and no pursuit of the old kind. Only, the first of the three functions was discharged by another factor hitherto undreamed of—the aeroplane; while perhaps it might be said the cavalry shock found, in some sort, a substitute in the gambols of the tanks.

The problem throughout for both sides, when once the trench system had been developed, was either literally to wear down the other side's power of resistance till it could no longer hold its ground, or to effect a penetrating concentration which should split the opponents to right and left, creating a double flank to act upon. The Allies, having the greater staying power, adopted the former method at an early stage; the Germans, having the interior lines and—until the end, when the Americans finally turned the scale decisively—greater powers for concentration, worked on the second plan throughout. They came near success at Verdun, on the Russian front, on the Italian front, and at Amiens; but they never effected the irredeemable split, and the method of the Allies was decisively vindicated from the moment when Haig opened the final offensive in August, 1918.

The question will probably be for ever debated whether the campaigns in the East and in Africa were military blunders, diverting power from its true sphere in the West.

The reply to that charge would be: In respect of Africa, the campaigns were not examples of the futile policy of colony-grabbing; they were necessary in order to throttle the German machinations which would have produced a huge native uprising demanding a much greater military effort than was actually entailed.

One Huge Battle in West

The conditions of the Mohammedan world made the Mesopotamian and Syrian campaigns a necessity. But for initial failures and the Kut disaster, their advisability would never have been challenged. If the Dardanelles had been won, and with them complete communication with Russia, the whole aspect of the war would have been changed; and the Suvla Bay venture all but achieved that object, though its failure relegates the whole attempt to the category of disasters.

THE LAST PHASE

For four years the land-war in the West had the characteristics of one huge battle—of a Waterloo on a gigantic scale, with the opposing armies in contact the whole time.

The spring offensive of the Germans corresponded to the launching of the Old Guard of Napoleon, as the arrival of the Americans corresponded to the advent of the Prussians. The part played by the infantry was the same, that of the artillery was relatively bigger, that of cavalry relatively smaller. The essentials were merely modified by a century's scientific development of the material implements of war. In the naval conflict the modifications were greater, revolutionising tactics in certain aspects. Manœuvring for the weather-gauge vanished with the advent of steam; fighting between battleships was at long range, imposed by big guns and torpedoes; flight, when it took place, was screened by mines.

Part of the British Navy

But the part played by the Navy was the same as before. It forbade any invasion of British soil. It wiped enemy fleets off the seas. Its closure of hostile ports to commerce was limited only by political considerations. It ensured the free passage of troops and munitions to the Allies. It held the enemy ports blockaded in precisely the same sense as had Hawke and Nelson in their day, giving the foe freedom to come out and fight, if he would. The difference was that, whereas on rare occasions—and to their own destruction—French and Spanish fleets did come out and pay the penalty, the German fleet now only ventured on the "raid and run" or Tom Tiddler policy, and was able to break off the engagement and bolt on the one occasion when it actually came out in force and made contact with the Grand Fleet.

Conspicuously the most vital departure from the precedents of maritime warfare had been provided by the submarine, as a weapon not for fighting, but for assassination—that is, for attacking unarmed vessels, hitherto held liable to capture but not to destruction, except under specified conditions. Further to characterise this use of the submarine is needless. But however strongly it may be condemned, along with the kindred practice of bombing open towns from the air, it signified infinite possibilities of danger. Unless preventives can be devised which have not hitherto been applied, developed aircraft unscrupulously employed, and the submarine unscrupulously employed, may in the future prove infinitely more effective than was actually the case in the Great War.

A fleet of aircraft opening hostilities without a declaration of war, a fleet of submarines which can remain at sea for a period ten times longer than the utmost present capacity permits—these are tremendous possibilities of the future with which the nations and the League of Nations have been warned by the Great War that they must be effectively prepared to cope.

The Problem of Peace

The problem of peace settlement which remained to be dealt with was a vast one. Restoration of stolen territories, reparation for damage done, liberation of peoples oppressed by the Central Empires and their allies were the obvious primary demand of the victors upon the vanquished. But of the two Central Empires one was actually in solution, breaking up into separate States; and both within a few days of the cessation of active hostilities—before or after—had shed practically all their monarchies, whether imperial, royal, or ducal. In Russia there was not even any *de facto* government to which recognition could be accorded. In an atmosphere of revolutions and counter-revolutions where any of the acting governments of one day might be scattered to the winds on the next, there was little enough of security that any one of them would act in good faith, or would not be displaced by another which would repudiate its predecessor's engagements.

What were the territories which ought to be restored—and to whom? Who was to make reparation? What peoples were to be liberated, which of them were to be given the status of full sovereignty, who was to be responsible for those not yet fitted for full sovereignty? Every conceivable solution of every one of these problems bristled with difficulties. Up to a certain point agreement was easy, beyond that point it was very much the reverse.

Details of the Settlement

Thus it was clear that Alsace-Lorraine, taken from France by force in 1871, must be given back to France; that there must be no more "Italian Irredenta"; that Poland was to be reinstated; that in what had been the Austrian Empire Czecho-Slovakia (meaning, broadly, Bohemia and Moravia) was to be a sovereign State, and the Jugo-Slavs were to be united with Serbia; that the Dardanelles must be under a control which would preclude their closure; that the Turk must no longer exercise sway over subject non-Turkish populations; that the African record of the Germans forbade the subjection to their control of any African peoples; that Poles, Czecho-Slovaks, and Jugo-Slavs should have no share of liability for the reparation bill; that the French should be entrusted with the guidance of the administration in Syria, the British in Mesopotamia, and in what had been the German colonies in Africa. But there were no clear-cut principles for territorial reconstruction in the Balkan peninsula which, without reconstruction, was certain to give trouble in the future.

In the Rhine provinces, in Poland, and in Siberia there were areas which ought not to be forced against their will—if their will could be ascertained—to separation from Germany. On the shores of the Adriatic Italy made historic claims incompatible with those of Jugo-Slav nationality. And all boundary questions were complicated by the underlying consciousness that unrest born of the lack of a sense of security must prevail in any State which feels that its frontiers are indefensible.

Finally, a Germany unrepentant of its guilt would, if ever it deemed itself strong enough, rekindle the flame of war; but a Germany forbidden to recuperate would be a hot-bed of revolutionary propaganda menacing the internal and international peace of every State in Europe and Asia, if not also in America. The rebuilding of German military forces which could menace the peace of the world must be precluded; the gradual recovery of Germany's status among the nations must not be precluded. She must be made to pay the bill, but the bill must not be intolerably heavy. She must be given her chance, though there was little enough sign in her of the spirit of repentance.

Germany's Dire Penalties

As concerned Germany, then, in particular, the immediate terms must go to the full limits of the utmost rigour sanctioned by justice and warranted by practicability; the lightening of the burden could only be a later act of grace. The assumption that she was purged of her sins by casting off the Hohenzollerns was daily contradicted by every utterance of her political leaders and of her press. In preparing the treaty, provision was made for the reduction of her military forces to a long-service army of 100,000 men, voluntarily enlisted—which ruled out the building up of a great reserve, after the method of Scharnhorst, when Napoleon reduced the Prussian Army to 40,000. The proposed limitation on the manufacture of war material, if effective, would keep her armament well below danger-point. The burden of the indemnities laid upon her should similarly preclude her from amassing wealth, while permitting the recovery of financial stability.

Briefly, she must be treated at the outset as a criminal discharged from prison but still under police supervision, an ex-burglar whose recovery of full citizenship might be earned, but only by good behaviour. The same principles, with appropriate variations in their application, would apply to Austria, Hungary, and Turkey.

But beyond readjustments of territory on the basis of nationality and self-determination, and the adjustment of the burdens that must be borne to the capacity of those who would have to bear them, it was essential that out of the war there should arise some system of international reconstruction which should reduce to a minimum, though it might not obliterate, the possibility of another such war as that from which the world had just emerged; which should afford some guarantee more certain than mere approximate equality of enormous armaments. No sane person imagined that any such scheme, complete and flawless, could be forged at a single stroke. But at an early stage the Peace Conference recognised that the attempt must be made, and made on a basis of mutual goodwill, mutual confidence, mutual readiness to forgo individual advantages, even it might be to surrender individual rights and to accept new individual obligations, in the common interest. This was the fundamental idea which issued in the League of Nations, the first article in the great Treaty of Peace, on which the future hopes of mankind must rest.

The League of Nations

The Great Treaty was, in fact, a group of treaties formulated by the Allies and Associated Powers and imposed by them upon the defeated Powers severally.

There was in it nothing in the nature of bargaining. The victors shaped the terms, not without many difficulties over the adjustment of divergent claims, reserving sundry controversial points for later decision. Months passed before they had arrived even among themselves at sufficiently definite agreement.

The scheme for organising the League of Nations was a primary essential; its formulation with a due regard to the preservation of individual sovreignties, on the one hand, and the creation of an adequate international authority on the other, however tentative, was an extremely intricate matter. At last the whole was submitted to Germany with the proviso that the Allies would consider such points as she might raise not as questions of her rights, but as modifications tending to harmony. The Germans assumed a righteous and patriotic indignation at the harshness of terms which laid the responsibility for the war upon them and would involve them in some part of the hardships consequent upon their aggression; they talked of refusing to sign, of fighting it out rather than submitting to "serfdom."

But when at last they had notice that the armistice would cease at the end of five days if they had not accepted the terms in which no further modifications would be made, they surrendered, and signed the Treaty on June 28th. It was peculiarly characteristic of that aspect of German mentality, which is the despair of all who desire the redemption of a people who have shown great qualities, that the German crews on the interned fleet at Scapa Flow triumphantly scuttled the ships at the last moment under the amazing impression that the action would be applauded by men of honour. In fact, that action bore final witness to the vanity of imagining that the German was already regenerate and should be received into the fold without further probation.

Defeat of the Titans

With the signature of the Peace by the Germans we close our record of the Great War, regarding all other signatures as a matter of course. The curtain does not fall on Armageddon to rise again on the Millennium. When the hurricane has passed the billows do not incontinently subside. Every great upheaval leaves its aftermath of troubles; reconstruction will provide problems enough to task us to the utmost. But the whirlwind has passed. The Titans strove to scale Olympus, to destroy the reign of law, to set might above right, and they were cast into the abyss. The old fable of the Greeks has been wrought out. The play is over.

IN PREPARATION FOR A NIGHT-BOMBING FLIGHT.—Pilots and observers on the British western front piecing together small section maps that indicated the lie of the land over which they were about to fly on a night-bombing expedition.

OVER THE ALPS IN AEROPLANES: BRITISH AERIAL SQUADRON FLYING OVER ITALY'S MOUNTAIN FRONTIER.

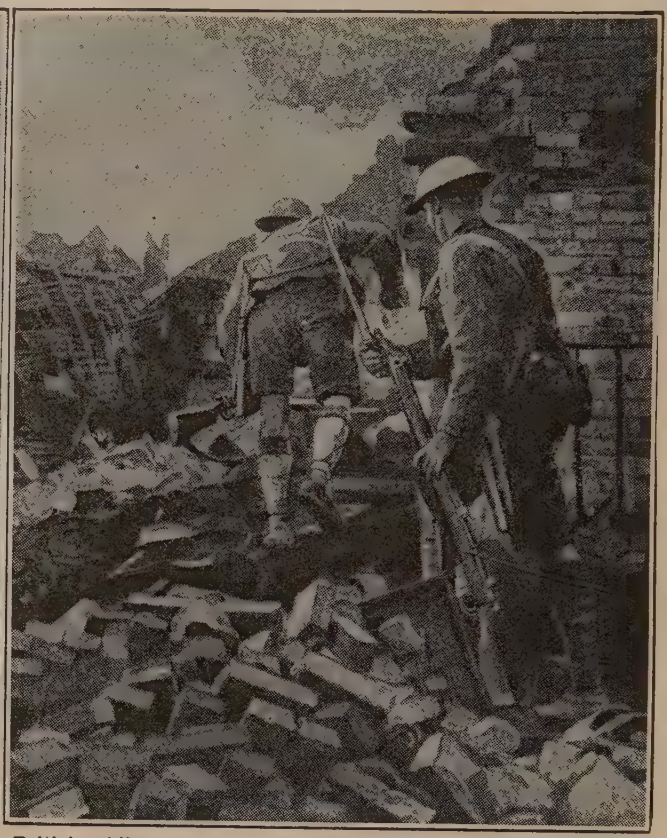
Britain's Glorious Victories in the West

From August 8th, 1918, to October 8th, 1918, the British Armies in powerful attacks breached the Hindenburg defences, capturing over 100,000 German prisoners. After the fall of Cambrai, October 9th, the great battle continued eastwards without cessation. British troops along with Belgian and French took part in the battle for the Flanders coast, October 14th. Ostend, Lille, and Douai fell on October 17th. Valenciennes was retaken on November 2nd, and Mons fell to Canadian valour on November 10th.

ARTILLERY TROPHIES CAPTURED BY THE CANADIANS.—A few of the vast number of enemy guns which accumulated behind the British lines in France. They formed part of the considerable haul made by the Canadians during the course of their great advances in the autumn of 1918. In the foreground is a big specimen of the Hun's anti-aircraft artillery.

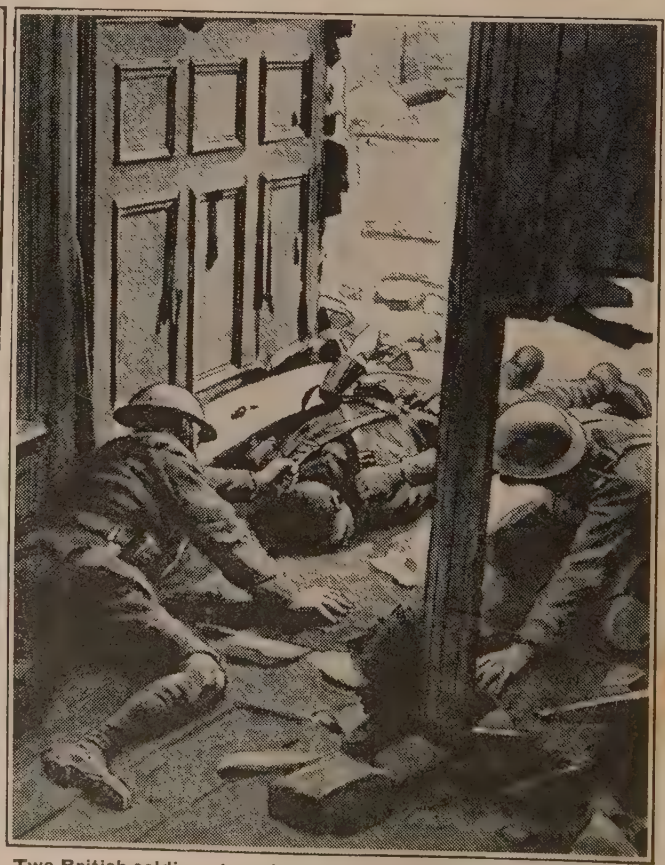
Driving the Boche from Albert's Smoking Ruins

Battalion O.C. taking a shot at a spot on the outskirts of Albert from which he believed the enemy was firing.



British soldiers making their way through and over the ruins in the work of clearing Albert from the invader.

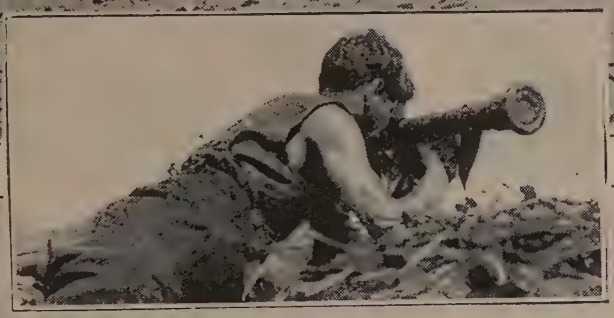
Trying to silence an enemy sniper who had taken up a spot among the debris of the war-scarred little town, which was captured by the Germans on March 27th, 1918.



Two British soldiers dragging a badly-wounded comrade out of the range of enemy fire. The small town of Albert was retaken by the British on August 22nd, 1918.

Broken Walls & Railway Wrack of Re-won Albert

Ruins of Albert Cathedral after the Germans had been driven from the town on Aug. 22, 1918, after occupying it nearly five months.



Photograph of the railway near Albert Station, taken only half an hour after the British had pushed the enemy out of the town on August 22nd, 1918. Inset above: British gunner engaged in range-finding in the fighting near Bapaume.

Amiens in Its Darkest Hours

By HAMILTON FYFE

NOTHING I saw of the ravages of war struck a colder chill to my heart than the empty streets and squares of Amiens, that gay, bustling city which during four months was silent and deserted, but which, freed in August 1918—as Marshal Foch promised it should be—from the threat of a second German occupation, gradually came back to life.

Of villages and small towns abandoned by their inhabitants, fiercely bombarded, ruined sometimes beyond recognition, I had seen many in France, in Poland, in Galicia, in Rumania, in Italy. But to drive through a city that has no people in it; to walk through streets at noon where your footsteps are loud on the pavement; to see in what had been so short a while before a hive of every activity, no living creature except perhaps a cat scratching feebly in the ruins of a shop, or a famished dog outside a shattered house—that affects the imagination with sinister force.

It would have been less uncanny if the city had been in ruins; but for a long time the marks of damage were few. There seemed to be no reason for the empty, silent streets, unless a plague had terrified the citizens into fleeing before it, or some mysterious disaster slain them in their dwellings while they slept. One saw the long rows of house and shop-fronts looking very much as they looked before the place was evacuated.

The German Offensive

As the weeks of bombardment grew in number the signs of German fury became more plain. The cathedral, happily, suffered little. A small hole in the roof, some stained window glass broken, a buttress broken, the interior damaged here and there; nothing which cannot be repaired. But it will be a long time before the central part of Amiens is built up again. There are blocks in which not a building has escaped. Blackened by fire, scarred by shell-bursts, hundreds of beautiful old structures have been turned into heaps of charred timber, shattered brickwork, or mere dust.

Many were built chiefly of lath and plaster. These were literally blown away. I remember a bomb falling in those last days of March 1918 in the roadway of the Street of the Three Pebbles, as the main thoroughfare of the city is oddly named. The force of the explosion ripped the fronts off several of the old shops. Buildings of this character hit by a shell collapse and disappear.

The night that this happened was the beginning of the troubles which Amiens was to go through. There had been air raids the week before—the week of the opening of the German offensive on March 21st. The weather, warm and clear and windless, suited the raiders. A full moon shone. This night, March 26th, was cloudless. The Germans took full advantage of it.

Already some thousands of the population had been scared into leaving the city at sundown. I took a walk between six and eight along the Somme and among the market-gardens which it waters. On the banks of the calm, shining river I found peace and beauty to refresh a spirit wearied by the sights and sounds of war. Coming down the stream from districts threatened already by the German advance were fugitives in boats with their belongings piled up round them. Then, as I re-entered Amiens, I met numbers of people with bags and bundles. I thought at first these were also refugees who had arrived by train. I soon discovered that they were flying not into but out of the city. They were going to sleep in villages round about so as to escape the bombs.

On a Wild Night

Before we had finished our frugal evening meal in the Hôtel du Rhin the entertainment began. There were two or three explosions at some little distance, and then a tremendous bang. Half the officers in the dining-room dropped instinctively on to their hands and knees. They had been taught to do this so well that it had become an instinct. The noise suggested that the bomb had struck the hotel; it had fallen just outside.

That was a wild night. The moon showed where dead horses lay in the streets, and lit up parties of rescuers dragging victims out of devastated houses, or trying to collect the remains of those who had been blown to bits. Wild rumours passed from lip to lip. "The Germans were close to the city. Their cavalry was in the suburbs already. They would be in Amiens before daylight." All this was absurd, of course; but it is useless to argue with frightened people. Before the daylight came, bitter cold and mistily grey (and no hot coffee to be got before I started out for the battlefield at six a.m.), many thousands had taken flight. From the hotel where I was billeted the proprietor and all his assistants had gone. I slept for a few hours in my clothes on a couch in another hotel which, being the only one with any servants left, was full up, three or four in each room. Next morning Amiens showed signs of having been badly damaged, and still more badly scared. The order for everyone to be ready to leave was issued that day.

Big Guns at Work

A great many had left before the bombardment cleared the city completely. It began one morning without notice. People looked up to see where the German airman was who had dropped a bomb. It was not until several shells had burst that they grasped the difference and understood that big German guns were at work. Then Amiens was abandoned.

For a time a few people stayed on. One of the pluckiest was the English chemist at the corner facing the garden in Three Pebbles Street. The shop, known to everyone who has been in this part of France during the war, was sandbagged up to a height of eight or ten feet. Inside you could still buy drugs and toothpaste, soap and brushes, until the stock was exhausted. Then the brave fellow left.

Amiens had been, all through the Somme battles and through the months following, such a refuge for the officer or the man with a couple of days' leave, such a good place to lunch and dine; such a rendezvous of all sorts and conditions of men, that its loss for these purposes was sorely felt. With wistful regret we recalled dinner at Marguerite's (otherwise the Cathedral Restaurant, where a very pretty girl brought you exquisitely cooked duck or chicken at an exorbitant price), or lunch at Charley's Bar. We thought of the crowded streets, the well-filled shop-windows, the relief and relaxation which the city had always offered from the monotony and squalor of life at the front.

Where Marguerite went to I know not. The chemist shifted, I believe, to Boulogne. Charley's Bar was set up in Abbeville. The greater part of the inhabitants were sent to the centre and the South of France. Now they are trickling back. Some of them, poor creatures, will look for their houses or places of business in vain. The hotels will, I suppose, be reopening soon, those which still stand. Among these must not be counted the Hôtel du Rhin. It was hit by a shell in June, and must be rebuilt in large part before it can be made habitable again.

Two Historic Birds

Bound up with our memories of the Hôtel du Rhin—and all who recollect Amiens recollect the hotel—are thoughts of Gaston, the head waiter, and of the odd bird couple in the garden, the seagull and the stork. Gaston was a friendly, companionable soul, with a nice discrimination in wine, and an exact knowledge always of the relative excellence of every dish on the menu. He was also, in a harmless way, a bit of a liar. Gaston made us believe that he had served in the early stages of the war as an officer, and been wounded severely in an heroic charge. He said once in a melancholy aside, as he took an order from an officer with only one pip on his shoulder, "To think that I was once a full lieutenant, and monsieur's superior officer!" Alas! just before he quitted, Gaston confessed, in a fit of remorse induced by alarm and apprehension, that he had never been out of the ranks.

Here was rich comedy. The stork and the seagull came to a tragic end. Some days after the hotel was shut up, an American war correspondent and a Press officer, filled with misgiving as to the fate of the birds, managed to get into the garden. They found the inseparables in poor condition. With some difficulty they caught them and carried them off to War Correspondents' Headquarters. The seagull enjoyed itself, for there was plenty of water, but the stork pined, refused its food, and in a few days died. An altercation with a villager, which ended in its being thrown over a wall, was held to have hastened the end. After this the seagull disappeared, and thus lost its chance of figuring in the War Museum along with its companion.

They had lived through the German occupation of Amiens in 1914, and they were more familiar to all whom business or pleasure took often to the Hôtel du Rhin than any other inhabitants of the city. They had a right to be stuffed and exhibited. They were historic birds.

Along the Line of Triumph from Somme to Rheims

Some Germans taken by the British on the Somme. On August 13th, 1918, Sir Douglas Haig announced that 28,000 prisoners had been captured by British forces and the First French Army.

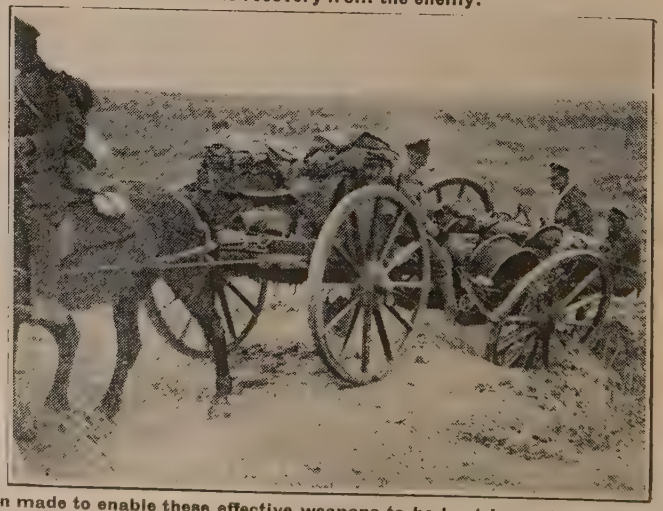
Clearing up on the Somme front after the British wave of attack had passed on. Four Germans who had remained in hiding in a dug-out surrendering to a British soldier.

Italian and British soldiers photographed together on the western front in a sector where the former were "taking over" from the latter. Inset above: British, French, and Italian officers consulting their maps during their forward fighting in the woods near Rheims.

Small Details that were Part of a Great Story

Australian limber crossing a railway during fighting south of the Somme on August 24th, 1918, when they captured Chuignolles.

German gun that had been put out of action by a direct hit and later became one of the many captured by the Canadians. Right: Party of British wounded passing through a ruined main street of Albert after its recovery from the enemy.



Trench-mortar converted into a mobile arm, an ingenious adaptation made to enable these effective weapons to be kept in contact with the rapidly retreating enemy. Right: Canadian signal section laying telephone wires along captured ground pitted by shell-holes.

Heroes of Hill 70 Who Closed In on Lens

Canadian War Records

View of Lens during the bombardment by the Canadians. Gradually from the south, west, and north the Canadians closed in on this centre of the coalfields.

Canadian soldiers, who have just dug it up after its two years' burial, handing a box of money to the Mayor of Souchez, and (right) an Alderman of Souchez examining the treasure-trove. The Mayor is standing on his immediate left.

Officers of the Canadians examining a new "lifebuoy" liquid-fire thrower which had been captured on Hill 70. Right: Carrier-pigeon carriers giving their charges a drink of water outside a German dug-out on the slope of Hill 70.

Horse, Foot and Guns in Pursuit of the Foe:

Australian artillery loading ammunition limbers. Splendid support was given to the Australian infantry by their gunners following hot on their trail. At Peronne, on August 31st, 1918, they got several brigades of field-guns into position while the infantry were crossing the river under cover of darkness, and at daybreak opened so intense a fire on Mont St. Quentin that the infantry carried that height in an hour.

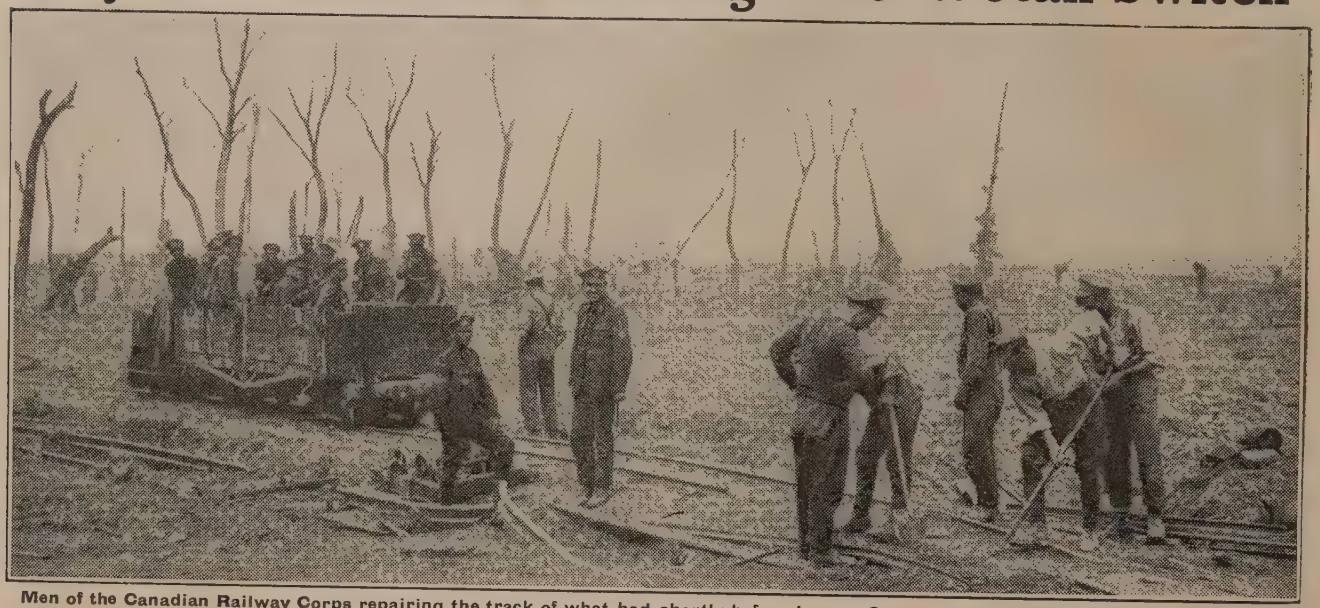
New Zealanders advancing through a village to the north-east of Bapaume. It was in the early morning of August 29th, 1918, that one of the outstanding successes of the Allies' counter-offensive fell to the New Zealanders, who drove the enemy rearguards out of Bapaume and re-entered that town, which their Australian comrades had first recovered from the invader eighteen months before, in March, 1917.

Where Anzacs Gained Fresh Glory in France

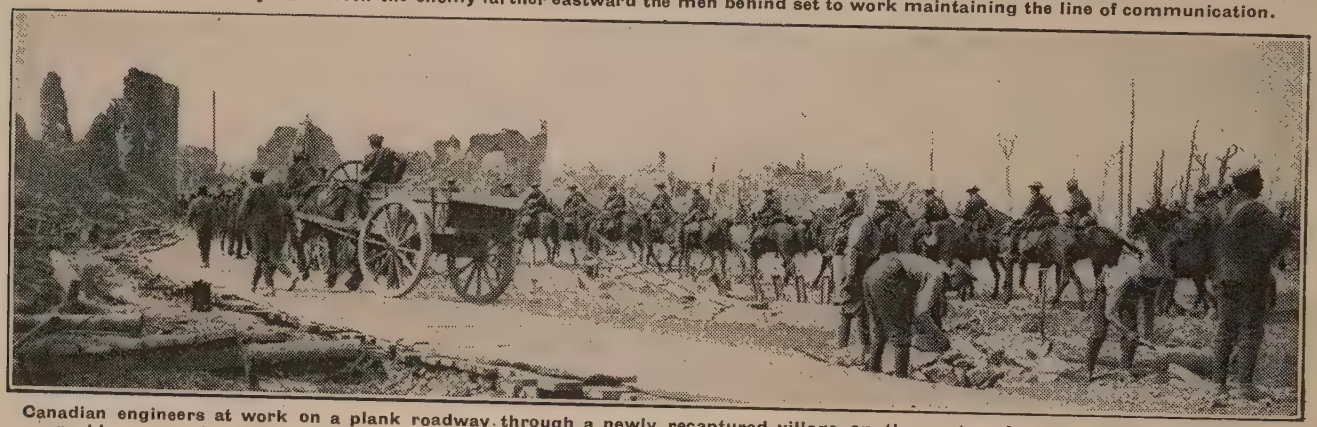
Patrol of Australian Light Horse clearing out enemy resisters in a ruined village during the great advance on the western front, in which troops from the island continent had again and again won new laurels. On September 18th, 1918, Sir Douglas Haig reported, men of the 1st and 4th Australian Divisions had secured and held the outpost positions of the Hindenburg line on the whole of their respective fronts.

Peronne as it appeared when it was captured by Australian troops on Sunday, September 1st, 1918. The barricade of wire-tangled timber shows how the enemy had sought to impede the Australians, who by their capture of Mont St. Quentin the day before had made the enemy's evacuation of Peronne inevitable. There was machine-gun fighting in the streets before the place was cleared of rear-guarding Germans.

Ways That Led To & Through the 'Wotan Switch'



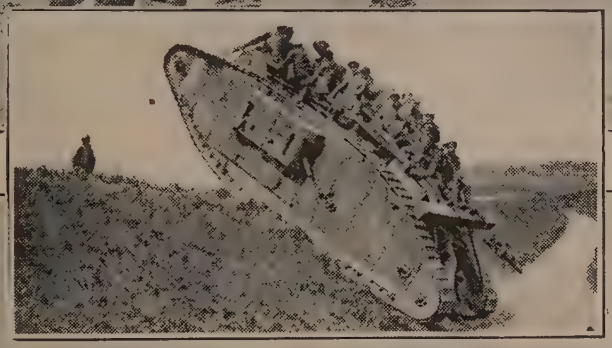
Men of the Canadian Railway Corps repairing the track of what had shortly before been a German light railway on the western front. As soon as the infantry had driven the enemy farther eastward the men behind set to work maintaining the line of communication.



Canadian engineers at work on a plank roadway through a newly recaptured village on the western front, thus permitting of the rapid movement, over badly broken ground, of wheeled traffic for taking forward supplies to men and guns in the fighting area.

Ammunition column of the Canadians passing through a ruined village on the Arras front during their magnificent advance to and through the "Wotan Switch." Nothing was left of the one-time village beyond a few shell-broken walls.

Canadian Heroes of the Great Allied Advance



Canadian soldiers using a Tank for transport purposes, and (left) a well-laden Tank "bus" climbing out of a sunken road.

Armoured car of the Canadians on the western front getting into action with its machine-guns. Remarkable were the achievements of both the Canadians and their cars during the fighting forward, through, and beyond the Germans' boasted "Wotan" line.

Great Canal Barrier Broken by British Troops

Part of the Canal du Nord, showing one entrance to its tunnel. It was on September 27th, 1918, that the British forces stormed the formidable canal to the west of Cambrai, and, as Mr. Beach Thomas said in the "Daily Mail," the remarkable fact was that "the hardest thing was done most easily"—that hardest thing being, of course, the crossing of the Canal du Nord.

Another view of the Canal du Nord. The crossing of the canal for the attack on Cambrai was one of the many triumphs of the advance. "Some men," said Mr. Beach Thomas, "crossed on bridges, some swarmed up and down; some carried ladders as if this deep and steep ditch were a mediæval fortress." The preliminary barrage had killed or cowed the enemy along the canal bank-

Maple Leaf Warriors Breach the 'Wotan' Line

German prisoners captured by the Canadian cavalry passing on their way to the cages behind the Canadian lines.

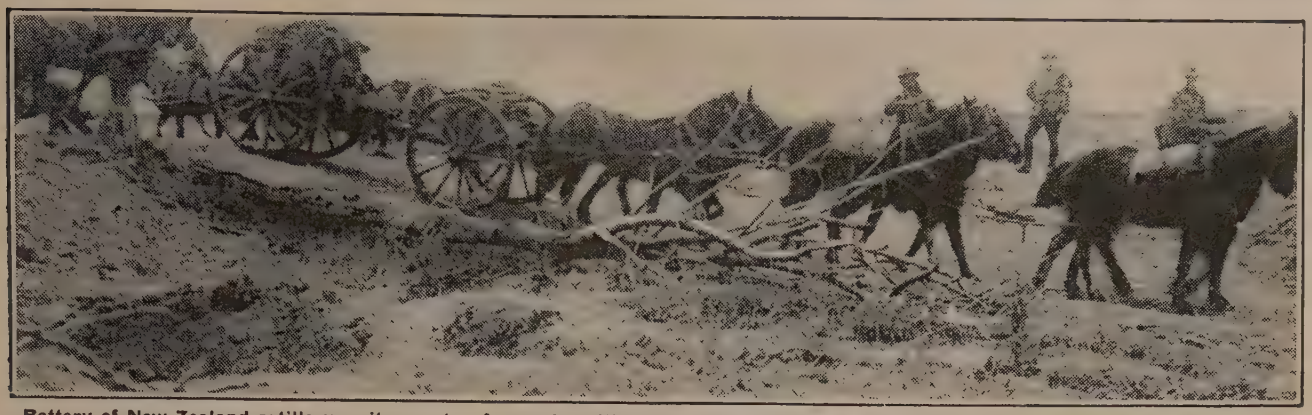
Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig congratulating Canadian troops on the part they had taken in an advance, and (inset above) complimenting another battalion of the same force. The Canadians again and again distinguished themselves early in the Fifth Year. On Sept. 2nd, 1918, Sir Douglas Haig reported that they had broken through the Drocourt-Queant "switch" of the Hindenburg line.

Joy at Awakening From a Four Years' Nightmare

Inhabitants of Saudemont—east of the "Wotan" line and north-west of Cambrai—freed at the beginning of September, 1918, by the Canadians after four years of Hun domination.

Some of the people of Saudemont being removed in a transport waggon from their village while it was still under German shell fire, and (right) the departure of another waggonload of people relieved from the four years' nightmare of "German occupation." In oval above: Two old Frenchwomen proudly march down the village street on the arms of one of their deliverers.

Active Anzac Guns that Gave the Foe No Rest



Battery of New Zealand artillery on its way to a forward position. The Dominion troops played a big part in the recovery of Bapaume on Aug. 29th, 1918, and, fighting along the Bertincourt road, broke through the Hindenburg line to the south of Cambrai.

New Zealand gunners moving a 60-pounder through Bertincourt. In oval: A Dominion battery rounding a corner in Achiet-le-Petit.

Guns in action immediately after taking up the new position. On September 30th, 1918, the New Zealand forces were forcing their way over the canal below Cambrai, effecting a crossing at Crevecœur and surmounting the formidable obstacle comparatively cheaply.

The Cambrai Battlefield

By HAMILTON FYFE

LIKE nearly all the towns in the North of France, Cambrai lies in a hollow. From a ridge to the west of it we used last winter to look at the tower of the cathedral—we could only see the top of it—and wonder what the Germans were doing there. On this ridge there were derelict Tanks, some of those which were put out of action in the battle of November, 1917. To the right was Bourlon Wood, to the left the village of Flesquières, shot all to pieces, not a house left whole.

On the glacis of the ridge we could see plainly the broad tracks which the Tanks had made, and we had to pick our feet up carefully among the tangles of barbed-wire. This was the German wire through which the Tanks tore a path for our infantry. The ground was pock-marked with shell-holes. German snipers in a village near the wood sent bullets "kissing" over whenever a man exposed himself in daylight; a sinister stretch of country, silent and deserted. Yet there was a fascination in getting as near to the enemy's line as we could, and gazing through field-glasses at the top of the tower, so near and yet so far.

Bourlon Wood, if it grows up again, will be a wood of dreadful memories. It was fought for with obstinacy disastrous to both sides. I suppose no single spot on any front has been more hideously dosed with gas-shells. North of the wood runs the Arras-Cambrai road.

The Canal du Nord

Here occurred some of the hardest fighting in March 1918. I heard from some of those who took part in it of an ingenious expedient employed by the enemy when his advance was being held up by the stubborn gallantry of our men. The German difficulty was that of finding any cover for their storming troops. To make it they sent over 5·9's short of our line, and made big shell-holes, which were at once occupied by their men.

Farther back from Bourlon Wood is the monstrous spoil-bank of a disused mine, and in front of this the great concrete ditch called the Canal du Nord. An impressive feat of engineering, this deep, wide waterway, complete except for the water. There was a wooden bridge across it, and looking northward, we could see where the barrier was between our troops and the enemy. On the bed of the canal soldiers walked, and transport waggons rattled, carrying food to the men who lived there. For this served as the second line of our trench system until the Germans in their March offensive forced their way across and drove us back.

Little did either they or we think that in six months British troops would recross it and sweep on into Cambrai and beyond, pushing them, a disordered and disheartened force, into the open country between Cambrai and Le Cateau, and then farther still.

The first time I saw this four-times-famous battlefield was in August, 1914. I had motored out from Amiens, passing at frequent intervals along the road lorries filled with the British soldiers of the Regular Army who had just been landed in France. It was a hot afternoon. The sun scorched the stubble of the harvested fields. From the farms by the roadside and in the village streets the country-girls ran, throwing flowers and cigarettes and chocolate to the "chocolats," as they called the men in unfamiliar khaki, who threw down their shoulder-badges in exchange.

Four times the red horror of war has passed since then over that countryside, now ruined and devastated, grown over with rank grass and weeds, the cornfields furrowed by shells instead of the ploughshare, the orchards marked only by a few mutilated stumps of trees. All that the farm-folk will find of their homesteads are heaps of brick and rubbish. That is what war means. Yet there are still people who say the world will never get rid of war. To which I reply: "A world which, after this, permits war deserves to have war."

Four Years Ago

I wonder how many of those British soldiers who were singing on the Amiens-Cambrai road that August day are still alive! They went right on through the old town, on to the Belgian frontier, and some of them across it to Maubeuge and Mons. I went that evening to Le Cateau. Cambrai was full of soldiers, both French and English. The towns-people collected round the Englishmen in knots, and they tried to talk to each other, and all were in capital humour. Just about a week later our troops were retreating through the place as fast as they could. Most of the inhabitants had left by that time. I remember their waggons cumbering the roads for many a day.

At Le Cateau the British Headquarters Staff had just settled itself in, that warm, scented summer night. There was a rare run on the accommodation of the one small hotel. To get a room was impossible. Dinner could be had by those who were patient enough to wait for it. Adam, the Paris correspondent of the "Times," and Ward Price, of the "Daily Mail," were with me. We dined in the crowded little room, then strolled out into the *place* to take the air; and in the *place* we were promptly arrested by the Provost-Marshal.

Those were the days when the British Army was terribly afraid of war correspondents. It has since learnt that they are like dogs: if they are fed well, and given a warm place to sleep in, and taken out regularly (in motor-cars) for exercise, and sometimes patted on the head, they behave quite nicely, and give no trouble at all. But, at that early date, they were regarded and treated as desperadoes.

Under Arrest

The Provost-Marshal said we had no right to be in Le Cateau. We told him this was news to us. He was stern, and said, "I could keep you under arrest if I liked." We said we wished he would. We had no place to sleep, and it would suit us very well to be provided with a lodging for the night. He replied grimly that he should put us in the town lock-up.

"Give me your word you will report yourselves to-morrow morning to Colonel Macdonagh, and you can go." That was his final decision.

Colonel Macdonagh is now General Sir Charles Macdonagh, Adjutant-General at the War Office. The Provost-Marshal I came across much later on, commanding a very famous division—the division which the Germans set at the head of a list of divisions to be specially feared, the Highland Division, the 51st. Now he commands a corps. He has proved himself one of our ablest Army leaders, and he has quite got over his distrust of the newspaper man. The last time I saw him he spent the best part of an hour, during a battle which he was helping to direct, giving me a full account of what his divisions had done, illustrating it by diagrams which he drew in the dust of the roadway with his stick.

Next morning we drove through Cambrai again before steering south for St. Quentin, Compiègne, and Paris. That was the last any war correspondent saw of the streets of Cambrai until the other day, when we took it back after its four years of German occupation.

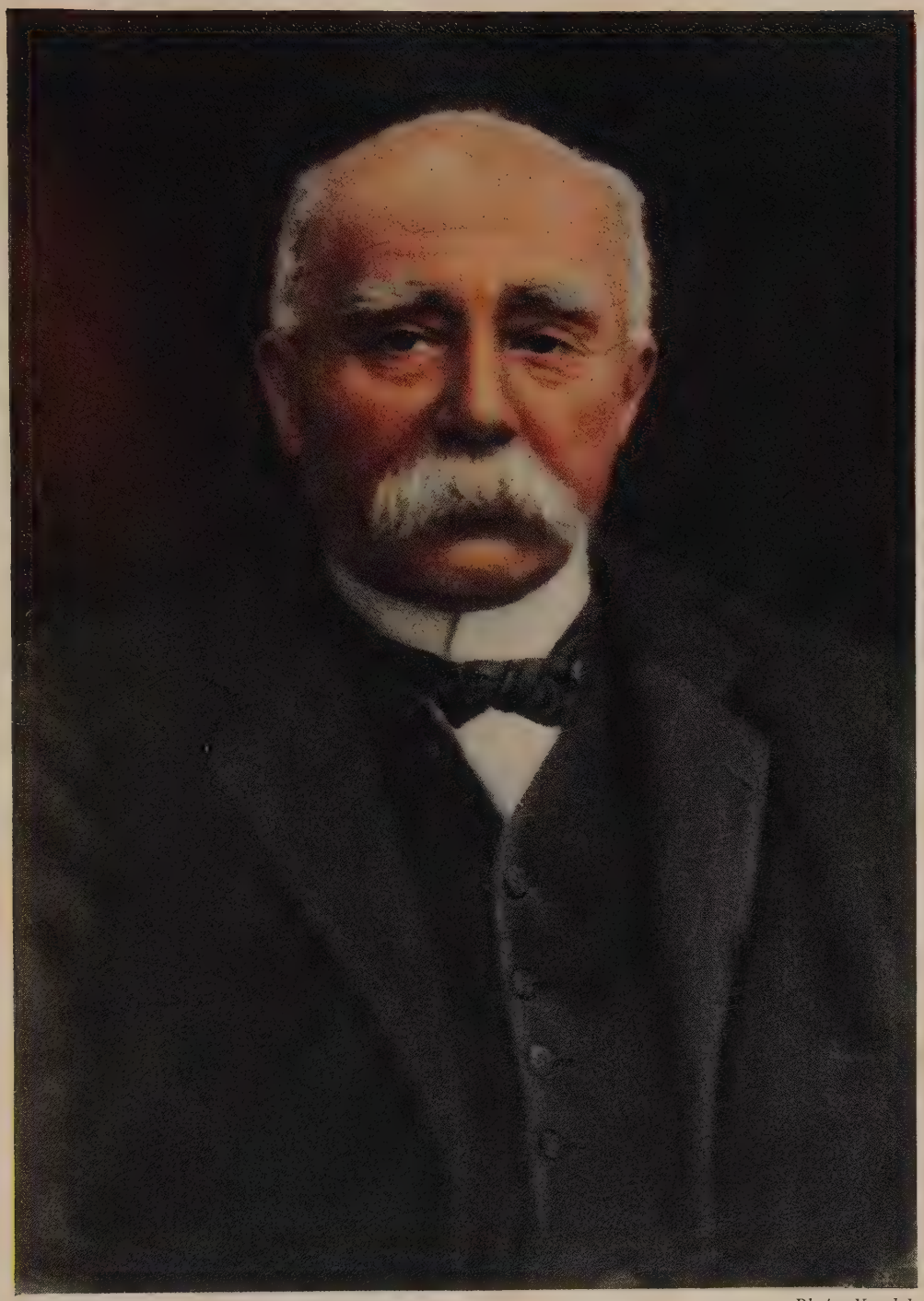
It was a pleasant old town to pass through. No features of particular interest, but an air of prosperous old age about it. I dare say it will recover, as it has often recovered before, and before many years are past will be as fat and well-liking as it was in 1914. For hundreds of years this has been a country fought over whenever the Courts of Europe quarrelled and made their easily-duped subjects believe they had a grudge against some other nation. It was a country just suited to the old kind of battles—flat mostly, with no abrupt eminences, only gentle slopes; no rivers to speak of, only small sluggish streams, and slow-flowing, straight canals; a good country for cavalry, for battles of manœuvre, a good country for Tanks.

Surprise and Counter-Surprise

Tanks and cavalry between them came near to taking Cambrai in November, 1917. I was in London at that time, and I remember talking to a man on the top of an omnibus, an old retired officer of the Regular Army, while the celebration peals were being rung. "Foolish," he said; "premature and foolish! Why can't these bishops keep quiet? It's like asking for trouble!" And, sure enough, trouble ensued.

We had surprised the enemy and gained a palpable advantage. But we had left one of our flanks very weak, and in his turn he worked off a surprise on us. The enemy was quick to take advantage of the thinness of our line, hurled a solid wedge against it, and dented it in. The report of the inquiry held about this unfortunate episode has not been published; therefore the facts cannot be related, but they are sufficiently known.

So rude was the enemy's blow, and so rapid his progress, that some Labour Battalion officers, who were taking an early morning joy-ride in a motor-car, found to their dismay a village, which had been in our hands when they drove through it on their way out, filled with Germans when they returned. Their driver saw there was only one thing to be done. Like Browning's "low man with a little thing to do," he "saw it and did it." Straight through the village at top speed the car went, over the Germans who summoned it to stop, and away into safety. A "stout fellow," that, to use an expression very common in the Army to-day. I hope he had his reward.



Photo—Vandyk.

M. GEORGES CLEMENCEAU.

Premier of France.

To face p. 3280.

Canadian Chariots Gathered to Capture Cambrai

Men of the Canadian Motor Machine-gun Section assembled by the side of the main road to Cambrai waiting to go up into action.

Another view of the Canadian motor machine-gunners waiting to advance in the battle that ended in the capture of Cambrai, October 9th, 1918. In a special order on October 3rd General Currie said that in two months the Canadian Corps had defeated decisively forty-seven German divisions, nearly a quarter of the total German forces on the western front. Inset: Whippet Tanks advancing.

Chaotic Ruin Wrought by the Hun in Cambrai

View in Cambrai taken a few hours after the Germans had been driven out. Left: The same quarter seen from a different angle, and showing a burning house.

A patrol of the North Lancashire Regiment marching into Cambrai, and (left) a solitary British soldier advancing cautiously up a burning street.

Interior of a picture palace in Cambrai frequented by the Germans during their occupation of the town, and (right) the reserved seats for officers in the same place. Cambrai was captured on Oct. 9th, 1918, Canadian and English troops penetrating into the town at dawn. Most of the buildings were then intact, but subsequent explosion of mines left by the enemy practically reduced the place to ruins.

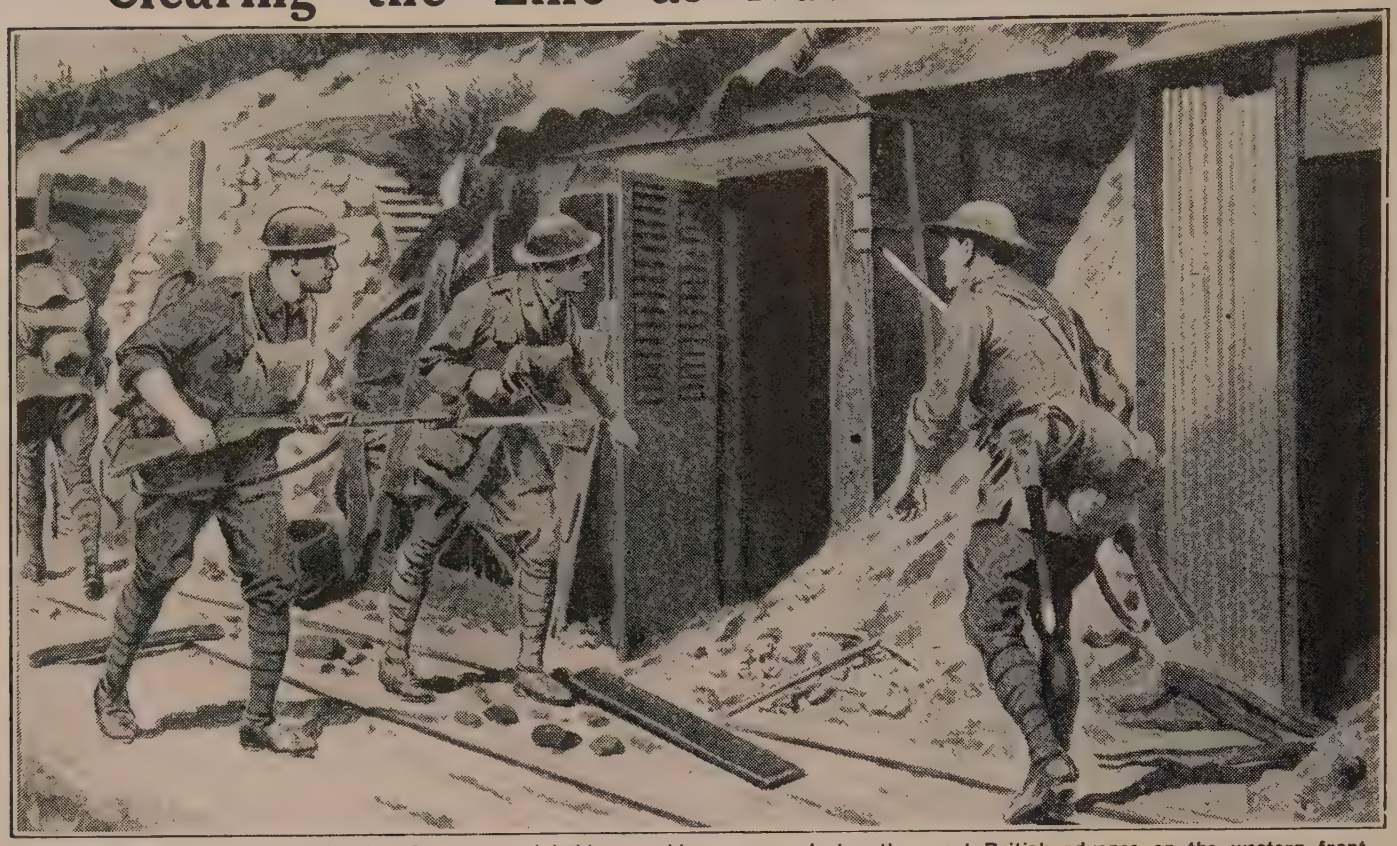
Messengers of Mars in Training for the Field

Training dogs to act as despatch-carriers in the war zone. They run on their appointed course despite the firing of a rifle volley.

Three of the "dogs of war" in the act of clearing chevaux de frise formed of branches and barbed-wire, and (right) a company of them passing through a smoke barrage. The intelligent animals are taught to get through or over all obstacles.

Dogs in the course of their training being taught to pass through a line of riflemen extended and volley firing. The training of dogs for service in the field was greatly developed during the course of the war.

Clearing the Line as Australia Advanced



Routing out and rounding up lurking Germans and hidden machine-gunners during the great British advance on the western front, September, 1918. Australian daylight patrol—with revolver and bayonets ready for instant action if such prove necessary—investigating enemy dug-outs in a steep bank in which there was reason to believe that there might still be a Hun machine-gun party.

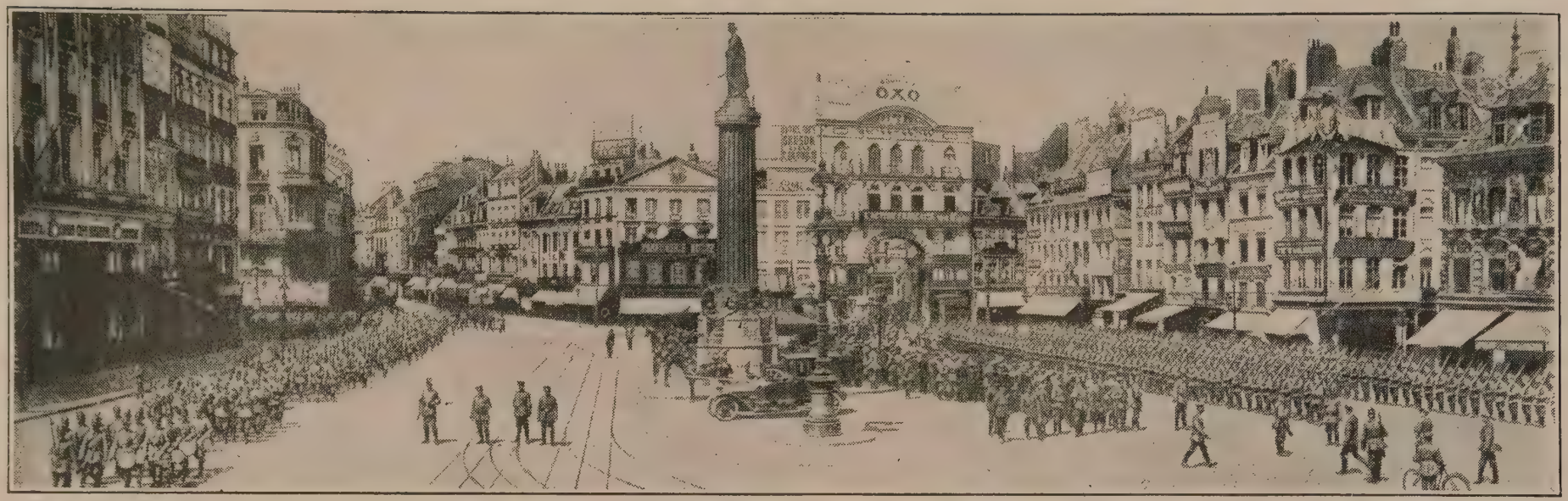
Rapid linking up of the lines of communication on the western front. Men of an Australian signal section carrying forward the telephone wire for connecting Headquarters with a newly-acquired battalion headquarters in a dug-out which had only just been taken from the retreating enemy. Such instant "linking up" was an important feature in a successful advance.

Great Joy in Lille Delivered from the German

Relieved! Reception of the first French soldier to enter recaptured Lille, from which the Germans had been driven by the troops of the British Fifth Army on October 17th, 1918, and (right) of a British soldier who was among the first of the allied troops to reach Lille.

Arrival of men of the Liverpool Regiment in Lille on October 17th, 1918, and (inset) Gen. Haking with members of his Staff and the Mayor of Lille.

Women and children of Lille welcoming British troops on their arrival at the outskirts of the relieved city. In the early morning of October 17th, 1918, the Germans "silently stole away," and before noon on that day a British officer of the Liverpool Regiment and a small party of men entered Lille to the tumultuous joy of the long-suffering inhabitants.



This fine photograph, showing a parade of German troops in the Grand' Place, Lille, during the enemy occupation, furnishes remarkable evidence of the detestation in which the invaders were held by the inhabitants, for not one single civilian spectator of the military pageant can be detected. No Lillois stood on pavement or at window to betray the least interest in the display of triumphant German power. Vastly different were the scenes, shown below, when in the same Grand' Place the power of the Allies marched by in triumph.

IN LILLE: JUBILATION AFTER SILENT SUFFERING.—On October 17th, 1918, troops of the Fifth British Army, under the command of General Birdwood, captured Lille. Soon after the last Germans left the town our men, led by their bands, marched in, and as British drums went throbbing through the city there were scenes of indescribable enthusiasm on the part of the liberated inhabitants. Flags, concealed throughout the four years' occupation, appeared at every window, and the troops marched through thoroughfares thronged with people frenzied with joy. The Grand' Place was one mass of shouting, cheering, weeping humanity wildly acclaiming those who had freed them from the long-dominating Teuton.

President Poincaré and the Liberators of Lille

M. Raymond Poincare, President of the French Republic, with General Birdwood at the Gate of Lille, and (left) arrival of the President at the city gate.

President Poincare, with General Birdwood, inspecting the British guard of honour at the entrance to Lille before the city which had been re-won for France was formally handed over to the President. It was on October 17th, 1918, that troops of the British Fifth Army, under the command of General Birdwood, encircled and captured Lille.

Canada Conqueror of Vimy Takes Valenciennes

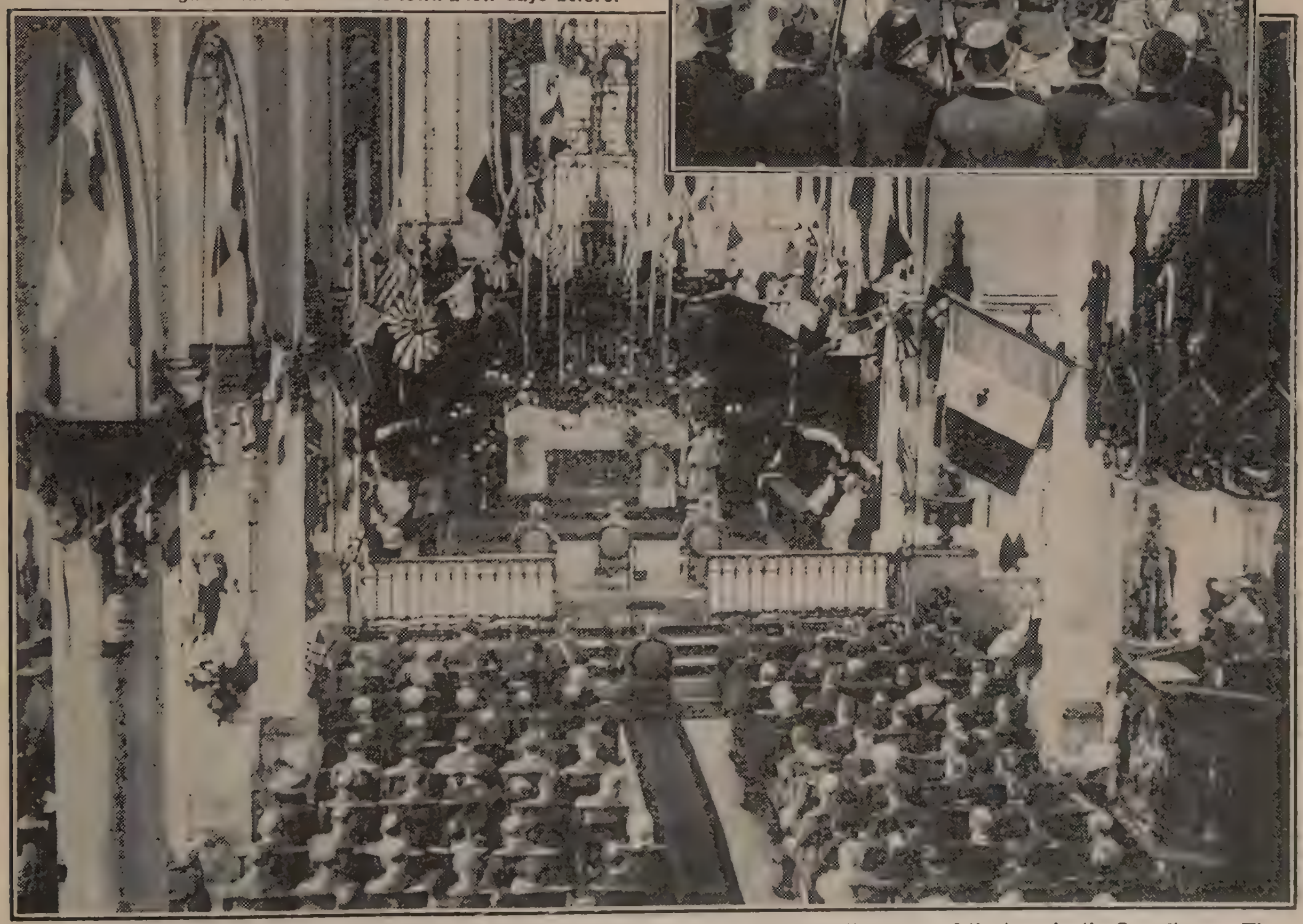
Canadian patrol going forward amid the shattered walls of Valenciennes, while two of their comrades with a Lewis gun waited their opportunity for action among the fallen rafters. Left: Burning building in Valenciennes.

German prisoner crawling over a ladder-bridge across the smashed canal at Valenciennes. Right: Canadian soldiers helping some of the freed people through a broken bridge destroyed by the Germans near that town.

Canadian trench-mortar in action in a courtyard within five hundred yards of the centre of Valenciennes, and (right) a well-laden prisoner who gave himself up near the same town. He said he was a Russian Pole who had been compelled to fight by the Germans. Valenciennes was retaken by the Canadians on November 3rd, 1918.

Prince of Wales Joins in French Rejoicing

The Prince of Wales, on the steps of the statue erected to Marshal Villars in Denain, at the march-past on October 27th, 1918, of the Canadian brigade that delivered the town a few days before.

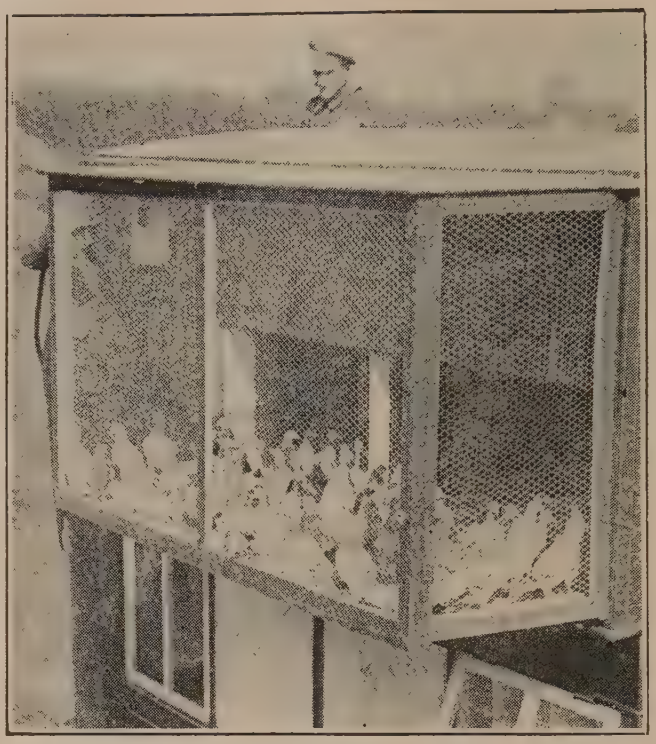


Thanksgiving Service on October 27th, 1918, in the Church of Denain to commemorate the rescue of the town by the Canadians. The Prince of Wales, with a Canadian general on either side of him, sat immediately in front of the altar. Inset: The Prince and General Currie talking with some of the Denain veterans of 1870, who proudly brought forward their flag long kept in secret security.

Followers of the Flying Fancy on the Field

Canadian War Records

Army carrier pigeons returning from the trenches with messages on which the lives of men and issue of battles may depend.



Pigeons in the loft of their lorry home. The pigeon post is an important part of the intelligence service of all armies.

Soldiers off duty watching the pigeons sunning themselves. Inset: One of the Army motor pigeon-lofts. Besides their service as despatch carriers from points where other means of communication are impracticable, the pigeons are a source of endless interest to the men.

Star of Mons in the Ascendant

The Closing Battles of Britain's Victorious Armies

By EDWARD WRIGHT

IN the last week of August, 1914, five British divisions retreated from Mons. In the first week of November, 1918, five British armies marched back to Mons. It was the most tremendous recoil in history. From the blood of the men who had fallen in the first retreat there had grown, by slow, gigantic effort and terrible sacrifice, a power in war wielded by free peoples which the strongest military State ever existing on earth had grown impotent to resist. Teutonic craft, after triumphing in Russia, had become as powerless as Teutonic force to stay the triumphal return of the soldiers of freedom.

October, 1918, had been a month of continual British victories, in which 49,000 German prisoners were taken, together with nearly a thousand guns, bringing the British captures, since the opening of the British offensive by Amiens in August, to 172,659 prisoners and 2,378 guns. On the last day of October the Germans stood to battle in the old city of Valenciennes. They tried to break the British flank, but were broken by the Canadians, who, under cover of a great smoke-screen, fought into machine-gunners' nests in the houses.

Valenciennes, when entered in the morning of November 1st, had a strange, nightmarelike atmosphere. The streets were completely empty, no faces looked out from the windows, shells screamed through the air, and from the eastern side, on the road to Mons, still sounded the deadly rattle of machine-guns.

Hun Fear of Reprisals

Twenty thousand of the inhabitants had been deported to Mons, and those who remained were sheltering in cellars, fearful of the savage storm of high-explosive and poison-gas shell with which the new barbarians were used to avenge a defeat. The Germans had poisoned thousands of non-combatants in this manner in the neighbourhood of Valenciennes, and this was the reason why the Canadians found no happy multitude in the city rejoicing in liberation.

At last, however, the Teuton was becoming anxious about the matter of reprisals. He suddenly abandoned his device of placing delayed-action mines in towns and villages from which he was driven, for fear the soldiers of Marshal Foch might cross the Rhine. Yet the warlike spirit of the German soldier was not as broken as that of the German sailor.

The enemy Fleet had been ordered to steam out for final battle against the squadrons of Sir David Beatty, but the men were shooting their officers and seizing control of ships and ports to save themselves from facing the gun fire of the British and United States Navies. They had had enough fighting in the Jutland Bank action and in submarine operations. Like the Russian peasant, they preferred the easy rough-and-tumble of civil strife.

In the German Army, however, there were many good fighting men still remaining. Some of them were, like enemy submarine commanders, reckless because of the things they had done, and, as human tigers, were game to the end. These men made machine-gunners of a high order, and the German commander was in a situation in which he could use his machine-gun power to great advantage. Between the British troops and Mons could be seen from the air an enormous green-brown tract stretching from the edge of Le Cateau to Landrecies towards Maubeuge. This was the Forest of Mormal, famous in the history of Sir Douglas Haig's old command of the First British Army Corps. The forest is some forty square miles, and its northern approaches were guarded by the old fortress town of Le Quesnoy, against which the New Zealand Division was violently battling.

Great Forest Obstacle

The German armies were lined out on a series of naturally strong positions, formed by the Ghent Canal and the flooded Scheldt River, as far as Valenciennes. The water-line was broken between the Scheldt at Valenciennes and the Sambre at Le Cateau, but the enemy had the great Mormal Forest, overgrown with brushwood by four years of neglect, to fill the dry gap in his moated front.

Nearly everybody expected that so vast and dense an obstacle as the rolling Mormal woodland, in which machine-gun defence would probably be murderous, would have slowly to be turned along the open country north and south, as the French and American armies had turned, by gradual operations, the similar obstacle of the Argonne Forest.

But that was not the British way. The goal of Mons was becoming a high object of passionate desire to the national armies of the British Commonwealth. The enemy was urgently seeking for an armistice, but he had not yet lost his warlike pride, and he still hoped to win, by diplomatic treaty, better terms than he could obtain on the field of battle. The new British soldiers wished to stand victorious in the Flemish colliery city where their old Regular little Expeditionary Force of 86,000 men had opened the war against overwhelming odds.

Instead, therefore, of working round the forest in the ordinary way, three British armies—the First, Third, and Fourth—opened the Second Battle for Mons at dawn on November 4th, 1918, by a direct frontal attack upon the great wooded ambush between Le Cateau and Maubeuge. On a front of some thirty miles the men under General Horne, General Byng, and General Rawlinson went straight and hard against the concealed and desperate Teutonic forces.

N.Z.'s Task at Le Quesnoy

The New Zealanders of the Third Army at Le Quesnoy had the hardest task and most brilliant success. Gallantly they tried with scaling-ladders to storm the high ramparts and bastions strengthened by Vauban, but being held up by machine-gun fire and curtains of shell, they worked round the old fortifications and completely surprised the German gunners, taking more than a hundred guns and reaching the enemy's waggon lines.

While the garrison of Le Quesnoy was wondering why their own gun fire had ceased, parley was made with the besieged, encircled force, two New Zealand parties calling upon the enemy to submit and avoid useless bloodshed. As the German commander refused to surrender, the New Zealanders broke into the town, carrying barricade after barricade and chasing the remnant of a thousand Germans into the cellars.

Meanwhile the Fourth British Army forced the passage of the Sambre between Le Cateau and the forest. In spite of crossing fires of hostile machine-guns and shrapnel barrage from the enemy's batteries, Cameron Highlanders of the 1st Division—a unit with special memories of Mormal Forest—fought across the Sambre in six minutes.

The men of the 32nd Division also stormed over the river, and the southern side of the forest was entered by the famous Cheshires and other fine battalions of the memorable 25th Division who, with combined skill and gallantry, shot, hacked, and manœuvred their way to Landrecies, where the Coldstream Guards, on August 25th, 1914, had strewn the street with Germans that tried to surprise the Guards Brigade by an advance in motor-lorries.

At the end of the war it was the British who possessed the better machinery of battle. Their light, fast storming cars transformed forest fighting from the most difficult into one of the most rapid forms of warfare. The German front was completely smothered in dense, white smoke, and while the enemy forces were thus blinded the "whippet" Tanks drove through their defences and swerved round them, and by the time the smoke barrage cleared the Germans found themselves being shot down from the flank and rear, both by Tank gunners and by infantry accompanying the mechanical monsters of battle.

The Final Phase

All day the forest combat went on. When night fell it still continued, the 18th, 50th, 38th, 17th, and 62nd Divisions fighting over wire entanglements, pits, and log barricades by the old Roman road running towards Bavai. At daybreak the British troops emerged from the great woodland and moved towards the fortress camp of Maubeuge, by which General von Kluck had hoped to encircle and capture the British Expeditionary Force, publishing his vain boast that he would do it.

While the Third and Fourth Armies closed towards the Mons line from the south, the First Army advanced on Condé, from which a canal, once lined with anxious Britons, stretched to Mons. Here the enemy retreated rather than stand to battle, but in and around the Mormal Forest, where he strongly attempted to resist, the invader was broken with terrible completeness, losing in one day more than ten thousand prisoners and two hundred guns.

Then against his rearguards of machine-gunners the final phase of the return to Mons began. Tournai fell to the British, and Guards and Yorkshiremen carried Maubeuge, and on Monday, November 11th, before the "cease fire" sounded the mighty successors of "the contemptible little Army" were in Mons, a spot that was consecrated ground to them. By the most remarkable coincidence in history the war on the British side ended where it began.

War Closed in Hallowed Mons Where It Began

General Sir Arthur Currie, commanding the Canadians who entered Mons, taking the salute in the Grand Parade, Nov. 11th, 1918. Left: Civilians passing Canadians on their march to Mons.

Canadians marching through Mons, Nov. 11th, 1918. With an inspired sense of historic fitness the Canadians swore to be in Mons while the war lasted, and shortly before dawn of the day when the armistice was signed Canadian troops of the First Army captured the town. At 11 o'clock there was a solemn parade of British troops in the town for ever sacred to the memory of the "Old Contemptibles."

THE WAR ILLUSTRATED · GALLERY OF LEADERS

LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR JOHN MONASH, K.C.B.

Commanded the Australian Army Corps in France

PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR GENERAL SIR JOHN MONASH

IF the titular distinction "Soul of Anzac" had not been conferred already upon Sir William Birdwood, it would assuredly belong to the typical citizen soldier who succeeded to the command of the Australian Imperial Forces in France on May 1st, 1918, and held it with so much credit until the first of the following December.

A big man physically and mentally, quick in grasping facts, and no less alert in decision as to the course of action they should determine, a born organiser, a democrat with a firm belief in promotion from the ranks, methodical and at the same time fluent in speech, with dark brown eyes that kindle with kindliness or humour, severe when occasion calls for severity, and a firm believer in Australia and all things Australian, Sir John Monash has left his impress as a fighting commander amid the hills and gullies of Gallipoli and the sanguinary fields of Somme; though it is never of himself he speaks in this connection but always of his men. "I owe my position," he says, "to my magnificent troops."

Brilliant Record as a Civilian

He is not the first British general of Jewish birth. There was General Sir Frederick John Goldsmid, for example, who achieved distinction in the East and wrote a Life of Outram. But he was the first British-born member of his race and the first Australian to rise above the military rank of colonel. And he came to the business of soldiering with a first-rate civilian record behind him. He was President of the Victorian Institute of Engineers, 1913-15, and is a M.Inst.C.E. of London.

Sir John Monash was born on June 27th, 1865, in the "little old town" of Melbourne, the hub of the great southern Commonwealth. Son of Louis Monash, of St James's Park, Melbourne, he had a brilliant career at the Scotch College and the University of his native town. He graduated B.A., took honours in civil engineering, and then, taking up the study of the law, obtained the degree of LL.B. He displayed proficiency also in foreign languages, especially in French and German.

Starting in practice, in 1884, as a civil engineer, he specialised in road, railway, bridge and water supply design, and the firm he established became one of the leading concerns of its kind in Australia, particularly in the introduction of ferro-concrete as building material. Incidentally, he took an active interest in Victorian military affairs. He joined the State Militia as a lieutenant in 1887, became captain in 1892, and a major in 1900. When the Militia and Volunteer units were being merged into the new Citizen Army, his interest quickened with the developments of that force. He rose to lieutenant-colonel's rank in 1905, and was gazetted colonel in 1912. When war broke out he was not one of that band of modern Elizabethans who called themselves adventurers—the first Anzac contingent of 30,000 men who sailed from King George's Sound on Sunday morning, November 1st, 1914, for that bourne whence so many, alas! never returned. He was chosen as chief military censor.

Monash Gully, Gallipoli

But so keen a soldier was not long to be denied. He sailed with the second Anzac contingent—the Dinkums—as brigadier-general of the 4th Infantry Brigade, who later found a camping place near the training ground at Zeitoun. Then came the great Gallipoli adventure, the landing—at what is now known as Anzac Cove—on April 25th, 1915, under fire from the enemy's guns at Gaba Tepe, and the quick bayonet work against the Turk.

"Late in the afternoon and evening," writes the war correspondent of "The Melbourne Age," "the 4th Infantry Brigade, under Colonel Monash, that came swiftly up, filled the gap at the head of Shrapnel Gully, and united the Australians and New Zealanders at a point where the Turks might have easily come and severed our lines, at the head of what was subsequently called Monash Gully, near Pope's Hill and Quinn's Post."

The Turks were under the direction of the German General Liman von Sandars, and the fight for the main ridge was fierce in the extreme. While beach and landing waters were raked with shrapnel, the gullies were swept by fearful machine-gun fire. As night fell the Anzac forces were linked in two sides of a triangle, with the beach as a base; and the 4th Brigade occupied the central portion of the line, where the Turks were massing in greatest number. The night is described as the most horrible ever spent on Anzac.

What followed is, in the main, well-known history, Sir John Monash, who remained on the peninsula until the final day of evacuation, December 19th, being thrice mentioned in despatches, and awarded the C.B.

Messines and Third Battle of Ypres

The veterans returned to Egypt, and occupied the defence zone on the east side of the Suez Canal, where they were in due course joined by reinforcements from "down under." In April and May, 1916, the infantry were moved to France, Brigadier-General Monash accompanying them.

On the decision of Australia to form a third division, he was selected to command it. He came to England in July, and in three months the men were organised, equipped and trained. And with the rank of major-general their commander crossed the Channel with them in November. They went into the line in the Armentières sector, and carried out a fine series of raids. But their real testing-time was in the Battle of Messines, June, 1917, in which they fought side by side with the 4th Division. They captured every objective according to time-table, and held on for thirty-six days to the ground they won.

Later in the year five Australian divisions were, with the New Zealand Division, organised into two corps, and played a leading part in the bitter fighting through the morasses of Passchendaele, Broodseinde, and Zonnebeke, in what came to be known as the third Battle of Ypres. A typical incident of their attack on Polygon Wood was the carrying by a standard-bearer of the blue and starred flag. After four hours' fighting the flag rose above the conquered fortress named, in honour of the Commonwealth troops, Anzac Redoubt. They met and broke the Prussian Guard in full career, and even the enemy paid tribute to their valour. In the New Year Honours List of 1918 it was announced that Major-General Monash and Major-General Talbot Hobbs had been made K.C.B.'s.

On March 21st the great German onslaught was launched on a 50-mile front between the Scarpe and the Oise. At the time the whole of the Anzacs were in reserve. They were promptly thrown in at various parts of the front to stem the avalanche. The Third Division, under Sir John Monash, came in between the Ancre and the Somme, east of Amiens, and took part on April 25th in the recapture of Villers-Bretonneux.

Australian Corps Commander

In the following month General Birdwood relinquished the command of the Australian troops in France, to take over that of the Fifth Army, and the Commonwealth men being reorganised into one army corps, Sir John Monash was appointed to command them, with the rank of lieutenant-general. The succeeding operations culminated on July 4th in the capture of the village of Hamel and woods of Vaire and Hamel.

General Monash then put forward proposals for a bigger offensive, which were adopted, and for sixty days the Australian Army Corps "fought a battle every day and secured a victory every day, hunting the enemy right up the valley of the Somme as far as Péronne, capturing that town and Mont St. Quentin, and driving him back to the Hindenburg line." This famous line was broken through at its most strongly defended point. The victorious Australians pursued their advantage up to the capture of Montbrehain, on October 5th, bringing their captures in 1918 to a total of nearly 30,000 prisoners and several hundred guns, their own casualties being considerably less than that of the unwounded prisoners taken by them.

In January, 1919, Sir John Monash was made a G.C.M.G. and appointed Director-General of Australian Repatriation and Demobilisation. On April 25th, a memorable anniversary, 5,000 Australians marched through London, General Monash at their head, an imposing figure on his grey charger.

In 1891 General Monash married Victoria, youngest daughter of Mr. Moton Moss, of Melbourne. He has one daughter.

With France Triumphant

In conjunction with the British, the French Armies under Generals Mangin, Gouraud, Humbert, and Debeney engaged in great battles from August 8th down to the armistice. The chief events were the struggle for the Lassigny massif, Laon, La Fère, and Forest of Gobain, and the clearing of the Argonne Forest. By November 8th the French had entered Maubeuge, and with their allies hotly pursued the retreating Germans.

AFTER FIVE YEARS.—Greeting the French deliverers on their arrival in Saverne (Zabern), in Lower Alsace, in November, 1918. It was in this town in November, 1913, that the "Zabern incident" occurred, when a young German officer offered a reward to anyone who would "run his sword through an Alsatian blackguard," and himself struck with his sword a lame cobbler of the town.

Lassigny & Soissons Re-won by French Heroism

In recaptured Soissons. The Place de la Republique, photographed a few days after the French, on August 2nd, 1918, retook the town which they had had to relinquish to the enemy on May 29th.

Lassigny Church, as it was when the French retired from it in the great German spring offensive. In Marshal Foch's counter-offensive the French recaptured Lassigny, Aug. 21st, 1918. Inset: Two French women from newly-recovered territory being taken to safety.

To face page 3287

TRIUMPHANT ENTRY OF FRENCH CAVALRY INTO STRASBOURG, CAPITAL OF LIBERATED ALSACE, NOVEMBER, 1918.

Proud Moments in the Progress of the French Army

French artillery, moving forward through a position just captured, using a road improvised round the crater of a mine exploded by the enemy to impede pursuit.

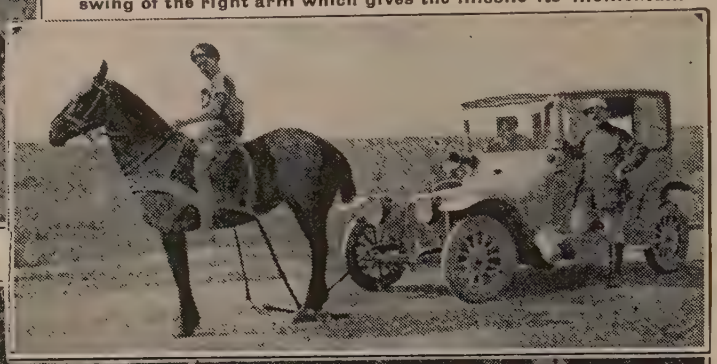
French troops marching into a newly liberated town. Inset above: Raising the regimental colour before marching off to make the ceremonial entry into a recovered town. In France, where the magic of sentiment is recognised, regimental colours still go into battle.

Sir Douglas Haig Salutes the French in Flanders

French Official Photographs

Sir Douglas Haig salutes the war-worn colours of an infantry regiment during an inspection of French troops in Flanders.

Grenade throwers in a training camp; commencing the upward swing of the right arm which gives the missile its momentum.



French officers inspecting gun-pit of a 15·2 in. gun used by the Germans for bombarding Compiegne. It was captured by the French during one of their advances on the Aisne. Inset: British cavalryman tows a stranded motor-car near the western front.

Handiwork of the Invader in Tortured Arras

A corner of Arras during the progress of a heavy bombardment. The photograph shows the extent to which the houses round the capital of the Pas-de-Calais suffered. The enemy, although driven some miles to the east, still had the old town within range.

Interior of a church on the western front. The priest sadly contemplates the results of a deliberate enemy bombardment. Throughout the war the Germans have intentionally made targets of any sacred edifice within range of their lust for destruction. (New Zealand official.)

Italy's King Honours French Commander-in-Chief

Prince of Siam (to the right) examines a French mortar school on the British western front. (British official.) Left: The King of Italy during his visit to the western front bestowing a decoration on General Petain. (French official.)

French West African troops in training in France. A Senegalese battalion in full marching order is practising the putting on of gas-masks on receiving the hurried warning "Alerte aux gaz!" They are lining the shallow roadside ditch as they would a trench.

Under German Gun Fire in Aisne and Champagne

General Humbert and Admiral Thaon di Revel, head of the Italian Navy, on the Aisne front.

Fruit tree which had been cut down by the Huns in an Aisne village. The stump having been "bandaged," was successfully grafted, and young leaves appeared.

"Household removal" during bombardment—a scene in one of the streets of much-stricken Rheims. Though the ancient city suffered terrible devastation many of the inhabitants long refused to leave, and when they at length decided to do so the removal was carried out in unhasting fashion. (French official photograph.)

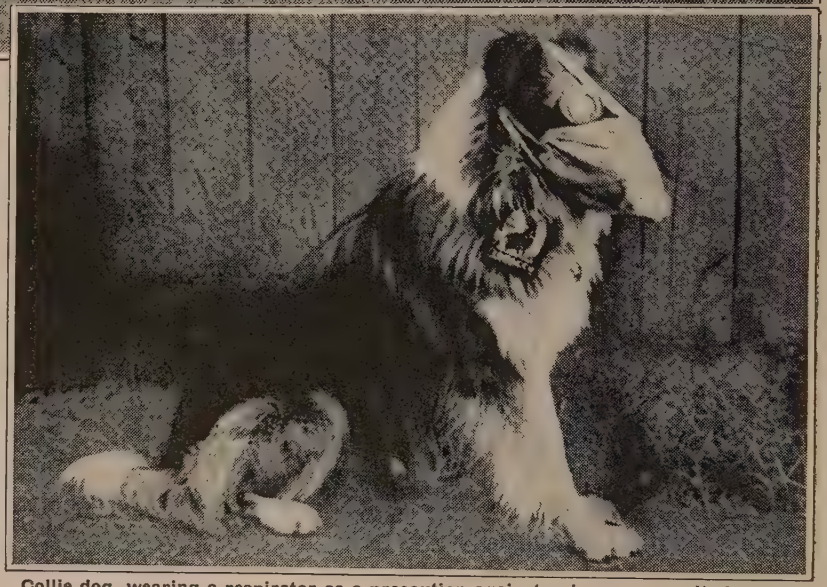
Canine Contingent in the French Trenches

Dogs as messengers, scouts, sentinels, and trench guards. Column of canine recruits of the French lines going up to the front.

FROM the beginning of the war nearly all the belligerents had made use of dogs in various ways, but the extent to which they worked with the French armies is not generally known.

The animals were found not only effective for draught purposes, but were even entrusted with such responsible work as sentinel duty and carrying messages and tobacco to and from the front line. They had even their own special trenches of observation, one of which is seen on this page.

Frequently, in going into the danger zone, the dogs were provided with respirators, as many of these highly-trained creatures were lost through breathing poison gas. There was a special training centre behind the French lines where these sagacious dogs of war learnt to do their bit towards eventual victory.



Collie dog, wearing a respirator as a precaution against poison-gas, on its journey to and from the trenches with tobacco.

Dog with its master on the French front watching the effect of a revolver shot.

Dogs as trench guards ready to give the alarm at the sight of any suspicious movement from the German trenches.

Courage and Courtesy Flourish in France

A convoy of French heavy artillery on the forward march on the Somme front.

Picturesque impression of French architecture and courtesy. An old farmer and his wife offer the freedom of their old-world farmstead to the saluting officer of a cavalry patrol. (French official.) Inset: French patrol stalking a near enemy.

Metz Welcomes General Pétain With Great Joy

Entry of French troops into Metz on November 19th, 1918. The inhabitants were wild with joy, and many of them joined up and marched delightedly along with the soldiers.

French soldiers marching through the Lorraine village of Chateau Salin. Inset above: General Petain, on his famous white charger, in Metz receives a deputation of fair Lorrainers who had rushed to him in defiance of all formality. It was amid scenes of the greatest enthusiasm that the formal occupation of the Lorraine capital was established.

Art's Spirit Shining Amid the Murk of War

French Official Photographs

French officer making plans of a captured system of enemy trenches in the Oise, and (right) French artists making permanent records of the war area on the western front, that posterity might be enabled to judge of German handiwork.

Tribute to their comrades of the 363rd Regiment by French soldier-sculptors. This fine piece of work was carved on a roadside in the Meurthe and Moselle country. Right: M. Lobel-Riche engaged in making studies for his war pictures.

Soldier-sculptor of the French Army chiselling a wayside Sphinx in the Oise country. Right: "The Soldier's Prayer," one of the beautiful works of art by French soldiers included in the war collection at the Leblanc Museum in Paris.

Life's Daily Claims Behind the Clash of War

British and French Official Photographs

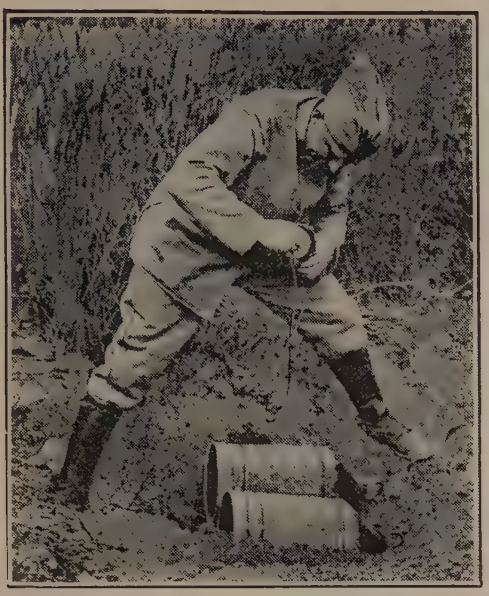
During a wayside rest a French soldier improvises a performance, which is the source of great amusement to his comrades.

French Alpine Chasseurs on the western front interested in settling a point in their game of bowls during a rest period.

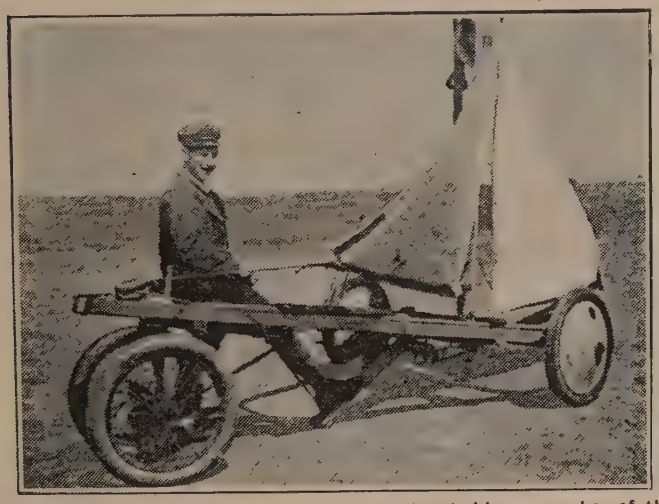
Result of a foraging expedition. The French officer inspects a pair of ducks. Right: Men of a French artillery battery fatten a couple of pigs ready for Christmas.

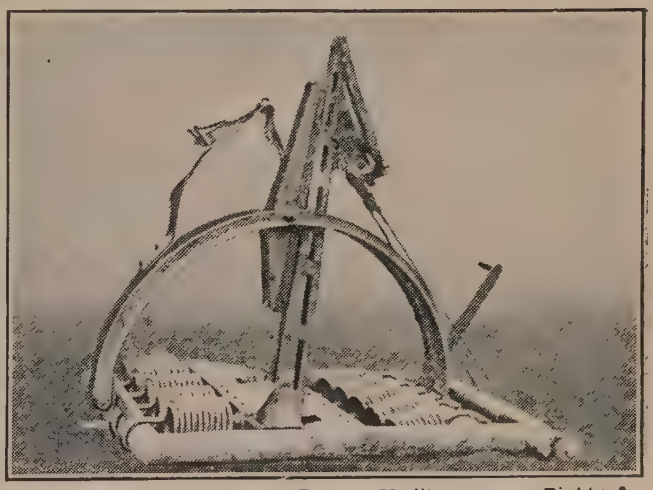
A wedding within sound of the guns on the western front. A French officer who was unable to leave his post was married at the near-by church of Jonchery. He is here seen with his bride and the small wedding-party leaving the church after the ceremony.

French Land-Mines & Trip-Mines for the Teutons



Setting a land-mine trap for Hun night raiders on the French front, and (right) stacking cans of explosives preparatory to forming a mine under woods which were held by the enemy on the western front. (French official photographs.)





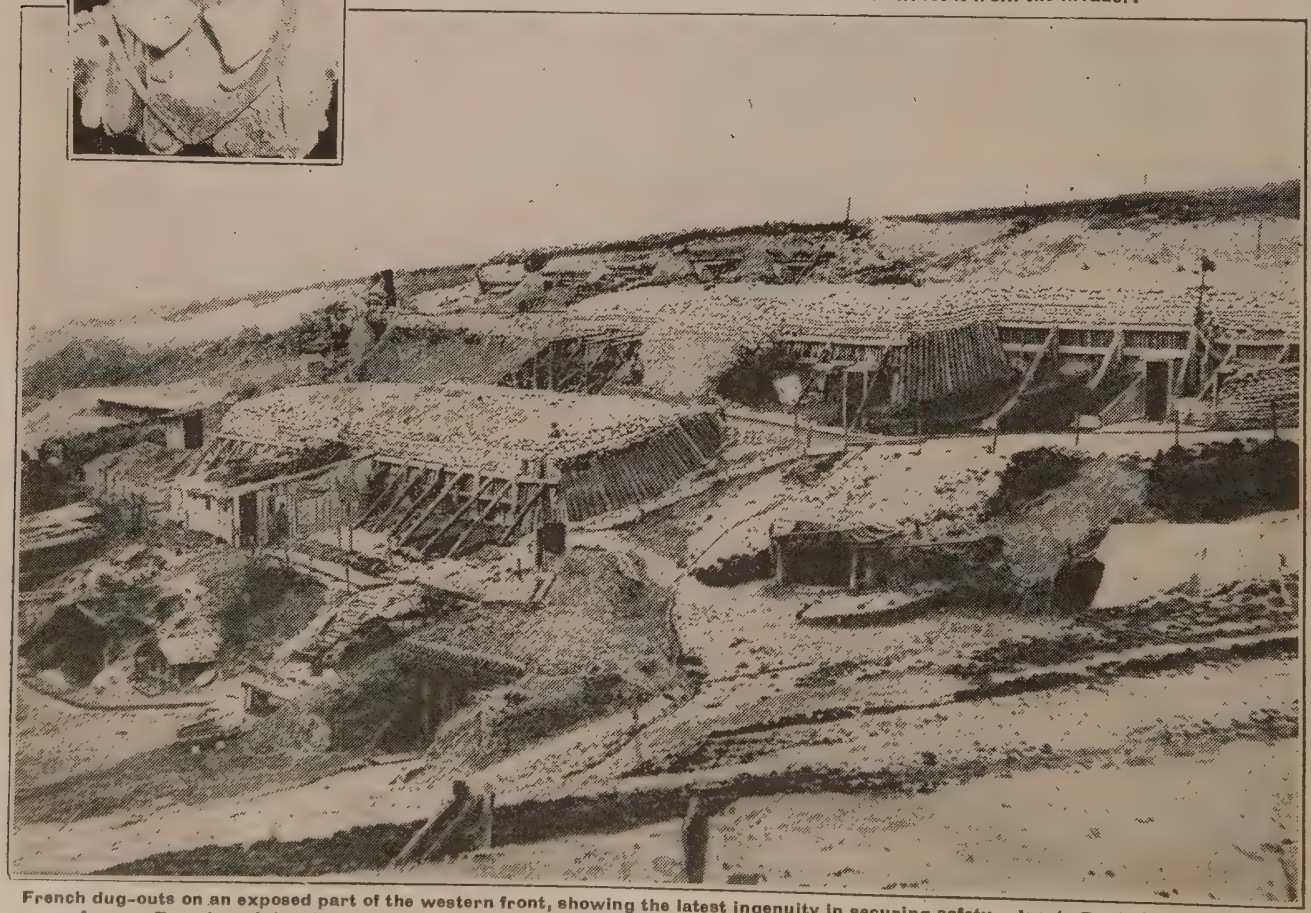
"Ship of the desert" of a new type constructed by a member of the R.N.A.S. on service in the Eastern Mediterranean. Right: A bomb-throwing catapult found in German trenches captured in the Oise. (French official photograph.)

Explosion of a land-mine under a wood held by Germans on the western front. The firing of the mine was followed by an infantry attack on such of the enemy as remained. (French official.) Right: Belt worn by French balloon observers for parachute descents.

Wonderful Dug-outs and Sacred Soil Recaptured

French Official Photographs

Sacred soil retaken by the brave sons of France. View of recaptured ground in the Somme battle-area which, if not inspiring at first sight, is holy ground, consecrated by the best blood of the heroic Frenchmen who bled and died to wrest it from the invader.



French dug-outs on an exposed part of the western front, showing the latest ingenuity in securing safety. Inset: Bust of a Poilu, by the famous French sculptor "Chauvel," exhibited in a Paris salon along with thousands of war pictures by men at the front.

War-Time Field Work of the Daughters of France

Some of the women who are carrying on the work of cultivating the ground in the fair land of France. These three women, dragging a harrow to break up the clods of earth ready for sowing, are doing work which before the war would have been done by a horse.

An idyllic scene, worthy of Millet's brush, and far from suggestive of the war that has brought it about. One French woman is engaged in mowing—her husband having been called to a sterner field—while the other has a brief rest for the nursing of her baby.

Wonderful Impressions of a Charge Dead On

Remarkable action photograph of French soldiers leaving their shelter. In the trench itself the last men are clambering over the top, one of them being assisted to the parapet by a comrade.

Another view taken at great risk to the operator. It represents a company of French soldiers racing towards the enemy's trenches, an officer at their head. To the right a shell is bursting perilously near this gallant handful of Poilus.

Poilus Protected Against Teutonic Poisoners

Poilu waiting to warn his pals. Fog-horns and other means of making a penetrating noise that could be heard along the trenches were utilised for the purpose of giving warning that "gas is coming over."

Having received warning that gas was being discharged against them, the French soldiers masked themselves securely against the deadly fumes and awaited the threatened attack with confidence. Above: One of the well-trained canine messengers employed by the French Army passing, thanks to its mask, through a cloud of gas. (French official photograph.)

Observers Aloft for Gunners in the Valley

Only the invention of reliable aircraft has made the development of guns to such huge proportions and long range a possibility, and not the least remarkable commonplace of modern warfare is the fact that gunners seldom see their target. This striking photograph shows two captive balloons spotting for and about to signal the range to one of the great French howitzers, which will proceed to bombard the German positions on the other side of the hill, as a preliminary to an infantry advance.

THE WAR ILLUSTRATED · GALLERY OF LEADERS

GENERAL GOURAUD

Commanded the Fourth French Army, 1918

PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR

GENERAL GOURAUD

FROM our photograph, those who have not seen him may glean some impression of the subject of this sketch. Those who know him find it difficult to express their admiration in ordinary words. Of more than one French commander it has been said that he was idolised by his men. Of none could the saying be more true than of General Henri Gouraud. Yet the word "idolised" hardly suffices to describe the devotion he evoked. Writes one historian of the Great War: "His grave and splendid presence, the fire in his dark eyes, the lofty resolution in every line and gesture, gave him the air of some great paladin of France who had held the marches with Roland and Oliver."

Roland, the hero of the famous eleventh-century chanson, nephew of Charlemagne, and ideal of a Christian knight, like his more or less mythical counterpart Oliver, may be too shadowy a figure for modern comparison. More fitting, perhaps, for the purpose is the personality of the great Bayard, the knight "sans peur et sans reproche" of the early days of the sixteenth century, a Frenchman who must often have been in the mind of our Allies during the long drawn-out siege of Verdun and the protracted attacks on Rheims.

Unique Experience of Colonial Warfare

Sir Ian Hamilton describes Gouraud as "a happy mixture of daring in danger and of calm in crisis." Like Bayard, Gouraud pitted his wit as well as his skill against the enemy—and beat that enemy every time. A scientific soldier, more than once he held his men back until he was assured that all that foresight could suggest had been provided for. But, like his colleague, General Mangin, once the attack had been launched, he fought for a decision.

When the war started, General Gouraud was in his forty-seventh year. He had a unique experience of French colonial wars in Indo-China, Madagascar, the Sudan, and Morocco. It was in overseas France that, like General Mangin, he prepared himself for the great struggle of 1914–1918. He first claimed general notice by his prowess in the Sudan in 1894, against the Tuaregs. Later he took a prominent part in the pacification of Morocco, soon after General Lyautey had been appointed Resident-General. General Mangin was also in Morocco at this time. In June, 1912, it was Gouraud's good fortune to enter Fez at the head of his troops.

No commander inspired greater confidence in the dark days of the autumn of 1914 than he did. He was given command of a Moroccan division in the Argonne, and forthwith measured his strength against the forces of the German Crown Prince. Amid the firs and chestnuts, oaks and hornbeams of this forested region took place some of the closest and bitterest of fighting, hand to hand, with bomb and bayonet. No quarter was given by either side. The enemy was determined to capture the hill road from Varennes to Vienne. The French were equally determined that he should not pass, and he did not. It was then that General Gouraud won for himself the sobriquet of "the Lion of the Argonne."

Seriously Wounded in Gallipoli

Next came the Dardanelles campaign. Gouraud, the youngest divisional commander in the French Army, was sent out to Gallipoli with the Second French Division. The division was composed of Senegalese, Zouaves, Colonial infantry, and part of the Foreign Legion. Gouraud arrived with this division in the second week of May, 1915, and took over from General d'Amade the command of the whole of the French Expeditionary Force. He greatly distinguished himself in the third Battle of Krithia, in the operations against the fortified network known as the Quadrilateral, east of the head of the Kereves Dere.

Nine days later, when visiting the wounded at a field ambulance at Seddul Bahr, Gouraud was wounded by an exploding shell. "A calamity, for I count it nothing else," was Sir Ian Hamilton's comment. Gouraud's injuries were so serious that steps were immediately taken for his conveyance back to France. On the voyage his right arm had to be amputated. In addition to the injuries to the arm, his right thigh and left leg were broken. As he lay in hospital in France, President Poincaré pinned on his breast the Military Medal. In August, King George conferred upon him the Grand Cross of the Order of St. Michael and St. George.

Frame, physique, and will, all alike of tempered steel, carried Gouraud through those long, agonising days of pain. But by November he was able once again to place himself at the disposal of his country. In that month he was sent on a mission to Rome, where King Victor Emmanuel III. conferred upon him the Order of St. Maurice and St. Lazarus. In December he was selected for the command of an army in the Champagne, where he withstood some of the more desperate efforts of the Germans between Auberive on the Suippes and Ville-sur-Taube.

The following December found him temporary Resident-General of Morocco, which post he held during General Lyautey's term of office as War Minister. By the summer of 1917 he was again in France. On June 9th General Anthoine handed over to him the command of the Fourth Army, and by the last day of July, completing the work begun by General Anthoine in April, he had inflicted another severe defeat on the forces of the German Crown Prince in the vicinity of Moronvillers, east of Rheims. In this area, in the closing year of the war, when they had United States troops under General Liggett co-operating with them against the army under General Einem, the men of the Fourth Army covered themselves with glory.

With the Fourth French Army at Rheims

It was to Gouraud that Marshal Foch confided the tremendous task of meeting the first shock of that offensive which the enemy were confident would clear the road to Paris. The German attack began on July 15th, 1918, on a fifty-mile front east and west of Rheims. Between Prunay and Massiges, to the east, where the Fourth Army was, they were held, as Gouraud, in his address to his men on the 7th, said they would be. In an order issued on the second day of the battle, he said:

> You have broken the efforts of fifteen German divisions, supported by ten others. According to their orders, they should have reached the Marne by the evening of the 15th, but you stopped them dead in the position from which we are determined to give battle. You have the right to be proud, infantry and machine-gunners of the advanced posts, and you aviators who flew over the enemy, battalions and batteries which have crushed him, and the Staff which prepared with such care the field of battle. It is a hard blow for the enemy, and a great day for France. I know you will always do the same, every time that the enemy dares to attack you.

The Kaiser, confident of the success of his troops, had come upon the scene—at a safe distance—to witness the success of this supreme effort, for which an issue favourable to him had been so confidently promised. But by July 25th, Gouraud, advancing some thousand yards on a front of thirteen and a half miles beyond the line of St. Hilaire-le-Grand-Souain-Mesnil, had regained the whole of the Hand of Massiges and reoccupied the positions which had been held before the attack began on the 15th. This success deprived the attack on the west of Rheims of nearly all its vitality.

General Gouraud's methods won general admiration. In untechnical language, they may be described as the tactics of counter-attack. As such, they were masterly. In September the Fourth Army went forward, and their progress was only stopped, between Mézières and Sedan, by the armistice of November 11th.

When the formal entry of Strasbourg by that army on November 25th had been completed, General Gouraud walked across to Marshal Pétain, saluted, and was embraced by him and by General Fayolle, and shook hands with Generals de Castelnau, and Maistre and Humbert, and others standing near. It was then there arose the cheer, "Vive Gouraud!"

Eye-witnesses of the events of that memorable day united in expressing their sense of the camaraderie between officers and men of all ranks. There was certainly no doubt about this where Gouraud and his men were concerned. The Army Order that had so recently spoken of the soldiers' love for him "because he loves them" was proved beyond cavil at every stage of the war in which he was engaged. In December, 1918, he was decorated with the Grand Cross of the Legion of Honour.

The Restoration of Belgium

King Albert's army bore an honoured part in the great allied offensive which opened on October 14th, 1918, causing the Germans to abandon Ostend, Zeebrugge, Bruges, and other Belgian towns. Amid scenes of enthusiasm the King and Queen re-entered Brussels, November 22nd, after an absence of over four years. Liège was formally entered on November 30th

King Albert, with Queen Elizabeth, Prince Albert of England, and Generals Plumer and Birdwood, witnessing the great march past of American and Allied troops on the occasion of the King's State entry into Brussels on November 22nd, 1918.

With Belgium's Armies Advancing to Bruges

Belgian ammunition column proceeding over newly recovered ground in the direction of Roulers during the great advance. Roulers was recaptured on October 16th, 1918.

The Rue de la Station, Dixmude, as it was before the Huns occupied the town, and (right) the same street when Dixmude was retaken from them on Sept. 29th, 1918. These photographs strikingly exemplify the destruction for which Germany had to be held accountable.

Working-party of Belgian soldiers engaged in laying down a wooden railway over newly reconquered ground. The deep ruts in the foreground indicate the terrible nature of the terrain over which the wonderful advance that began at the end of September, 1918, had to be made. It was only by such prompt making anew of the ways for transport that the advance could be maintained.

The Flanders Battlefields

By HAMILTON FYFE

FLANDERS has always meant to me, ever since I was quite a small boy reading of Marlborough's battles, and how Henry the Eighth called Anne of Cleves a "Flanders mare," and how Ben Jonson "trailed a pike in the Low Countries"—Flanders has since then always meant to me a flat landscape cut by sluggish streams and canals, with a grey sky overhead, heavily-built horses on the roads, tidy cottages, windmills, trim little towns, each with its manifold memories and traditions of war.

The first time I drove over the canal bridge outside the old French city of St. Omer and found myself in Flanders I recognised its familiar features at once.

Nowhere have I experienced so sudden a change from one country to another as that which one notices directly one has crossed that canal bridge near St. Omer. For a long way on the road to Ypres one remains in France. This is French Flanders. The frontier which divides France from Belgium is not passed until Poperinghe is near at hand. But, racially and historically, there is one country on the St. Omer side of the canal and another country across it. Landscape, language, inhabitants' looks and characters, style of building, drinking habits (schnapps in place of wine), methods of cultivation—everything is changed.

An Alpine "Pimple"

Frontiers are mostly artificial, but here is one established by Nature in the character of the soil. The two races dwell together in harmony, but they are races apart. Flanders has kept its personality undimmed.

Even the look of the country has been little altered. I suppose the town of Cassel, for example, looked when Queen Anne was alive, and when Napoleon was trying to subdue Europe, and when Benjamin Disraeli stayed there, not much before the middle of last century, just about what it looks to-day. Cassel is an oddity. It is on the top of a hill which stands up like a big pimple on the plain. It is about as high as Hampstead or Highgate, but upon the natives of flat Flanders it produces the impression of an Alp. An officer friend of mine, rather a famous Alpine climber, who was up there for some time during the chilly fall of 1917, said one day to the old lady in whose house he was billeted, "How cold it is up here, madame," to which she replied gravely, "Mais, monsieur, dans les montagnes il fait toujours froid" (In the mountains it is always cold!). He was tactful enough not to smile.

In Cassel the British war correspondents fixed their headquarters during the deplorable autumn campaign over the muddy fields of Flanders in 1917. There has been no fighting more difficult or more hideously uncomfortable, or, as it turned out, more barren of advantage, during the whole of the war. After that the town sank back into its usual sleepy state, except for the presence of a corps staff there, until the Germans began to push hard in Flanders in April and May, 1918. There is a vastly pleasant little hostel in Cassel which served as a barometer for the conditions of fighting in that region. If you stopped there to dine and found only a few tables occupied, you knew that the tide of invasion was "out." When the dining-room was crowded and every room taken, and the square outside filled with military motor-cars, and the hotel yard noisy at 7 a.m. with officers' chargers being groomed, then the tide was coming in.

"The Hill Must Be Held"

Rapidly it came in during the latter days of April. The people of Cassel began to go about with puckered foreheads and anxious eyes. The hotel belongs to a Frenchman who was away fighting as a cavalry officer with the French Army. Madame and her young daughters kept it going. Pretty, charming women, musical, well-educated, well-read, they attended late and early to the business of the house, provided capital meals, had a smile for everybody, and gave musical evenings after locking-up time, which to art-starved soldiers and correspondents were a godsend indeed. Now they were advised to make their escape in good time, not to wait till the last moment.

They laughed and said they had no fear—which was true—and that they felt sure Cassel would not be taken. General Foch had been up there; he had said that the hill must be held. That was enough for them.

There was certainly every intention to hold Cassel, for in the enemy's hands it would have awkwardly embarrassed the Allies. From the top of what in peace time was a casino, where the dwellers in the plain used to enjoy "mountain air" and "little horses," or "Boule," you could on a clear day make out the North Sea. The hill commanded the whole country for at least twenty miles each way. I used to go up there at night to see how active the guns were and what were the prospects of a German attack in the early morning. There came a time when the continuous flashes formed more than a semicircle of fire round Cassel.

This was the time when by day the enemy bombarded the Mont des Cats. The Cats were a tribe who were active against the Romans. I think they are mentioned by Cæsar in his "Commentaries." Upon the hill which bears their name stood a vast Trappist monastery, where hundreds of religious men lived and tilled the soil in piety and perpetual silence.

Bombardment on Kemmel

When the Germans drove us northward over the ridge which runs from Neuve Eglise to Bailleul they began shelling the Mont, and the monks stood not upon the order of their going. One sunny morning I met the poor old Father Superior. He showed me the chapel badly damaged and his own room ruined by a shell. "I am the only one left," he said. "What do you think, monsieur? Ought I to go, too?" I said he had better leave at once, and I am sure he blessed me for the advice.

That same day a shell took the top off the old stone windmill on the summit of the Mont des Cats. Each of the hills—Black Hill, Red Hill, Sharp Hill—which continue the range as far as Kemmel, had a windmill upon it. From Kemmel the ground dropped down to a level plain again. All these five hills served as defences for Cassel. So long as they resisted, the landlady and her daughters were confident and gay.

Then one day Kemmel fell. That was a staggering blow. I had been up there a few days before. The French had just taken it over. They were a fine lot, and they seemed to me to have strong positions. The whole place was like a rabbit warren, tunnelled and hollowed into caves, where the garrison could be secure from the enemy's guns. There was a heavy half-hour's bombardment while I was up there, but no one was killed or even hurt. We all "went to ground." From a spacious dug-out on the side of a hill I watched shells exploding in a ploughed field below, and chatted with the officers of a Lancashire battalion, who paid no more attention to the shelling than if it had been a shower of rain. The French colonel, a distinguished soldier of the very finest type—intellectual, forceful, urbane—gave me the impression of having the situation well in hand. Yet in a few days Kemmel was German, the French colonel a prisoner, the Lancashire Fusiliers nearly all gone.

The Turning Point

Now madame and mesdemoiselles of the inn at Cassel began at last to pack up. But before they had locked their trunks the situation changed. The Germans took Kemmel on a Thursday. On the following Monday they tried to follow up their success by taking the other hills. This time they were badly beaten. All day they stormed our positions, but every wave of them was broken up and hurled back. At some points the enemy's concentrations of troops were smashed before their attacks could be started. This happened on the high bank of the Kemmel Beek. ("Beek" is Flemish for brook; compare the Scottish "beck.") Here there were some tin huts left by us. The German plan was to collect their storm-troops in these huts, then rush them down to the brook and up the other side.

But on the other side—a high bank also—there were men of the Border Regiment, belonging to the 25th Division. These kept up such a hot and well-directed fire from their Lewis and other machine-guns that the Germans never reached the brook.

That day—Monday, April 29th—was the turning-point of the German offensive in Flanders. They gained no more ground after this. It was also the saving of Cassel. Madame and the young ladies were not advised to leave any more. They unpacked their trunks, and the hotel prospered more greatly than ever. Now that the tide has rolled right back, now that Kemmel is in allied possession once more, Cassel has recovered its old quietness and confidence. I recollect an old woman, who cut hair and shaved, asking me tremulously one day in April if it was true that the Germans would soon be there. I did not feel at all sure about it, but I boldly laughed at her fears. I am glad of that memory. The old lady will always think of me gratefully as "l'anglais qui savait bien"—the Englishman who knew.

Belgium's Hero King Re-Enters Bruges Re-Won

Triumphal re-entry of the King and Queen of the Belgians into Bruges. On October 18th, 1918, Bruges was evacuated by the Germans, and a few hours later the Allies were in the town. The Huns, of course, had stolen everything in the way of metal and wood, but the town itself was little injured, and the famous belfry and the facade of the old Hotel de Ville were not damaged.

King Albert and Queen Elizabeth in the great square of Bruges. On October 25th, 1918, the King and Queen of the Belgians flew to Bruges in two aeroplanes. Accompanied by their eldest son and by Admiral Sir Roger Keyes and Brigadier-General the Earl of Athlone, they made their formal re-entry into the town amid scenes of loyal enthusiasm and national rejoicing quite indescribable.

At Last! Rapturous Greeting to the Conquering Heroes

British cavalry entering Spa after the evacuation of the town by the enemy following the signing of the armistice. Spa, 18 miles south-east of Liege, was selected as the place where the International Armistice Commission sat to settle the details of the fulfilment of the armistice terms.

Heroic Liege reoccupied. Stirring scene when King Albert and Queen Elizabeth made their formal entry into Liege on November 30th, 1918. It was the first of their dauntless cities to bear the brunt of the German attack.

Great Allied Peace Pageant in Belgium's Capital

In brilliant sunshine, on November 22nd, 1918, after his State entry into Brussels, the American and allied troops marched past King Albert. The Americans (seen above) had the place of honour. The streets were crowded with people, and the scenes were of indescribable enthusiasm.

Following the American troops, whose guns are said to have been the first American guns to enter Belgium, came the French. Among the French commanders were General Boissonoy, of the French Sixth Army, and General Jacone, of the French Second Corps.

The British troops followed the French. They were led by Highlanders with their pipes; a distinguished brigadier-general was at their head, and they included English, Scottish, and Newfoundlanders. Last came the Belgian detachment, greeted by the throng with one continuous outburst of joy.

Dauntless Men of a Little Nation's Fight for Freedom

Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines, whom the Germans imprisoned for protesting against Hun savagery in Belgium.

Adolphe Max, Burgomaster of Brussels, who returned to his country after the armistice, having been prisoner fifty months in Germany.

Towards the close of his visit to the storied battlefields of France and Flanders in December, 1918, King George inspected the great Mole at Zeebrugge with King Albert, Vice-Admiral Sir Roger Keyes, and naval officers who took part in bottling up the harbour.

Mons After Four Years!

By HAMILTON FYFE

BACK to Mons! What memories the name calls up! Sad memories and glorious memories, too. How hopeful we were when we went up to Mons in August, 1914, and what a bitter disappointment was in store for us! It was the Battle of Mons which made us begin to understand what a stiff and stubborn struggle we were to have.

No finer force than the small but well-trained Regular British Army of 1914 ever took the field in any British campaign. I remember falling in with a battalion of the Scottish Rifles near Le Cateau on its way to the front. Splendid men; officers keen and capable. All were vigorous and confident. The same was true of all our troops. A few days later, broken and pitifully reduced in number, they were retreating, fighting gallant rearguard actions, saving themselves and the rest of our earliest divisions from catastrophe only by their dogged determination to hold on to every position as long as they could.

The story of the retreat after Mons has not been fully told yet. Maybe it never will be told. No one single man knows the details of more than a little piece of it. To collect all the details is impossible, since by far the greater number of those who retreated sleep in "some corner of a foreign field that is for ever England." I knew a good deal about it at the time from running across so many of the stragglers. For weeks afterwards they were drifting into Amiens, and they all had surprising adventures to relate.

Adventurous Stragglers

Really the adaptability of the human animal is marvellous when we consider how sheltered and artificial is the life of civilised people. Here were men who had never been out of the range of city streets; never eaten any food that had not been bought in shops; always had roofs to cover them and beds to sleep in. Suddenly they were flung upon their own resources in a foreign land where they could not speak a word of the language; a land swarming with enemies whom to encounter meant death or at best capture; a land of whose geography they were ignorant, in which they scarcely knew even the names of any places. If by chance they did know one or two names they pronounced them in a manner unintelligible to the natives.

Yet, somehow, they kept themselves alive and out of harm's way. Somehow they managed to find friends among the French or the Belgian populations and to converse with them. Somehow they made their way back to the British lines.

And, most strange of all, they took all their adventures as a matter of course. They spoke of all they had been through in a plain, straightforward, unemotional way. They did not regard themselves as heroes of exciting hairbreadth escapes, of moving accidents by flood and field. Not a bit of it.

I recollect two of them telling me of a day when they were made desperate by hunger. They were crouching in a field by the side of a road along which Germans were passing. As a motor-car filled with Staff officers rushed by, one of the men in hiding loosed off his rifle from sheer dare-devilry. The car did not stop, but they felt after that that their hiding-place was insecure. German troopers might be sent back to clear out snipers, so they cautiously made their way into a little wood. Here they stayed until one of them announced that he could not bear his emptiness any longer, and that he was going into the village down the road to get something to eat.

"Why, good Lord, it's full of Germans!" the other said.

"I don't care if it's full of devils!" the hungry man replied. "So-long, old sport! If I don't come back you'll know they've got me! But I'll give the blighters a run for their money!"

Unquestioned Audacity

He went off down the road, entered the village, found a baker's shop, and went in. He saw German soldiers, but he said they paid no attention to him, "And you can lay your life I didn't trouble them. Bread was what I was after, and I got two loaves of it, hot out of the oven. Then I asked if the baker had got any beer. He grinned and brought a bottle out. I paid him, put the stuff under my arms, and went back to my pal. He wasn't sorry to see the grub, I can tell you, not 'arf he wasn't."

It sounds unlikely, but you must remember that in war conditions men often pass unnoticed who in ordinary circumstances would be challenged at once. In those days I heard of two German cyclist scouts who got far ahead of their unit and rode through several French villages just as if they were touring in holiday-time. When they discovered that they were alone in enemy territory they rode back. They were looked at doubtfully, but no one knew exactly what they were, and they rejoined their comrades unharmed.

Later, during the summer of 1918, there was another case of the same kind in Picardy. Two German airmen were compelled to land and to leave their machines. They went about for two days without arousing suspicion. They were supposed, I believe, to be Portuguese officers, whose grey uniforms are not unlike the German field-grey. They took their meals in estaminets, and talked passable French. Eventually a Canadian sergeant spotted them, and they were arrested as prisoners of war. But for two days they went about openly, and no one asked them who they were.

Men Who Never Complained

Another feature of the soldiers' stories of their wanderings after the Battle of Mons was the absence of any complaining. They might have grumbled, poor fellows, about the vastly superior numbers of the enemy, about having had nothing in the nature of prepared positions to fall back upon, about being detrained right on the battlefield and finding themselves in the thick of the fighting at once. One young officer I knew detrained with his platoon at noon on the Monday, the second day of the battle, and by three o'clock he was a prisoner. He had only been in France three days. Many were equally unfortunate.

But never a grumble did the soldiers indulge in. They seemed to consider the faulty information and the miscalculations of the allied commanders as all a matter of course, too. Or perhaps they did not think about them. They all agreed that they had had "a hell of a time," but they thought they had given the Germans "something to think about," and they were quite ready to take them on again. They were not like the little Frenchman to whom I gave a lift in my car during the retreat after Charleroi. He sat with his head in his hands, saying at intervals, "Ah, monsieur, la guerre, comme c'est triste," or "Que c'est triste, la guerre."

Wonderful men those British soldiers of 1914. They set the standard for the men who came after them, the men of '15, and '16, and '17, and '18; and the standard has been magnificently maintained.

Mons is a dry, uninspiring little town. I was there first in the year of the Belgian general strike. I went with Percival Phillips to attend a huge demonstration of miners who had stopped work. In this part of Belgium the people are Walloons, not Flemings. They speak French, not Flemish, and are more French in character than their more Teutonic fellow-countrymen in the North and East of Belgium. Some of the speeches at that miners' demonstration were in a most impassioned vein. Little thought had Phillips or I that spring Sunday of a day when Mons would be world-famous as the scene of the opening battle in the world-war. Students of the wars of the Low Countries knew Mons as a frequent centre of fighting, but to the rest it was merely a name, or probably not even that.

The Great Break-Through

And now it will stand for ever in British history as a symbol of the steadfastness of the old Regular Army of the British Isles. Not only because it gave its name to the first battle of the war, but also because the approach to Mons in the fifth year of the war was made possible by the British troops who broke through the fortified positions which we call the Hindenburg—while the Germans call them the Siegfried—line, and so spoiled the plan which the German High Command cherished up to that moment of resisting on this line during the winter.

Only once has this famous line been breached, between Cambrai and St. Quentin, in the direction of Bohain, on October 9th, 1918, and the breach was made by British troops.

The war correspondents, it seems to me, did not make enough of this. Few people realised what it meant. Our official despatches did not tell us what troops broke through these positions which the Germans certainly believed to be impregnable. In the flood of news which poured through the newspapers during the summer the grandeur of this feat of gallantry by British troops was overlooked. But history will put things in their right perspective. Many of the "great battles" will be dismissed as small affairs. The really big achievements will stand out as they should. Among them will assuredly be the break-through on October 9th, 1918 which caused the immediate fall of Cambrai and opened up the road to Mons.

Broken and Disgraced the Boche Evacuates Belgium

German troops marching out of Liege. Allied flags decked the streets, among them the Union Jack and the Stars and Stripes. The King and Queen of the Belgians, with General Leman, re-entered the town on November 30th, 1918, acclaimed by the enthusiastic populace.

Striking camera-picture of the German evacuation of the Belgian capital. In Brussels, as in Liege, the people proudly displayed the allied flags. The city, occupied by the Huns on August 20th, 1914, was formally re-entered by King Albert on November 22nd, 1918.

In My Native Land Set Free

By EMILE CAMMAERTS

The Great Belgian Poet

IT may seem absurd, but we only truly appreciate what we have missed for a long time. It is not necessary to be a globe-trotter to be a patriot, but it may be sometimes useful to stay away from home to realise how dependent one is on familiar sights and sounds. I do not suppose that Englishmen love their country more than Frenchmen or Belgians do; but, being great travellers, they are certainly given more opportunity to become conscious of it. So that the old and very human paradox remains true—that the best way of finding out something is to run away from it.

I experienced this feeling each time I used to go back to Belgium to spend there my holidays after a few months' absence. The land and towns appeared to me fairer than I left them, clothed with a new light, bathed in the shadows of old memories. My recent return, however, was different. Belgium had been cut off from the world, trampled upon by the oppressor, threatened for four long years with destruction. More than once her fate had trembled in the balance, and it needed a stubborn and blind faith—the only faith worth having—to believe, all through this time, that the hour of complete liberation and full reparation would strike at last. So that it was not the "dear old country" this time.

A Wonderful Coincidence

It was during the last wonderful November days, in the soft pure light of winter, a floating mirage, a dream come true. After crossing for many miles the zone of destruction along the Yser, the heap of wreckage which once was Dixmude, the solitude which once was Ypres, the huge morass covered with yellow reeds, once the brightest meadows in Flanders, Bruges appeared like an oasis beyond the desert. Beflagged Bruges, with bells pealing and the old belfry chimes playing just the same tune, and her towers and her canals where swans' feathers still float under the old bridges.

There is something providential in the fact that the liberation came when it came, before the destruction wrought by the offensive from Ghent to Tournai could spread over the rest of the country. Another month of war, perhaps another fortnight, might have involved Antwerp, Brussels, Namur, thrown several million of refugees on the high road, and struck at the very heart of the country.

That Bruges should be the first large town in which King Albert made his entry is also a wonderful coincidence. For Bruges is the very gate of peace, the narrow gate sanctified by centuries of tradition and worship. In spite of the large guns and motor-vans stationed in the square, the old atmosphere was preserved, and the helmeted soldiers tramping in the moonlight did not seem out of place.

Barring one or two accidents, the town is untouched. The British airmen ought to be congratulated on their work. While the port and the approaches of the Zeebrugge Canal are badly damaged by their periodical bombardments, only a few bombs were dropped on the town.

Like cliffs rising from the sea, with their towers pointing to heaven, Belgium's ancient towns rose before us. After Bruges, Ghent with St. Nicolas, St. Baron and the gilded belfry. After Ghent, Antwerp and her great cathedral. Truly we never saw such sights before. We used only to compare, to criticise, to look at the mistakes made by over-zealous restorers, at the ugly creations of modern architects. We never realised that so many treasures were left, that so much harmony could grow out of glaring contrasts. It was not merely a mirage, a dream, it was a resurrection. The grey veil was lifted, the shroud unfolded, and Belgium rose again more beautiful than ever. It was as if the sound of Easter bells filled the wintry sky.

Life is Greater than Art

I am told that the first Belgian soldier who entered the Grand' Place in Brussels exclaimed: "It's all right! The Town Hall is still there, as crooked as ever!" He used the French words, "de travers." Those who know the Hôtel de Ville will remember that the tower does not sit in the middle of the building, but grows a little to the right, thus breaking the hall's perfect symmetry. This apparent irregularity has been much commented upon; some have praised it, others have deplored it. But the man did not care; he was only too pleased to find the place just as he left it four years ago. Artistic perfection is not to be considered in such circumstances. What a disappointment it would have been to find things altered, even for the better! Those very mistakes and irregularities make towns and people more human, more living. They give a sense of reality more delightful than any fancy. The rough French was good to hear again, mixed with Flemish expressions.

Belgium is far from being perfect. It is not the country of pure style and lofty ideals. It does not merely stir our admiration. It is somewhat shy and awkward, very genuine, sincere, and strong. It was a relief to find it, as the tower on Brussels Town Hall, still a little "de travers." I thought, a few years ago, that the great square in Brussels looked better before the time of its restoration, but I no longer regret the past. When King Albert appeared on the balcony over the Grand' Place flooded with light, the old corporation banners flying from every house, while the crowd shouted to greet him from the square, from every window, even from every roof, who could find in his heart room for any regret? Life is greater than art, souls are more precious than stones.

Heroism of the People

The people also have not changed. The clock of history has stopped for them. Their ideas, their aspirations, their feelings are out of date. They go back to those terrible days of August, 1914, when Belgium became a prison. They have heard very little of what happened outside. They still sing "Tipperary," and the flags they have hoisted are the flags of Liège. All their energy has centred on two questions: To keep alive and to remain loyal. Most arduous and anxious questions when the only way out of material difficulties pointed to Berlin. Their whole activity, their whole energy, has been absorbed in deepening the gulf between the invaders and themselves, and in alleviating as far as possible the growing misery of the masses. They have grown older, very much older, with constant worry, under the weight of threats and persecutions. Their hair has turned grey and white, but they have kept their heads erect. There is not one of them, directly or indirectly, who has not taken his or her share in the struggle. Many have been fined; many more have gone to prison or to Germany; hundreds have given their life for the common cause. But what we never realised outside is the light-hearted way in which the most peaceful, the most quiet of them played their part.

When we heard that the Germans had condemned a hundred thousand people to various penalties in one year, we thought that almost all of those who infringed regulations had been detected. We did not know—as we do now—that the German police was practically powerless in the face of an almost universal will to break the law. Through these last years people never ceased reading and circulating forbidden papers, sheltering prisoners of war, helping recruits to cross the frontier, and hiding requisitioned articles. The number of those who were detected is only a small portion of those who defied German decrees. It was their way of waging war; for the wool, the copper, the leather which escaped the search-parties could not be used to equip the enemy army, or to provide it with munitions.

A Symbolic Scene

This attitude of mind can only be fully appreciated by those who have relations and friends in Belgium; for it is not only the number of law-breakers which is amazing, it is the transformation brought about in their temper. They will meet people who, in ordinary circumstances, would never have dreamt of exposing themselves to the slightest inconvenience, or of sacrificing the least of their everyday comforts, who gaily risked deportation, imprisonment, or even worse for the common cause.

The Belgians, it is true, are just the same as four years ago; but they have given us the opportunity of improving our knowledge of them. Under the stress of circumstances their apparent pettiness and selfishness have gone, and their true character stands revealed. They do not strike heroic attitudes, they do not utter heroic words, but in their simple, open-hearted way they have done as much for the triumph of justice as the soldiers in the trenches.

I shall never forget the scene in the Town Hall when Burgomaster Max, freshly arrived from Germany, welcomed King Albert to Brussels, after his long absence, and when the King, in a trembling voice, congratulated the first citizen of his capital on the great example of patriotism he had given to the people. It was a short and impressive scene. All the more impressive because it had a symbolic meaning. All over the country, at the same moment, the Belgian soldiers were greeted by their relations and friends. In every Belgian home, as in the Brussels Town Hall, every soldier and every civilian had some story to tell. In spite of the long years of separation, they realised that they had suffered, fought, and conquered—together.

Rejoicings in Tournai Released from Tyranny

Triumphant entry of the British into Tournai. After occupying the picturesque Flemish town on the Scheldt for four years the Germans evacuated it on the night of November 8th, 1918, before the advancing British. Contrary to their practice the Huns refrained from wanton destruction, even leaving the old Pont des Trous unhurt when destroying the modern bridges that gave access to the town.

General Birdwood inspecting the guard of honour outside Tournai Cathedral prior to the Thanksgiving Service on November 10th, 1918. The magnificent Romanesque and Gothic cathedral, which contains the tomb of Childeric, the Merovingian King of France, was uninjured by the war, its fine stained glass being left unbroken, and even the splendidly sonorous great bell being spared by the Huns.

Working While Waiting for the Day of Deliverance

Belgian Official Photographs

Women making shell-fuses in a Belgian munition works. With British and French assistance munition works were established in the portion of Belgium that remained unoccupied by the Germans, and here men and women worked with unremitting energy.

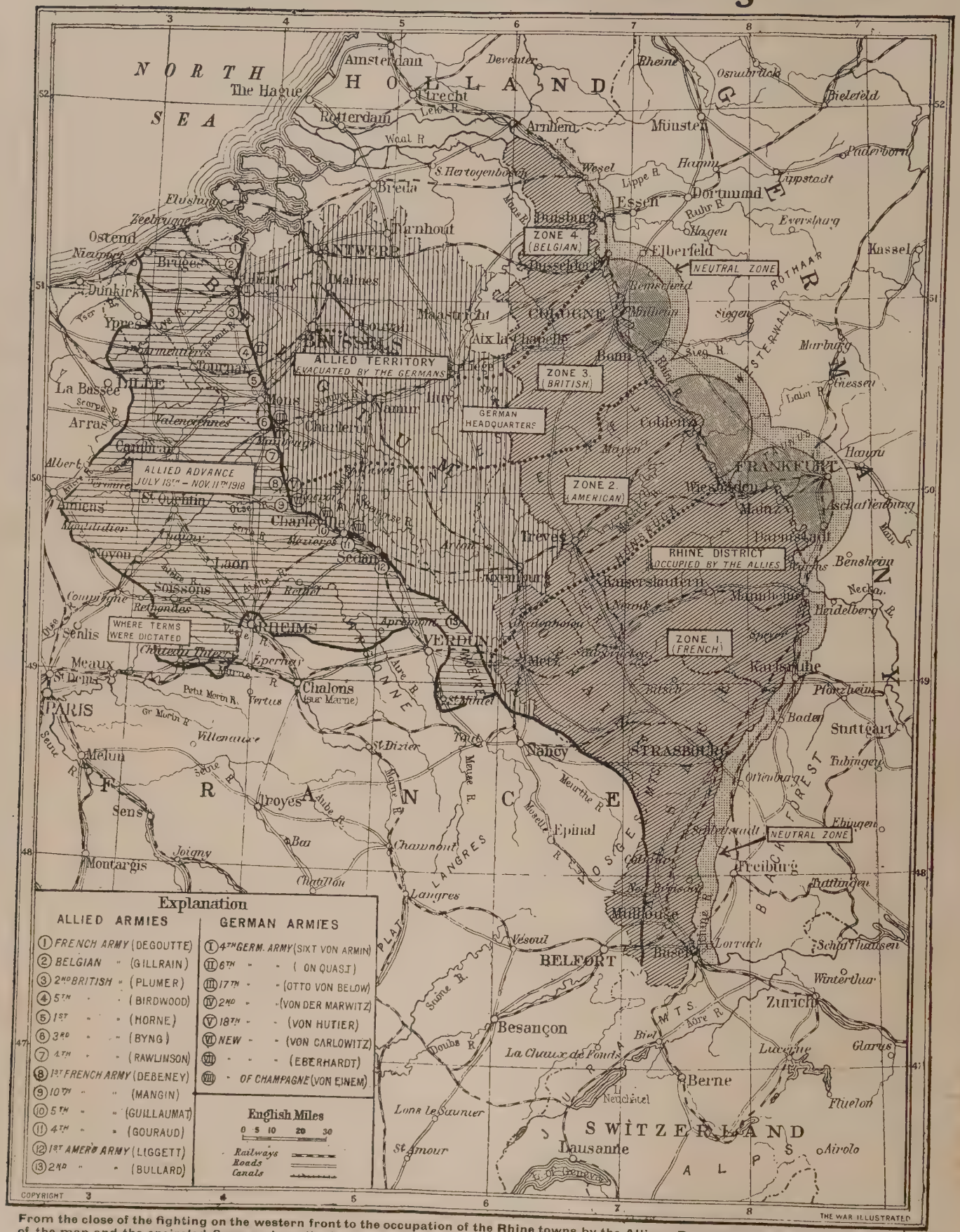
Putting the finishing touches. Painting the filled shells in a Belgian munition works. Since the reconstruction of the Belgian Army was completed, the Belgian artillery maintained constant activity on their sector of the front, winning high praise for their work.

The Great March to the Rhine

By the terms of the armistice the Allies occupied the principal bridgeheads of the Rhine: Cologne, Bonn, Mainz, and Coblenz. The Germans had to evacuate the Rhineland territory within thirty-one days, and after that the various allied armies took up their stations—the British at Cologne and Bonn, the French at Mainz, and the Americans at Coblenz. Interesting pictures of the Armies of Occupation appear in this section.

Mobile French searchlight for guarding the "occupied" Rhine at night, stationed on the left bank, a short distance below St. Goar. On opposite bank is the picturesque village of Wellmich, and above it on the rocky Thurnberg the 14th-century stronghold, "The Mouse."

From Battle-Front to Rhine Bridge-Heads



From the close of the fighting on the western front to the occupation of the Rhine towns by the Allies. By means of the key in the left corner of the map and the encircled figures along the battle-line can be seen the approximate positions of the belligerents when the armistice took effect, Nov. 11th, 1918. Along the Rhine are marked the zones occupied, and the bridge-heads and neutral zones on the east bank.

GRENADIER GUARDS MARCHING UP TO THE HOHENZOLLERN BRIDGE DURING THE BRITISH OCCUPATION OF COLOGNE.

To face page 332.

British Advance to Keep Watch on the Rhine

British cavalry crossing the German frontier. On Sunday, December 1st, 1918, advanced troops of the British Second Army, under the command of General Sir Herbert Plumer, crossed the German frontier between Beho and Eupen, and advanced towards the Rhine.

British Lancers riding through Malmedy, the first German town to be entered by the British Army of Occupation. No signs of hostility greeted the British troops, the populace responding to the appeal of the Burgomaster to maintain the greatest calm and order.

The Allied March to the Rhine

How the Germans Received the Armies of Occupation

By EDWARD WRIGHT

A SABBATH peace was on the green, lonely land. In the bright frosty air church bells were calling the peasants to Mass in the Ardennes and the Eifel, and the churches were filled, and the woods and fields empty on Sunday, December 1st, 1918, as British Hussars and Lancers crossed the German frontier. Ahead of the conquerors rose ridge after ridge of high, pine-crowned uplands, with roads running by the edge of green ravines and by pleasant timber-built farmhouses, standing blank and sullen, with closed doors and blinds drawn.

It was a country in which a thousand determined men, with machine-guns, might have held back an army. Yet this wild borderland of the greatest of all military States was left without a single company of defenders. By strange historic irony, the dividing stream between the Belgian and German Ardennes was named Red Water. By the blood of millions of men, with that of many women and children, had the new invaders purchased the power to cross it.

Behind the British soldiers in the liberated towns of Belgium was a whirl of dancing joy. Soldiers and girls, staid matrons and stiff officers, swayed hand-in-hand down the streets, singing in an ecstasy of happiness, or playing kiss-in-the-ring. There were more solemn scenes of joy in the cities of Lorraine and Alsace while the Americans and French were preparing to cross the hostile frontier.

Sullen German Anger

Some of the British columns were able to carry the joy of liberation on to Prussian soil. For when they entered the lovely region of Malmedy, where the green fir trees stood out in Christmas glory against crimson stretches of withered bracken, the troops were welcomed by Walloons, whose forefathers had been torn from the Belgian nation by the robber race of Europe at the end of the Napoleonic Wars.

For the rest, however, Germany awaited her conquerors in a kind of recovered pride. The people had just seen their beaten soldiers wearily trailing by like an army of tramps. In many cases they had been robbed by their own troops, and the pillaging had not been stopped until burgomasters formed armed town guards and received assistance from good regiments of first-line forces. Yet many of the best German troops marched back to the Rhine with carts and barrows piled with plunder, all of which did not come from France or Belgium. Some divisions demobilised themselves on the march by the simple process of deserting, and then breaking into shops and taking civilian suits. The soldiers that remained steady and disciplined were given young firs as Christmas-trees, and provided with garlands of the last autumnal flowers growing in the warm valleys. To keep them from disorder they were flattered profusely and told they were unbeaten, and it was partly through the influence of their own oratory that the Germans along the Rhine began to recover from the patent effects of their abject national surrender.

Few of them were frightened at the clattering hoofs and fluttering pennons of the British advance guards. A remarkable rumour had gone through the country that Germany would be in a position to resume the struggle and carry it to a victorious end within five years. Hard, averted faces, glowering eyes, or bitter looks met the British troops as they wound in unending columns over the wooded heights and along the valley meadows. Here and there a woman or a man broke into tears, but the German population generally at first held itself in sullen, silent anger, as though it were being deeply wronged. At Aix-la-Chapelle, in the cathedral where Charlemagne, the Belgian, lies, a service of penitence was held on the Sunday when the Allies crossed the border.

Force—Not its Symbol

But the penitence was not for the wrong done to the children, women, and non-combatants of Belgium, but for the national weakness that allowed the land to be occupied by enemies. The strange religious service was followed by some outbreaks of violence towards the Belgian troops, and it was found necessary in this section of the march of occupation to keep strong forces immediately following the two squadrons of cavalry that led the way. Sheer force alone was what the Germans recognised and obeyed; a mere symbol of force was insufficient, at least around Aix-la-Chapelle, to overawe the extraordinary Teuton. Because Belgium was a small nation with a small Army, he would not, even in the day of utter defeat, abate his savage arrogance. Only when the main force of the Belgian Army poured towards the Rhine, from Düsseldorf to the Dutch frontier, and strong French and American forces took over Aix, did the German change his attitude.

Towards the marching power of the British Empire, however, with Canadians threading the old lava beds of the Eifel towards Bonn, and Englishmen, Scotsmen, Irishmen, and South Africans climbing through the Ardennes towards Cologne, the amazing German gradually became friendly. It was because he hated the Briton most that he respected him most, his hatred having been evoked by fear. The marching British divisions were superb in condition and appearance. Their horses shone with health and good feeding; their arms glittered as brightly as polish could make them; their uniforms were smart and their bearing magnificent.

An Awe-Inspiring Display

Critical Teutons could discern no starvation effect from any submarine blockade in the swinging, ringing movement of the men who had broken through all the Hindenburg lines and then marched over the Meuse and into Prussia. Joined with the movement of the other forces of the Grand Alliance, the British invasion swelled in a few days into an awe-inspiring display of multitudinous force. There then occurred, especially in regard to the British Army, a popular act of submission that may be compared with the surrender of the German High Sea Fleet to Admiral Beatty's squadrons. The German people generally turned completely about. Instead of meeting their victors in silent, sullen, proud anger, they implored them to hasten their advance, in disregard of the rate of progress fixed by the terms of the armistice.

The British soldier became, by the most remarkable of transformations, the saviour of the Germans. Rioting broke out at Düren, Cologne, and other places in the interval between the retirement of the German forces and the arrival of the conquering army. Cavalry, horse-artillery, and machine-gun brigades had to be sent eastward in haste to save the Germans from their own men. Then it was that the Rhineland flowered into welcome. Highlanders, striding along to the skirl of their bagpipes, found themselves accompanied by crowds of laughing, cheering children, while German girls and women smiled at the picturesquely kilted soldiers who had broken and killed a hundred thousand German men in battle. Shops and hotels produced abundant luxuries in food, in a land that had clamorously professed to be starving. Finally, a new political party arose agitating for annexation by the British Empire. In the French sector of occupation there was another party desirous of joining the country to France. Probably, if the Americans had entertained the idea, there would have been a third German group anxious to enter the United States. The more moderate men aimed at a complete break with Prussia, and the erection of a Westphalian-Rhineland republic.

Thus the Germans cringed in spirit, if not in body, eager for any arrangement likely to save them from paying their large share of costs in the lost war. When the British entered Cologne on December 6th, Germans were still rioting in the old French city of Metz, but in the capital of the Rhineland waving crowds greeted the conquerors.

General Plumer in Cologne

It was the same in the city of Bonn. As soon as the Teutons were overawed in their own country by a great gathering of force, they became curiously submissive. Germans were seen kicking each other because the wants of the British were not instantly attended to —in the city in which captured and badly-wounded British soldiers, faint with thirst and pain, were once tortured by the offer of glasses of water by German Red Cross nurses, who jeeringly emptied the drink on the ground before it could be taken by the weak, outstretched hands. Also—in streets along which returning British and French prisoners had lately trudged, dying of hunger, yet uncared for, during the German Revolution when the Germans were themselves shrieking for humanitarian treatment—one could at times catch the sound of the "Marseillaise" and other airs of the Allies, played in well-supplied restaurants to promote trade and please the invading forces.

And when, on December 12th, 1918, standing beneath the mud-plastered statue of the Kaiser, on the towered Hohenzollern Bridge at Cologne, General Plumer took the salute of his cavalry as they rode over the Rhine to occupy Solingen and other bridge-head towns, the Teutons crowded to the spectacle as though it were a Kaiser review. Perhaps some café bands played "Rule, Britannia," or "Tipperary" that night, for these were among the airs to which the British horse crossed the last line of defence of the shattered Empire that Bismarck had built of blood and iron. The iron had rusted out with the blood spilt upon it.

British National Anthem Rings Across the Rhine

A big British howitzer at Cologne, pointing over the Rhine. "Think of seeing that on the Rhine!" was the exclamation of one British soldier who had been taken prisoner in October, 1914, as he surveyed British guns on the Cologne quays in December, 1918.

General Plumer (in centre of photograph) and members of his Staff standing at the salute while the band played the National Anthem, before the British troops marched across the Hohenzollern Bridge at Cologne to occupy the bridge-head on the eastern bank.

France on the Rhine

Alsace Restored at Last to the Alsatians

By HAMILTON FYFE

SO far as campaigning can ever be pleasant, the French invasion of Alsace in the first month of the war was a pleasant campaign. The weather was glorious. The orchards in the rich country through which the advance lay were full of fruit. At first the going was easy. It seemed as if the provinces might be recovered with scarcely a struggle; only when the Germans gathered their forces and struck back hard was the hopelessness of the enterprise evident. After that bout of hard fighting the front consolidated, to use the current phrase, and there was little doing for a very long time.

As winter closed in, the pleasantness of the campaign faded into the grim and harsh realities of a cold-weather campaign.

They are not high, the Vosges Mountains, as mountains go; not nearly so high as the Alps among which the Italians fought; hardly as high as the Carpathians, where later I was with the Rumanians in their plucky fight against an enemy infinitely better equipped than they were themselves. But the cold amid the loftiest peaks of the Himalayas could not be more searching than the cold in the Vosges. The French troops in Alsace were supposed to be having a soft time. For two-thirds of the year perhaps they did. But not during the winter months.

A Land of Character

Down on the plain which lies between the Vosges and the Rhine, and on the wavy plateau of Lorraine, the conditions are not so severe. These are the three divisions of the provinces which have for so long been familiar in the mouth as household words, but which not many English people know much about. Lorraine is not interesting to the tourist. But Alsace has a great deal to recommend it as holiday ground. It is a land with character.

If you were blindfolded and carried off in an aeroplane and dumped down in Colmar or Thann, you might wonder for some little while where you were. You would hear a language very like German spoken all round you. You would see faces which were neither German nor French. You would be reminded of Switzerland, yet you would say, "These people are of a more vigorous strain than the Swiss."

It is a country of rough jollity and laughter, of good eating and drinking, of downright speech and not too much refinement in manners. The Alsatians have a strong national feeling, and no one who has been among them can be surprised at it, for they have well-marked national idiosyncracies. "Alsace for the Alsatians" is their motto. Although they admitted the benefits which orderly German rule had brought among them, they disliked it heartily because it would not leave Alsace to itself. They want to be joined again to France—not because they feel French nationality, but because they know the French will let them alone.

In Lorraine it is different. The people are of French blood, and acutely conscious of it. Even Bismarck admitted the folly of annexing what was an integral part of France. Eight years after the annexation he said to the French Ambassador in Berlin: "One may destroy a nation if one is strong enough, and if one's interest demands its destruction; but one cannot mutilate with impunity. By mutilating and humiliating Prussia in 1806 Napoleon caused the Steins and the Scharnhorsts to arise. In taking from France Metz and part of Lorraine the Emperor, my master, and the militarists who inspired this resolve, committed the greatest of political crimes."

Policy of the Jackboot

As an excuse for this crime, it was represented that the provinces had been annexed by France from Germany in the seventeenth century. They did change rulers, it is true, but Alsace was claimed and granted to Richelieu "for services rendered," and as for Lorraine, it had always been French in blood and sentiment. That could not be denied.

The reason why they were annexed was their strategic importance as the frontier lands of the new German Empire and the reason why Germany was so anxious to keep them even when their military value declined was that they contain very rich deposits of iron ore, of potash, and petroleum.

If the Prussians had not been the dismally stupid race that they always have been they would have seen that they could only make the people of Alsace forget they had been annexed by treating them with exceptional mildness. The people of Lorraine would never be reconciled. That was certain. But the Alsatians were capable of being won. Just and friendly treatment would have won them. Instead, they had the Prussian jackboot applied to them—with the natural result.

When the new frontier was being marked out, the mayor of some little place, who had to be present at the operation in his district, approached the group of officials slowly. The Prussian boundary-marker called to him to hurry up. He walked more slowly than before. The Prussian lost his temper and abused the mayor. "All right, all right," the old fellow replied; "you don't think I was going to hurry to become a Prussian, do you?"

What Bethmann-Hollweg Forgot

"By the fact that you have conquered us," said a distinguished Alsatian named Hartmann, in March, 1872, when the annexation had been decided upon in spite of all protests, "you owe us a legal status, a civil and political Constitution in harmony with our traditions and our customs." They received no Constitution. They were governed as a conquered race. The Prussians set themselves to "denationalise" them.

Yet forty years after they began this attempt, the German Chancellor, Bethmann-Hollweg, rebuked the leaders of the people in the conquered provinces for "affecting to ignore the German character of the population," forgetting that the world would certainly inquire how it was that they became leaders if they were not in harmony with those whom they led. In that queer museum of prejudice and pedantry, the Prussian Upper Chamber, it was openly complained a year later that Alsace and Lorraine were "not yet German enough" to be given rights as a confederate State of the Empire.

"Not German enough," after forty years, although "spying had been raised to the dignity of a means of Government," although it was forbidden to ask for a *menu* in a restaurant or to send for the *coiffeur*: *speisekarte*, *restauration*, and *friseur* were the words that must be used. The two latter were just as much words of French origin as the former, by the way, which made the Prussian edict ridiculous as well as annoying.

"Not German enough," in spite of the masses of people who left the provinces during the years following annexation, even German-speaking people. In Belfort there was, and may be still a whole quarter where German was spoken and the shop signs were German, and the schools German. There lived Alsatians who had refused to stay in Alsace under the Prussian regime of "denationalisation."

The difference between the character of French rule and that of the Prussians was illustrated by the discovery in, I think, Colmar, after the Germans had taken it over, of the old German eagle on the Town Hall. The French had left it there as an historical curiosity.

The Prussians took the contrary course. They set themselves to root out and insult everything French. With what result?

Nemesis of Junkerdom

That during the war a secret notice had to be issued ordering a specially strict censorship from the two provinces because "eighty per cent. of the letters sent out of Alsace-Lorraine were, if not directly hostile to Germany, at all events of a nature by no means friendly."

Under French systems of Government, whether republican or kingly, the Alsatians were content. There was no Nationalist movement among them until the Germans provoked it. The French officials were mostly Alsatian by birth and were all friendly with the population. The Prussian officials made no effort, save in a few cases here and there upon which authority frowned, to win the sympathies or consider the wishes of the people. As for the officers, they behaved as if they were in occupied territory. Nowhere have I seen the Junker so overbearing as in Alsace.

Wise men in the new German Empire saw what a store of trouble was being laid up by annexing provinces that were unwilling to change their allegiance. The Crown Prince, Frederick the Noble, was decidedly against it. Even Bismarck would have left Lorraine alone, but the feeling of the mass of Germans was put into words by a member of the Crown Prince's Staff: "It would make one's heart turn in one's body if we were to renounce Metz and leave Paris looking like fools."

What they had to learn, and what there are many everywhere who have still to discover, is that a generous action is never foolish. The Germans left Paris in 1871, having got all they wanted. But they could hardly look bigger fools than they did in November, 1918, after nearly fifty years, mainly because of these two pieces of territory, not quite so big as Yorkshire, and with less than a two-million population. Generosity would have paid them better, after all.

Triumphant French Armies Beyond the Rhine

Troops of the 33rd French Army Corps marching past General Lecomte in front of the Hotel de Ville, Wiesbaden, December 15th, 1918. Subsequently the General took formal possession of the bridge-head and of the German authorities' administrative and executive powers

'To the Rhine!' Retribution After Fifty Years

French troops, forming part of the Army of Occupation, marching through Aix-la-Chapelle, the former Headquarters of the German Staff.

General Mangin with General Dickmann, of the American Army, reviewing French troops of the Army of Occupation at Coblenz, on the Rhine. In oval: Cheering crowds in Brussels acclaim troops of the French Army of Occupation as they march through the Belgian capital on their way to German territory; a joyous sight to brave people who had suffered so long under the Hun invader.

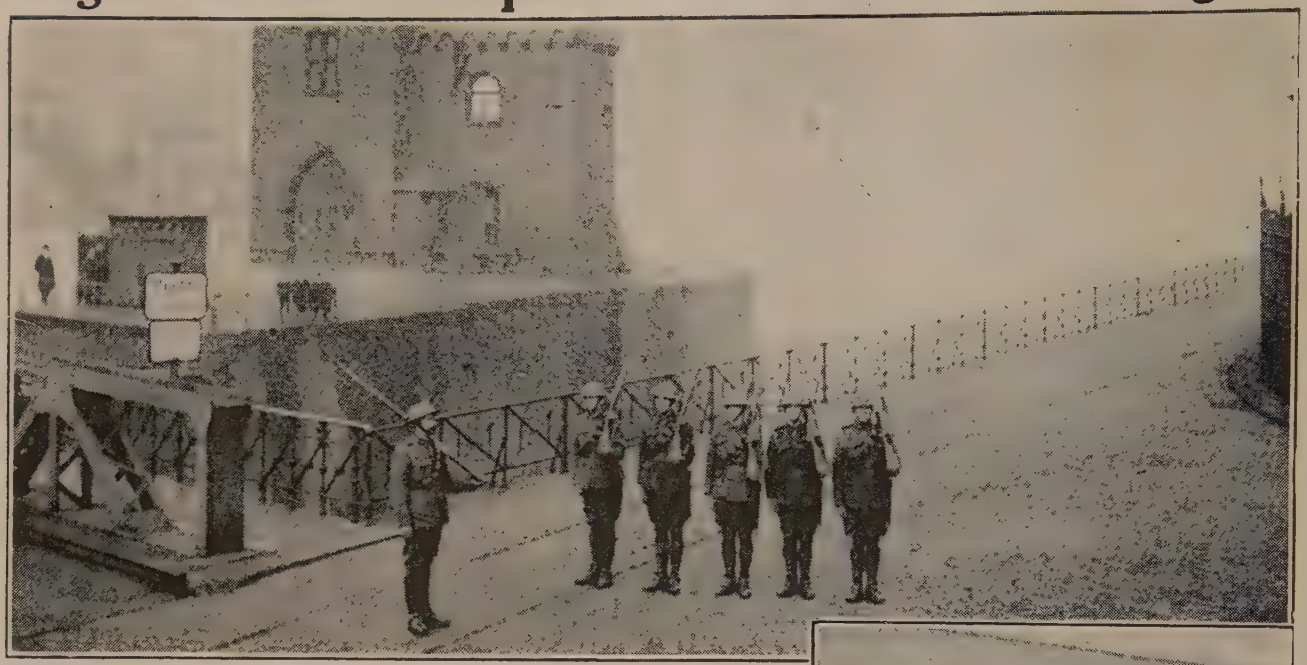
New World Knights Guard River of Old Romance

Troops of the American 1st Division crossing the Rhine by the pontoon bridge at Coblenz, and (right) marching into the town. The Americans entered Coblenz in the afternoon of December 2nd, 1918, following the withdrawal of the Third German Army.

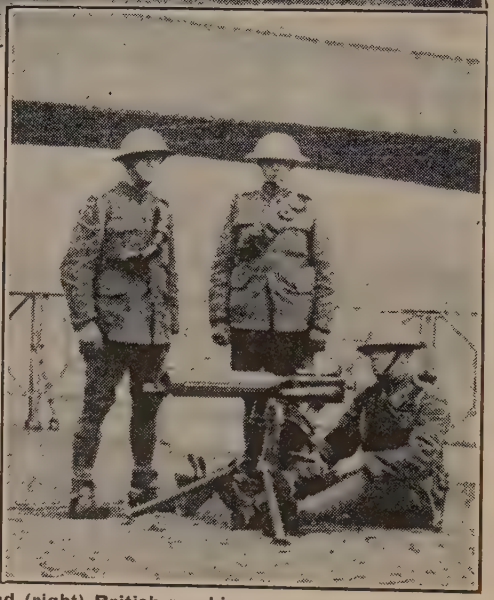
Military police of the American 42nd Division lined up for duty at Rolandseck, one of the most beautiful spots on the Rhine, opposite the famous Drachenfels.

American soldiers watching the Rhine where it flows at the foot of the fortress of Coblenz, capital of the Rhenish Province of Prussia. Right: U.S. infantry halting for a rest opposite the ruins of the Thurnberg, a fourteenth-century stronghold at Wellnich.

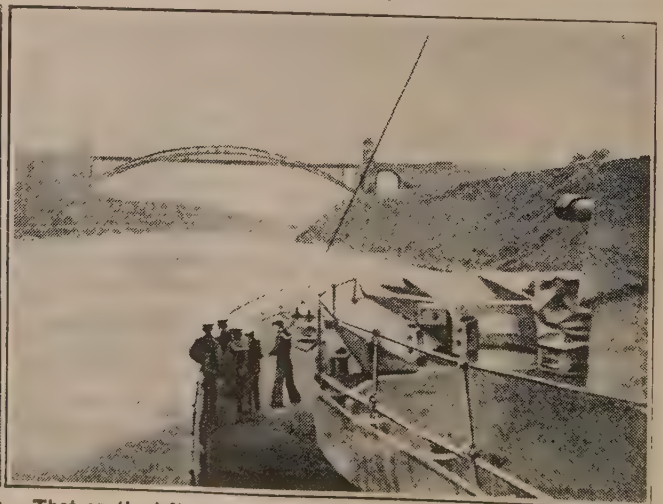
Signs of the Conquest from Kiel and Cologne



British guard at the entrance to the Cologne docks. Owing to Bolshevist rioting, a Hussar detachment went thither on Dec. 6th, 1918, before the scheduled time.



Officers of the 18th Hussars near the suspension bridge over the Rhine at Cologne, and (right) British machine-gunners guarding the bridge during the period of Bolshevist troubles in Cologne which preceded the allied occupation.



Photographs from the Kiel Canal after the cessation of hostilities. That on the left shows the tug which had brought out the two German officers who are standing by the gangway; that on the right shows British sailors viewing the canal from a light cruiser.

THE WAR ILLUSTRATED · GALLERY OF LEADERS

GENERAL MANGIN

Commanded the Tenth French Army, 1918

PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR

GENERAL MANGIN

No French commander has been hated so much by the Germans as General Charles Mangin. In French military circles he is generally referred to as the officer of attack. No one better deserved the title. He was one of the heroes of the epic struggle at Verdun in 1916—the man who retook Douaumont and Vaux, and so saved the left bank of the Meuse.

Of middle height, muscular, dark of complexion, with thin, firm-set lips, square jaw, and deep-lined face alive with swift intelligence and energy, he proved himself fearless and ruthless in battle, patient to a degree in preparation, but a firm believer in attack as the best defence; and his men were devoted to him.

His Distinguished Colonial Record

He has been compared to one of the great figures of the Italian Renaissance, Sigismondo Malatesta, Lord of Rimini, to whose portrait at Rimini his features are said to bear a close resemblance. Sigismondo combined the gifts of a great military leader with scholarship, a love of the fine arts, and other qualities of a less admirable kind, common enough in his time. For Sigismondo's passion, Mangin substituted patience; he left it to the Hun to copy the baser side of the Malatesta character. For the rest, the companion portrait may serve.

General Mangin is a Lorrainer. Since the tragedy of 1871, Lorrainers had become rather dour folk. Born in 1866, he was old enough at the time of the Prussian invasion to appreciate its horrors.

His father was a civil engineer, but his family had a distinguished military record. One of his uncles was a general at forty-five. Two of his brothers fell fighting in France's colonial wars. The third, who had become an African missionary, returned to France in 1914 as a sergeant of Senegalese sharp-shooters. At that date Charles Mangin had some twenty-five years of campaigning behind him. He had fought in the Sudan and East Africa. He had been with Lyautey in Morocco, and with Marchand in Fashoda. He had spent three years in Tonkin. He had been one of the builders of France's colonial army. His book on "Black Power" had much to do with the calling of that army into existence. It was a fit thing that it should be his fate to lead it to victory.

In 1913 Mangin was a general of brigade. Three weeks after war broke out he was in command of a division, and took part with distinction in the first Battle of the Marne. In May, 1915, his men captured Neuville St. Vaast; in the following September they stormed Vimy Ridge. But his first great chance did not come until 1916, when the Germans determined to take Verdun as a preliminary to again marching into Paris. They lost over half a million men in that adventure, of which the German Crown Prince was in nominal command. And in the early part of the struggle, which began on February 16th, by battering-ram tactics, they got about half-way to their immediate objective.

With the 5th Division at Verdun

They expected to be in Verdun in four days. By the 25th they had taken Douaumont, which they regarded as the key position before the famous city. The Kaiser got ready to take part in the entry. But Pétain came up with reinforcements. By April 9th the onslaught had broken against the superb defence. Pétain then handed over the direction to Nivelle, Mangin being in command of the 5th Division, upon which had fallen the brunt of the fighting in the Vaux-Douaumont sector. They retired to the rear to refit. On April 21st Mangin issued to them the following order:—

> You are about to reform your depleted ranks. Many of you will return home and will bear with you to your families the warlike ardour and the thirst for vengeance which inspire you. But there is no rest for us French so long as the barbarous enemy treads the sacred soil of our Fatherland. There is no peace for the world till the monster of Prussian militarism has been laid low. Therefore prepare yourselves for new battles, when you will have full confidence in your superiority over an enemy whom you have so often seen to flee and surrender before your bayonets and grenades. You are certain of that now. Any German who enters a trench of the 5th Division is dead or a prisoner; any ground seriously attacked by the 5th Division is captured ground. You march under the wings of Victory.

The Germans renewed their attack on May 7th. By this time the eyes of all the world may be said to have been concentrated on this small part of the vast battle area. The fighting was terrific. French losses were heavy, indeed; but there was a holocaust of German dead. On May 22nd the 5th Division went forward. By noon Fort Douaumont was in their hands. But the enemy were masters of the ruins two days later. The Germans determined to gain a decision in their favour before the expected allied attack in the north could be launched. Fleury and Thiaumont changed hands time after time. But by August 18th the site of Fleury village was once more and finally in French hands. On September 3rd the enemy made his last bid for victory against the Vaux-Chapitre line. Again the French counter-attacked. General Mangin was placed in command of an army corps—nearly all colonial troops—for the desperate work of retaking Douaumont and Vaux. The assault began on the morning of October 24th. It went according to time-table; and to three battalions of the Moroccan Colonial Regiment fell the honour of the final stages. An order of the day, issued by General Nivelle, was in these terms:

> Officers, non-commissioned officers, and men of the Mangin group. In a few hours, by a magnificent assault, you have wrested at one blow from your powerful enemy the ground, bristling with obstacles and fortresses, to the north-east of Verdun, which took him eight months to win in fragments and at the cost of desperate efforts and great sacrifice. You have added fresh laurels to those that cover the colours of the Verdun army. On behalf of that army I thank you. You have deserved well of your country.

On November 2nd the French retook Fort Vaux, an even more arduous task. At the end of the year they were back almost to the line from which they had been forced in February. Then came a hypocritical peace offensive on the part of the Huns. With grim humour, General Mangin, speaking to his men, referred to them as the proper ambassadors of the Republic. But the political strings were being pulled in Paris. The enemy attempted manœuvres, which succeeded too well in Russia, Italy, and Rumania.

Recalled by M. Clemenceau

The defeatist serpent raised its head. In the second Battle of the Aisne, April, 1917, General Mangin commanded the Sixth Army. General Nivelle was in chief command. The weather proved vile. The tanks disappointed expectations. Much was gained; but the Chemin des Dames was not taken. The politicians took fright. Pétain was once more placed in control; Nivelle and Mangin suffered an eclipse.

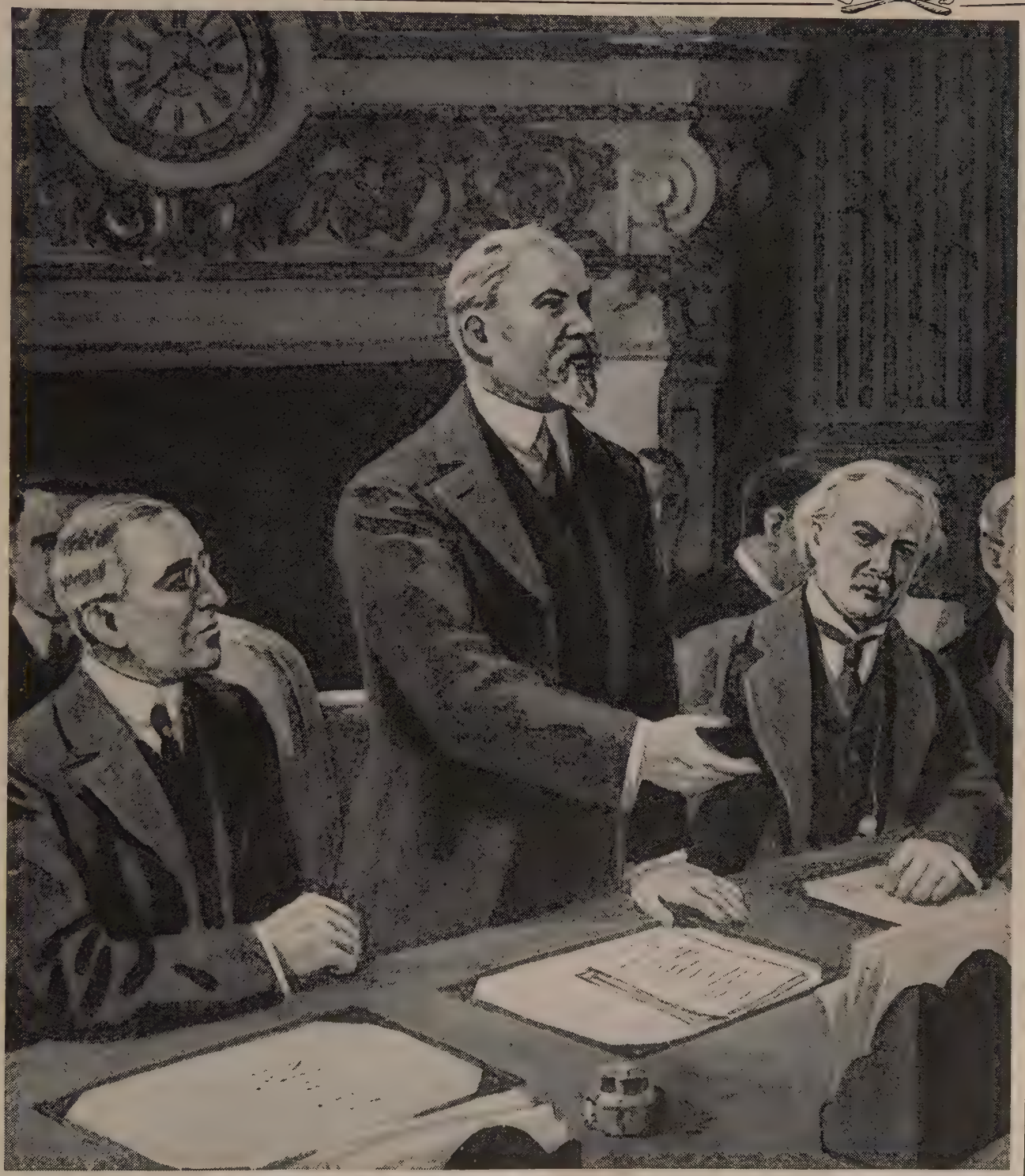
Exonerated from all blame by a commission of inquiry, General Mangin was recalled by M. Clemenceau, reinstated at the head of the Tenth Army, and justified the Premier's confidence in every subsequent event in which he was engaged. In May, 1918, the enemy made a tremendous effort against Rheims and Soissons. There ensued what is known as the second Battle of the Marne. On May 29th Soissons fell into German hands. By July 14th the enemy front extended from Montdidier, by Noyon, Soissons, Château-Thierry, to the Argonne east of Rheims. Mangin, with the Tenth Army, was west of Soissons, with the Sixth Army under Dégoutte on his right. The Ninth Army, under Berthelot, and the Fourth Army, under Gouraud, extended the line to the Argonne.

Foch decided on a great thrust between Soissons and Château-Thierry. A British corps was sent to fight under Mangin and Berthelot. United States troops co-operated. The Tenth Army conducted the main operations. They advanced on July 18th. Between 4.30 and 10.30 a.m. they had thrust forward to the extent of eight miles. The menace to Paris was removed. It was the beginning of the end, though four months earlier Germany seemed within reach of victory.

The glorious Tenth Army never looked back; and though a slight accident, a fall from his horse, deprived him of marching into Metz on November 19th, 1919, at the head of troops of that army, he recovered in time to appreciate the pure joy with which the Lorrainers hailed their liberation from the Hun after forty-seven years of Prussian dominion. Later he was appointed to the command of the French Army of the Rhine at Mainz. Here in 1919 Sir William Robertson invested him with the insignia of the Order of the Bath

From Armistice to Peace

The great Allied Peace Conference opened at Paris on January 18th, 1919, where the various delegates continued their strenuous labours for many months. On May 7th, 1919, the Peace Treaty was presented at Versailles to the German Delegates, who were allowed some weeks in which to consider it. After minor changes they signed this epoch-making document on June 28th, 1919. Austria signed, September 10th, 1919.



FORMAL OPENING OF THE PEACE CONFERENCE AT PARIS.—On January 18th, 1919, the great Allied Peace Conference was opened in Paris, exactly 48 years after the proclamation at Versailles of the foundation of the German Empire. President Poincare, standing between President Wilson and Mr. Lloyd George, opened the Congress with an address to the delegates. He concluded an eloquent peroration with the words: "Gentlemen, the future of the world is in your hands."

The Passing of Germany's Dream of World Dominion

Copyright.

By the Peace Treaty handed to the Germans, May 7th, 1919, Alsace-Lorraine is restored to France, Belgium receives Moresnet and Malmedy, Luxemburg has choice of joining Belgium or France, Northern and Central Schleswig will vote whether to remain German or join Denmark. A new State of Poland is created, with corridor down the Vistula to Danzig. The southern part of E. Prussia will be settled by plebiscite.

Copyright.

Map showing overseas possessions which Germany renounces to the Allied and Associated Powers, and the trusteeship of which is to be vested in mandataries of the League of Nations. The Union of South Africa is created the mandatary of German S.W. Africa, Great Britain holds the mandate of German E. Africa, Australia that of German Pacific possessions south of the Equator (excluding Samoan Islands and Nauru).

In Spa Where Fateful Gatherings Took Place

Headquarters at Spa of German delegates to the Armistice Commission, with a German sentry on duty, and a German car flying the white flag passing through the gateway. Right: General Winterfeldt, chief of the German Armistice Commission in Spa.

Allied chiefs of Armistice Commission. Left to right: Gen. Haking, British: Gen. Nudan, French; and Gen. Dellobe, Belgian.

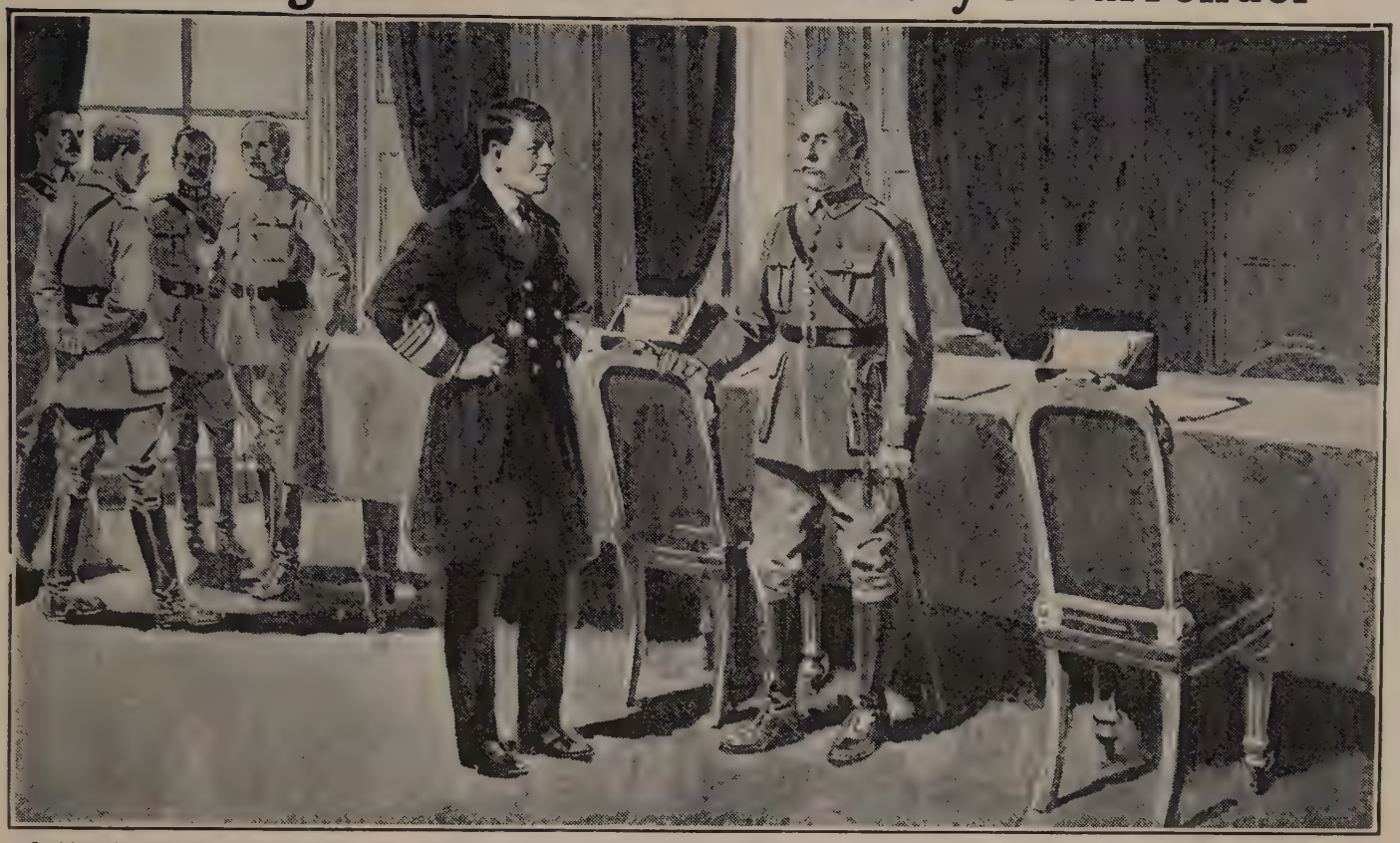
The Grand Hotel Britannique at Spa, meeting place of the International Armistice Commission; and (right) Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig with Prince Yurihito of Higashi Fushini leaving their train at the front to continue their journey by motor-car.

Victory Leaders' Historic Task at Versailles:

Early in the morning of November 8th, 1918, the German envoys sent to ask the Allies' terms for an armistice were taken in motor-cars to Marshal Foch's Headquarters. The principal delegates were Secretary of State Herr Erzberger (in the foreground carrying portfolio), Ambassador Count Oberndorff (on his left, in mufti), Gen. von Winterfeld (behind Erzberger), and Gen. von Gundell (behind Oberndorff).

Members of the Versailles Council at the conference table discussing the terms to be imposed upon Germany in response to her request for an armistice. The members, from left to right across the two halves of the picture, are: Col. Nagai (Japan); Gen. D. Robilant, Baron Sonnino, and Sig. Orlando (Italy); Col. House, Gen. Bliss, and Mr. Archin Closs (U.S.A.); M. Venizelos (Greece); M. Vesnitch (Serbia).

Deciding the Terms of Germany's Surrender

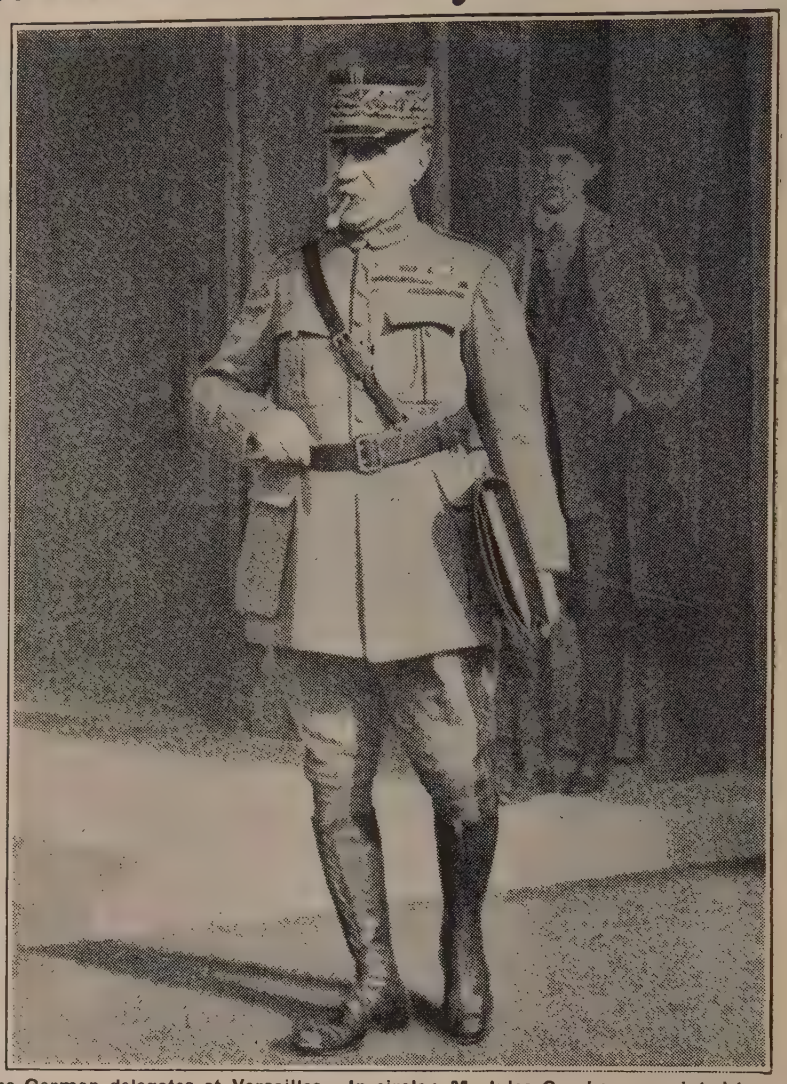


An historic moment. Marshal Foch with Admiral Sir Rosslyn Wemyss, the British Naval Representative, awaiting the introduction of the German delegates to their presence. They received them standing, and after various formalities had been complied with and light refreshments served, Marshal Foch, in a loud, clear voice read the Allies' armistice terms, the severity of which profoundly impressed the enemy delegates.

Gen. Belin, Marshal Foch, M. Pichon, and M. Clemenceau (France); Mr. Lloyd George, Mr. Bonar Law, Lord Milner, and Sir Douglas Haig (Great Britain); Gen. Weygand (France). Speaking at Guildhall on Nov. 9th, Mr. Lloyd George said: "I spent a great week at Versailles." Delay in sending our terms to Germany was due to no disagreement among the Allies, but to the knocking away of the props that held Germany up.

Securing by the Pen What Was Won by the Sword

Signor Orlando and Baron Sonnino, arriving at Versailles for the reception of the German delegates.



Colonel Henry, chief of the Military Mission, in charge of the German delegates at Versailles. In circle: M. Jules Cambon, appointed to examine the credentials of German plenipotentiaries. Right: Marshal Foch leaving the plenary session at which peace terms were settled.

Allied representatives leaving Trianon Palace Hotel on May 7th, 1919, after the historic ceremony of presentation of terms of peace to the German plenipotentiaries. Left: Sir Robert Borden, Prime Minister of Canada, with Sir Joseph Ward, one of the delegates from New Zealand. In centre: M. Vandervelde (wearing glasses), representative of Belgium. Right: The Maharajah of Bikanir, one of the princely representatives of India.

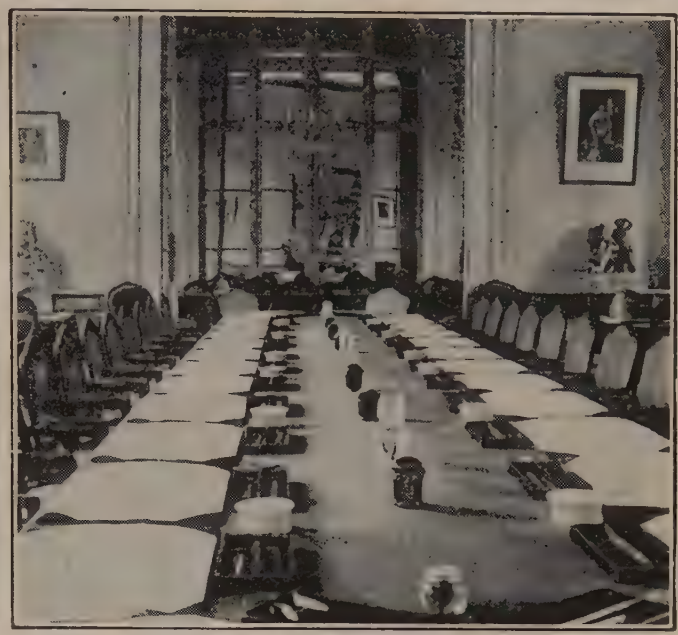
MARSHAL FOCH AND THE "BIG FOUR" AT THE PARIS PEACE CONFERENCE.

The Council of Four, known as the "Big Four"—Mr. Lloyd George, M. Clemenceau, Signor Orlando, and President Wilson—engaged in settling the terms of the Peace Treaty at Paris, 1919, discuss its military aspects with Marshal Foch.

To face page 3344

Historic Photograph of Germans at the Bar of Justice

Central table of Conference Room in Trianon Palace Hotel, Versailles, showing everything in readiness for the historic gathering of May 7th.



Another view of the table, with its equipment of blotting-pads and ink, in the palatial apartment where the Germans received the terms.

The German delegates listening to M. Clemenceau's speech at the meeting on May 7th, 1919, when the Peace Treaty was handed to them. At nearest table are seated: Herr Leinert, Dr. Landsberg, Count Brockdorff-Rantzau (third figure), Herr Giesberts, and Professor Schucking. At end of table behind is Herr von Lersner. Behind the plenipotentiaries' table are their five secretaries, while on the right are the Pressmen.

The Hour of the Great Reckoning

How German Delegates Received the Terms of Peace

By EDWARD WRIGHT

IN all history of the past there is no such dramatic contrast as that obtaining between the First and Second Peace Conferences of Versailles. From the hand of a master we have the most vivid, cynical pictures of the First Conference, for Bismarck himself recorded all details in his table talk. In the winter of 1870, when Paris was besieged and starving and the new French armies were breaking, Thiers and Favre, the French plenipotentiaries, came to Versailles and talked at great length, only stopping to weep. "I have endured your eloquence for a whole hour," said Bismarck harshly. "You must finish. I warn you I will not use the French language any more. I will keep to German."

For another half an hour Thiers went on speaking, receiving German replies which he could not understand. He and Favre walked about the room, wringing their hands and crying. Only when his proposed terms were accepted did Bismarck speak in French so that the Frenchmen could understand.

"Are you not afraid of driving us to the last extremity—of making our resistance more bitter?" said Jules Favre.

"Ja! Your resistance!" shouted Bismarck, striding up to the French statesman and towering above him. "You are proud of your resistance. But I tell you that, if the Governor of Paris were a German general, I would have him shot. Listen well to my words. No one has the right, in the face of God and humanity, to sacrifice to famine a city of more than two millions for the sake of miserable glory. On all sides of Paris the railways are cut. If we cannot repair them within two days—and I am not sure we can do so—a hundred thousand people will die daily. Talk no more of resistance. It is a crime!"

Teutonic Theatricals Discarded

Five minutes later, runs Bismarck's story, the French agreed to the double principle of a surrender of territory and a war indemnity, and he invited his opponents to a lunch. Thiers refused to eat, and Favre, who thought it worth while to continue to talk, found the bill of fare began with sauerkraut, especially ordered by the Teuton to annoy his guests. On all these things Bismarck loved afterwards to expand in vulgar, personal triumph.

At the time when he was insulting and tricking the French envoys, there was a young doctor of Montmartre, Georges Clemenceau, who was distinguishing himself as Republican representative of the Paris working class. The young Frenchman urged that no submissive peace should be made, but that the struggle should be continued in the south, until the old, wild, Revolutionary spirit was excited in the peasantry. This was the man who, forty-nine years afterwards, incarnated the entire spirit of France, and victoriously arranged the Second Conference of Versailles.

In 1870 Thiers travelled through Europe without finding a single statesman in power willing to intervene in the negotiations on which the future peace of the world depended. In 1919 Clemenceau was supported by the plenipotentiaries of four Great Powers and twenty-two other States. Almost every organised country in the world was ready to join the great League, and Germany herself sought to enter it. It was practically before the first Parliament of Man that the most criminal nation since the Assyrians was summoned.

Circumstances lent themselves to gorgeous display of the pomp of universal power in the hour of their transient triumph. The Teutons had staged the birth of their Hohenzollern Empire in the Hall of Mirrors of the palace built by the French king who carried his arms to the Rhine. But the conquerors could not stoop to so theatrical an imitation of Teutonism as to hold the burial service of the German Empire in the glittering gallery that had been its birthplace. The general symbolism of Versailles was sufficient.

A Grim Anniversary

With modesty of choice, the great hour of reckoning was passed in the dining-room of a modern commercial hotel, the Trianon Palace Hotel, built by the edge of the park in which Marie Antoinette used to play at pastoral life. The only definite touch of dramatic irony was the date fixed for the meeting, May 7th, 1919, which was the anniversary of the torpedoing of the Lusitania. With this exception in favour of British and American sentiment, the most important ceremony in the annals of mankind was prepared in a quiet, simple, businesslike manner. The people of Paris did not come forth in multitudes. A few policemen and soldiers were enough to preserve order among the sparse spectators when the cars of the German envoys came to the hotel door.

Yet Clemenceau, master of the ceremonies, was in an anxious frame of mind. He had been unable to induce the principal Allies of his country to help him in his scheme of Continental defence. The Conference room thus became the theatre of the supreme phase of that duel between Frank and Teuton which had lasted for a thousand years. Both President Wilson and Mr. Lloyd George were averse to making the position of the Germans really desperate. So a new Bismarck might have won the last round in the long duel, either by being sincere and awkward or nsincere and adroit. The Germans, however, combined lack of honesty with lack of intelligence in the person of the man they hoped would prove a master craftsman in diplomacy.

He was a Schleswig-Holsteiner, Count von Brockdorff-Rantzau. His claim to friendly consideration was that he descended from the Rantzau who served France in the seventeenth century and finally fought for her. But although the fame of his ancestor was celebrated in French poetry, Rantzau was not the kind of man who should have come to Versailles to play a part somewhat similar to that enacted by Thiers and Favre. He was cousin and notorious pupil of Count Bernstorff, the dealer in dynamite and intrigue in the United States in the first years of the war, and later the director of the new German policy of Bolshevist propaganda abroad and masked Imperialism at home.

Rantzau and Bernstorff

The Allies had discovered Bernstorff's plan for a new campaign against Poland, and they received his envoy in the manner of judges passing judgment on a criminal. This was done in the simplest of ways by an arrangement of tables. Thirty-two sovereign persons, Prime Ministers and plenipotentiaries sat, with Secretaries of State and other assistants, in a large rectangle. Below them and removed from them was a small set of tables to which the German envoys were conducted. The representatives of the League stood up courteously when the Teutons entered, and when everybody was again seated, Georges Clemenceau rose in his chair. The little old man, a Breton by race, with the high cheek-bones seen in some Welshmen, was still pallid from the wounds he had received from one of the Bolshevist attacks inspired by German-Russian propaganda. He leaned forward with his fists on the table, and a stern look was in his eyes, which he fixed on the thin, white face of Rantzau.

With grim brevity he explained that negotiations would be conducted only in writing and would last, if necessary, a fortnight. With characteristic irony he added that the enemy envoys would be treated with the courtesy that was a privilege of civilised nations, but that the Second Treaty of Versailles had cost the Allies too much for them to omit any precautions or guarantees for an enduring peace.

Then came the greatest triumph in the life of the man known as the "Tiger of France." His secretary handed the German envoy the voluminous Treaty of Peace, bound in khaki, and Rantzau made an angry remark to his five companions. Without deigning to rise from his chair, the Teutonic plenipotentiary delivered a speech almost as long as that which caused Bismarck to insult Thiers at the First Conference of Versailles. Everybody could see it was no improvisation, but something that was being delivered after long thought and careful rehearsal. The voice was the voice of Rantzau, harsh, rasping, and rising at last to a shout, but the sentences were the sentences of Bernstorff. It would have been far better had the master intriguer come in person to the Conference instead of sending a gritty human gramophone.

Spirit of Prussianism

Mr. Lloyd George was playing with a paper knife. He seemed to be very quiet while Rantzau was speaking, but the knife was broken in his clenched hand. Clemenceau also managed to keep silent, by breaking his paper knife; but the man who was by far the most angry was President Woodrow Wilson. For the speech of the Teuton largely consisted of sinister parodies of various remarks by the American President. Dr. Woodrow Wilson was the only person in the Conference to whom the squatting, insolent, dictatorial Teuton spoke.

In a dumbfounding spirit of defiance, Rantzau treated the representatives of every other nation as men so consumed with hatred that words were wasted on them. His speech was designed entirely with a view to maintain among German people the illusion of their innocence and irresponsibility in regard to the war, and to revive German-American influences in the United States, and spread anarchical movements in France and Great Britain.

In short, it was a new declaration of war, a war of intrigue and underground plots among the victorious nations. As such it completed the life-work of Georges Clemenceau. Most of the associated plenipotentiaries, new to European politics, and especially the representatives of the United

[Continued on page 3348

German Delegates Who Heard their Country's Fate

Baron von Lersner, one of Germany's Peace Delegates, at Versailles. In centre: Count Brockdorff-Rantzau, head of delegation, arriving at the Trianon Palace Hotel, where the Allies' terms were handed to the Germans on May 7th, 1919. Right: Arrival of the Count and Herr Landsberg.

Arrival of the first German Peace Delegates at the Hotel des Reservoirs, Versailles, where they were housed during the deliberations. Right: Herr Scheur, Professor Behr, and another delegate in the streets of Versailles, their countenances showing signs of depression.

Posting the mail in the yard of the Hotel des Reservoirs. Right: The German delegates leaving the Trianon Palace after the close of the historic meeting at which the Peace Treaty was handed to them. A large crowd, among whom were French and British Service men, watched with great interest the faces of the representatives of the Power that plunged the world into war, and whose ambitious schemes ended in its own undoing.

States, Canada, Australia, South Africa, and New Zealand, were staggered in mind by the matter of the German statement and the manner in which it was expressed. It seemed to them that the veritable spirit of Prussianism was as strong as it had been in July, 1914. They were both angry and alarmed. Clemenceau seized the advantage which the enemy gave him, winning in an hour what he had failed to gain in the course of six months. He arranged an open defensive alliance between France, Great Britain, and the United States, directed against any possibility of another German attack.

It was afterwards explained, from the German side, that Rantzau had been unable to use the common courtesy of rising when making his speech because his knees were shaking. To everybody present, however, it remained clear that both the speech and action of the German had been practised. His voice, a far more delicate register of emotion than his legs, was under perfect control, and he used it with crescendo effect, like a trained actor, shouting at last an accusation of inhumanity against the Allies because they had not sent food into Germany during the months of the armistice in which the enemy would not release tonnage for the proffered transport of foodstuffs.

It took just under an hour to present the German envoys with the book containing the long account against them, the terms on which atonement should be made, and the scheme for preventing them or any other nation breaking the peace of the world. When Rantzau finished his speech, M. Clemenceau rose for the third time and asked if anyone wished to say anything. Nobody spoke. In eloquent silence the German delegates left the room. As they did so, everybody else once more stood up, giving the discomfited Teutons another lesson in common courtesy.

Provisions of the Treaty

There is an explanation of the way in which Rantzau spoke and acted. He and the men using him as their spokesman discovered, a considerable time before the Conference opened, the principal contents of the Treaty of Peace. So they adopted an attitude of defiance. Every crime or blunder the Germans had committed since the signing of the armistice had gone against them. In particular, their attempts to create a Revolution in Poland, while opening a new war of extermination against the Poles, had convinced Mr. Lloyd George and President Wilson that only by drastic treatment could the spirit of Prussianism be broken in Germany. Furthermore, the curious way in which Bernstorff and his associates played with Bolshevists abroad and Spartacists at home—sometimes inclining almost to an alliance with Lenin and Trotsky, and at other times promoting outbreaks of anarchy in Germany in order to bring about a general reaction—made the leaders of the English-speaking nations apprehensive of the future of civilisation.

There were Austro-Hungarian agencies in the United States working with Russian Jewish organisations towards the same end as Jewish and British Bolshevists were trying to achieve. In almost every land of the new League of Nations signs could be seen of the operation of the destructive influences which the German General Staff had unloosed and directed, from the time it gave Lenin a special train from Switzerland to Scandinavia. Revolts in Egypt and India and menacing movements in Afghanistan could be traced, by devious ways, to the men who had poisoned Russian democracy in its birth, and incited a certain amount of disorder, happily small, in some French and British forces.

Therefore upon Germany were imposed measures calculated to deprive her of all military power. They were more rigorous than those which Napoleon had instituted after overthrowing Prussia at Jena. The German Army was limited to 100,000 long-service volunteer troops, including not more than 4,000 officers, without a General Staff. This gave the whole of Germany scarcely more than half the number of effectives possessed by Prussia in the eighteenth century, when the Prussian population numbered scarcely six million souls. The manufacture or import of poison gas, liquid fire, storming cars, and armoured cars was prohibited, and export or import of armaments was forbidden. No troops or fortifications were allowed within thirty-one miles of the eastern bank of the Rhine. The number and calibre of guns were limited, and training manœuvres stopped.

Reduction of German Armaments

The German Navy was reduced to six old-fashioned battleships of pre-Dreadnought type, carrying only four 11 in. guns each, six light cruisers, twelve destroyers, and twelve torpedo-boats. No submarines were allowed, and only 15,000 long-service volunteers were permitted for manning the insignificant, obsolete naval force. All forts covering the Kiel Canal and maritime routes between the North Sea and the Baltic were to be demolished. No military or naval aircraft was to be retained by the Germans, with the exception of a hundred seaplanes employed in searching for mines. Fourteen German submarine cables were to be taken over by the Allies, and the use of wireless stations was for a time restricted.

In itself this severe scheme of disarmament favoured the regeneration of the industrial power of Germany. Between 1871 and 1914 Germany had spent in material and man-power at least sixteen thousand million pounds sterling on preparing for war As disarmed, she would save immediately a thousand million pounds, reckoning labour saved by diversion from armament-making or from loss in military service, as well as actual expenses of material and personnel. If the Allies maintained huge armies, with continually-developing weapons, their productive power would be diminished while that of Germany increased. This was one of the reasons why the plan for a League of Nations was dovetailed into the draft Treaty of Peace. It was intended there should be gradual limitation of all armaments when the Teutons were permanently reduced in strength.

Territorial Changes

The man-power of the Germans was greatly reduced by a process of disannexation. Alsace-Lorraine, with a population approaching two millions, returned to France. Malmédy, with a small Walloon farming race, went back to Belgium, from which it had been taken at the end of the Napoleonic Wars. Posen, with two million inhabitants, and parts of East and West Prussia and Upper Silesia, with a population of eight hundred thousand, went back to Poland. This annulled the results of the robber raids and intrigues of Frederick II., who had taught the Prussians to make war the national industry from generation to generation. Another half a million people in Schleswig was likely to be lost to Germany, as they were given power to vote themselves back to Denmark. In the lakeland of East Prussia some six hundred thousand Masurians, a Slav race akin to the Poles, had also the power of voting themselves out of debt and infamy, and a corner of land was lost by Memel.

All the German colonies were lost—the League of Nations giving mandates for German East Africa to Great Britain, for South-West Africa to South Africa, for Samoan Islands to New Zealand. Other enemy territories south of the Equator went to Australia, and north of the Equator to Japan. Togoland and Cameroon awaited a joint French and British recommendation to the League, and Kiao-Chau, with the Shantung concessions, was to be ceded to Japan. German State property, works of public utility and many interests and concessions overseas were either lost completely or taken in part payment of indemnities. The Saar coal-mines went to France, as compensation for the destroyed coal-fields round Lens, and provision was made for the Saar valley to be ruled by the League of Nations, preparatory to a vote for union with either France or Germany.

Danzig, the port of Poland, became a free city of the new League, and the iron-mines of Luxemburg were removed from the German Union. The general diminution of German resources was very great, as also was the lessening of German shipping power by way of reparation for the campaign of submarine piracy. The Germans lost all their large merchant ships, half their small vessels, and a quarter of their fishing boats. In addition, they had to build, mainly for the British, one million tons of shipping in the course of five years.

War Indemnities

Direct war indemnities were left rather vague in the Treaty, partly owing perhaps to the difficulty of exactly estimating how much the Germans would be able to pay after losing great resources and many means of commerce. The issue of bonds amounting to five thousand million pounds sterling was arranged, with interest rising to five per cent. and capable of being remitted from Germany in selected material and goods. France, Belgium, and Italy provided that they should receive part payment in coal. Devastated regions were to be restored. Injuries to the persons and property of civilians were to be compensated, and the Allies' expenses in pensions and separation allowances were to be met. In addition to the issue of bonds, one thousand million pounds sterling was to be paid within two years.

German claims against Austria-Hungary, Bulgaria, and Turkey, arising through the war, were transferred to the Allies, together with public moneys deposited by these States in Germany. The ex-German Emperor William II. was to be publicly arraigned by the five Great Powers for a supreme offence against international morality.

Finally, as a guarantee for the execution of the Treaty, the western side of the Rhineland, with the bridge-heads established by Marshal Foch, was to be occupied for fifteen years. The Cologne bridge-head would be given back in five years, if all went well, the Coblenz bridge-head in ten years, and the bridge-head of Mayence in fifteen years, the cost of the Armies of Occupation being a first charge on German resources.

From the purely military point of view, the terms handed to Count von Brockdorff-Rantzau signified the ruin of Prussia proper, as distinguished from her annexations in Germany, made after the Napoleonic Wars and the war with Austria. Old Prussia was cut into two by New Poland. The work of Frederick, Blücher, and Bismarck was undone.

Austria Vanquished and Fallen Submits to the Allies

President Wilson leaving the Chateau of St. Germain after the reception of the Austrian delegates. Inset: Dr. Renner, head of the Plenipotentiaries empowered by the Austrian Republic to sign the Peace Treaty.

M. Clemenceau (in centre), with Mr. Lloyd George (right) and the other Allied Delegates, passing through the guard of honour at St. Germain after delivering the terms of peace to the Austrian Plenipotentiaries on June 2nd. 1919. Dr. Renner, describing his delegation as "one of the parts of the vanquished and fallen Empire," made a conciliatory speech to the representatives of the victorious Allies.

SIGNING THE PEACE TREATY.—Historic scene in the Galerie des Glaces at Versailles when the Peace Treaty was signed, June 28th, 1919. After the German delegates had signed, the allied representatives affixed their signatures. The illustration shows Mr. Lloyd George, head of the British delegation, in the act of signing; and awaiting their turn are Mr. Bonar Law, Mr. Balfour, Lord Milner, Mr. W. M. Hughes, General Botha, and General Smuts. Two documents lay on one table and two on another, and the chief representatives of the Great Powers filed up to these tables one after another, and affixed their signatures to the historic Treaty.

Men Who 'In Faith' Signed the Treaty of Peace

Baron Sonnino, Italy's Foreign Minister and "strong man," who headed the delegation for our Ally.

M. Georges Clemenceau, Prime Minister of France and President of the Peace Conference, whose burning patriotism and tireless energy earned him the name of the "Tiger."

Mr. Lloyd George, who successfully piloted the British Empire through the greatest war of all times, and headed British delegation at signing of Peace Treaty, June 28th, 1919. Upper circle: Dr. Bell, Minister of Communications, and (lower circle) Herr Mueller, the delegates who signed the Treaty for Germany. Right: Dr. Woodrow Wilson, President of United States, and "Father" of the League of Nations.

PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR

M. CLEMENCEAU

"EVER a fighter!" Irresistibly upon the memory, at mention of the name of M. Clemenceau, flow the words of Browning's wonderful "Prospice." When, in 1871, France lay at the foot of her brutal conqueror, he, in his thirties, was one of the little band at Bordeaux who defied the foe. Forty-six years later, in his seventy-sixth year, at the call of his country, he rallied his countrymen for that—

> One fight more,
> The best and the last!

and so proved anew that

> Sudden the worst turns the best to the brave,
> The black minute's at end.

The poilus called him "Father of Victory," and so expressed the feelings of all Frenchmen, from peasant to President. Few of Europe's public men have had a more interesting career.

Early Days in La Vendée

Georges Eugène Benjamin Clemenceau was born on September 28th, 1841, at the Château de l'Aubraie, Mouilleron-en-Pareds, a picturesque little village in La Vendée. His father, a doctor with private means, who attended his poorer neighbours gratuitously, taught him the rudiments of art and imbued him with his own zeal for Republicanism. Clemenceau père was one day taken off to prison for alleged complicity in the Orsini plot. The charge was false and he was released, and he devoted the rest of his days to advocating the restoration of the Republic and the end of Clericalism.

With a view to the adoption of a medical career, young Clemenceau went first to the Lycée and then to the medical school at Nantes. Thence, in 1860, he went to Paris, worked hard as a medical student, and spent two months in prison for promoting a gathering in memory of 1848, at which he was heard by the police to shout, "Vive la République." He gained his medical degree in 1865 with a thesis on "The Generation of Atomic Elements," in which he boldly declared for scientific as against any mystical interpretation of life.

In 1866 he left France for England and the United States to study social conditions in the two countries. In England he felt the influence of John Stuart Mill, whose "Auguste Comte and Positivism" he later translated into French. In America he stayed for about four years. He taught French in a girls' college, married an American—Mary Plummer—and sent correspondence to "Le Temps." Recalled to Paris by the events of 1870, he became Mayor of Montmartre in September. With Hugo and Gambetta he was elected in January, 1871, to the National Assembly at Bordeaux, and there voted against the preliminaries of peace with the Prussian invader. His efforts to save two Communard generals and to secure justice for their companions nearly cost him his life and led to his first duel.

Elected in July, 1871, to the municipal council of Paris, he became in turn its secretary, vice-president, and president, concentrating on education and finance. In February, 1876, by 18,620 votes out of 18,820, Montmartre returned him to the Chamber. Quickly he had Royalists and Clericals marshalling their forces against him.

"The Tiger"

He won many nicknames—"The Kalmuck," "The Tiger," "The Man-eater," and so on—by bringing down ministry after ministry in his fight against opportunism and his antagonism to colonial adventure. Freycinet, Duclerc, Ferry, Brisson, Goblet were among his victims. At first he supported Boulanger, but when he saw through "le brav' général," he "devoured" him also. On the other hand, he secured the election of Carnot to the Presidency. Defending the interdiction of Sardou's play, "Thermidor," in 1891, he declared that the Royalists who applauded it had become Dantonists in their desire to see Robespierre held up to reprobation, and added, in a memorable phrase: "The Revolution is a block from which nothing can be taken away." Thenceforward the Republican groups became known as Le Bloc, the title he adopted for a journal he started in 1900. His friendship for England and a false charge of complicity in the Panama scandal brought about his rejection by the electorate in August, 1893.

But he was not one to sulk in his tent. He chose another forum from which to propagate his principles. Already, in 1880, he had founded his first newspaper, "La Justice." In its pages and in the columns of "Le Journal," "Le Figaro," "Echo de Paris," and "La Depêche" of Toulouse, during his years of exile from the Assembly, he became the foremost and most redoubtable journalist in France.

Some of his journalistic work reappeared in "The Social Struggle" and "The Great Pan," 1895; "On the Thread of the Days," 1900; and "In the Ambushes of Life," 1903. His influence secured the election of Loubet to the Presidency, but the outstanding example of his journalistic career was his vindication of Dreyfus in "L'Aurore" and elsewhere—a labour of some nine years' duration. The title of Zola's famous letter, "J'Accuse!" was M. Clemenceau's invention. He wrote a novel, "The Strongest," 1898; and a satirical one-act play, "The Veil of Happiness," 1901, in which a happy mandarin, to whom sight has been restored, finds in the recovery of vision only a source of misery.

Elected a Senator for the Department of the Var in 1902, he became Minister for the Interior in 1906, and succeeded M. Sarrien as Premier in the same year. He created a Ministry of Labour, inaugurated a programme of social reform; carried out the law separating Church and State, at the same time explaining that liberty of thought included liberty of religious thought; settled the miners' strike in the north and the wine-growers' rising in the south; scored a victory over Germany in connection with the Casablanca affair of 1908, thus effacing the effect of Germany's coercion over the Morocco question in 1905; established the Franco-British Entente; and, defeated on a vote over the condition of the navy, resigned in the summer of 1909.

"Father of Victory"

In 1910 he undertook a lecturing tour in South America and in 1911 wrote a series of articles on that part of the world for the London "Observer." He overthrew M. Caillaux in 1912, and M. Briand in 1913; founded "L'Homme Libre" (The Free Man), in which he severely criticised administrative delay during the war, in November, 1917; formed the fourth ministry of the war; and, restoring its old name to "L'Homme Libre," which he had changed to "L'Homme Enchainé" (The Man in Chains), because of its frequent suppression by the authorities, declared for "La guerre intégrale" (All for the war). Crushing defeatism and Boloism, he restored vigour to the French armies and inspired the French people with new courage at a time when it was the fond hope of Germany that the French war spirit had been bled white.

Frequently at the front, where, as already stated, he became affectionately regarded as the "Father of Victory," he induced the Allies to accept Marshal Foch—shortly after that gallant officer and gentleman had been retired—as generalissimo; and never once wavered in his faith in the ultimate triumph of right. With Foch he was included among the "immortals" of the French Academy. In December, 1918, he shared with Foch a tumultuous welcome in London, and even his enemies condemned the crime by which a lunatic named Emile Cottin attempted to kill him with a Browning revolver as he was leaving his house in the Rue Franklin on February 19th, 1919. In the peace negotiations he demanded guarantees that France should have security against any future aggression on the part of her inhuman neighbour. He declared that it remained for the living to complete the magnificent work of the dead.

Short, but sturdily built, with well-poised head, strong of feature, with bead-like black eyes, the embodiment of energy, hiding beneath a stolid exterior a fund of deep feeling and capacity for emotion, M. Clemenceau remained from boyhood wedded to Republican principles. A charming companion, an abstainer from strong drink and tobacco, and a man of simple habits, whose chief income has come from the exercise of his pen, and whose chief relaxations have been gardening and collecting objects of art, he has exhibited the gifts of the seer without the drawbacks of the dreamer; and in 1919 was looking forward to a rest well earned by half a century of political strife.

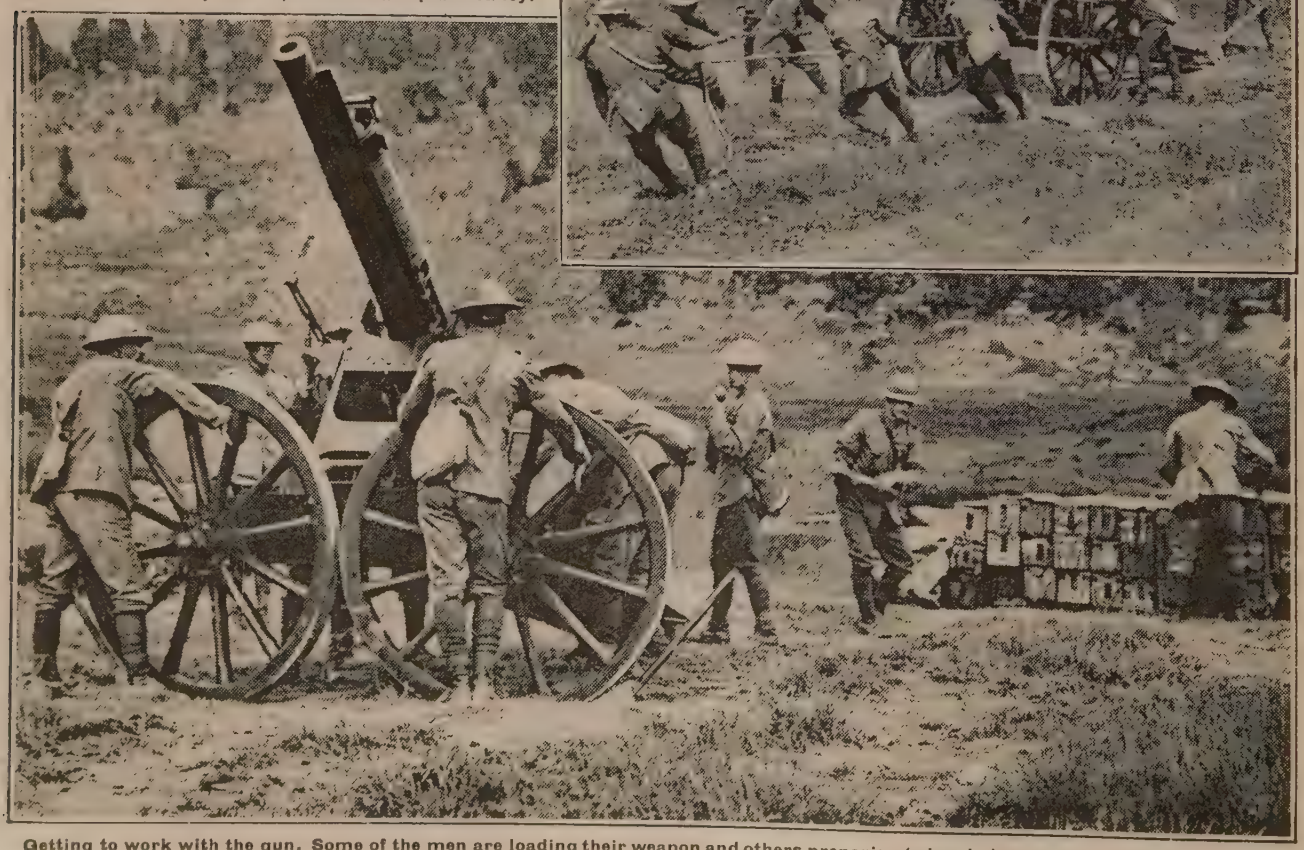
Italy's Crowning Victories

Italy's final offensive against Austria opened on October 24th, 1918. The Tenth Italian Army, which comprised also the British forces, was commanded by General Lord Cavan. While the latter crossed the Piave and secured the eastern bank, the Eighth and Twelfth Armies attacked in the Grappa region. By October 31st the Allies took 50,000 prisoners.

SOWING AN ITALIAN MINE-FIELD.—Italian naval men were especially expert in all matters relating to torpedoes, submarines, and marine mining. In this remarkable view of the stern of one of their mine-layers may be seen the huge size of the mines. They were ranged in two rows and were dropped astern while the vessel was under way, at intervals duly marked on the vessel's chart.

Handy With British Guns in Italian Heights

British artillerymen on the Italian front. Getting ready to fire on the enemy from a position in an upland valley.



Getting to work with the gun. Some of the men are loading their weapon and others preparing to hand along a regular supply of shells from their munition dump. Inset above: The gun squad is seen strenuously hauling the piece on to the selected position.

Triumphant Italians Installed in Trieste

General Pettiti reviewing the Italian garrison of Trieste on November 11th, 1918. It was in the afternoon of October 30th that General Pettiti arrived in Trieste Harbour on board the Audace, and took possession of the city of Trieste in the name of the King of Italy.

Troops of the Italian garrison marching past General Pettiti. Trieste had ever remained devoted to its Italianity, and enthusiasm attended the rehoisting of the Italian tricolour on the Tower of San Giusto in token of the liberation of the city from Austrian rule.

Allied Troops Who Shared in Italy's Triumph

British soldiers in Italy taking advantage of a shallow running stream to cleanse their motor-lorries of some of the dust and dirt accumulated in the rapid and decisively victorious military operations of October, 1918.

Italian cavalry swimming their horses across a stream. Inset above: General the Earl of Cavan, commanding the British forces in Italy, talking to General Graziani, commanding the Twelfth French Corps, before a parade of troops held for the presentation of decorations. Lord Cavan had command of the Italian Tenth Army on the Piave, with which the 7th British Division was brigaded.

How Italy Swept Austria from Adriatic Sea

In the advance to Trieste an Italian patrol officer dropped on one knee and, kissing his fingers, gently touched the redeemed soil.

In the moment of triumph. Italian troops carrying Hill 235, north of Jamiano, in the advance from Castagnevizza to the sea.

To counter the danger of Austrian raids by sea and air the Italians ran armoured trains up and down the railway flanking the Adriatic.

The Italian Navy did invaluable work in policing the Mediterranean and in convoying transports carrying troops of all the Allies.

On the Edge of Great Events Among the Alps

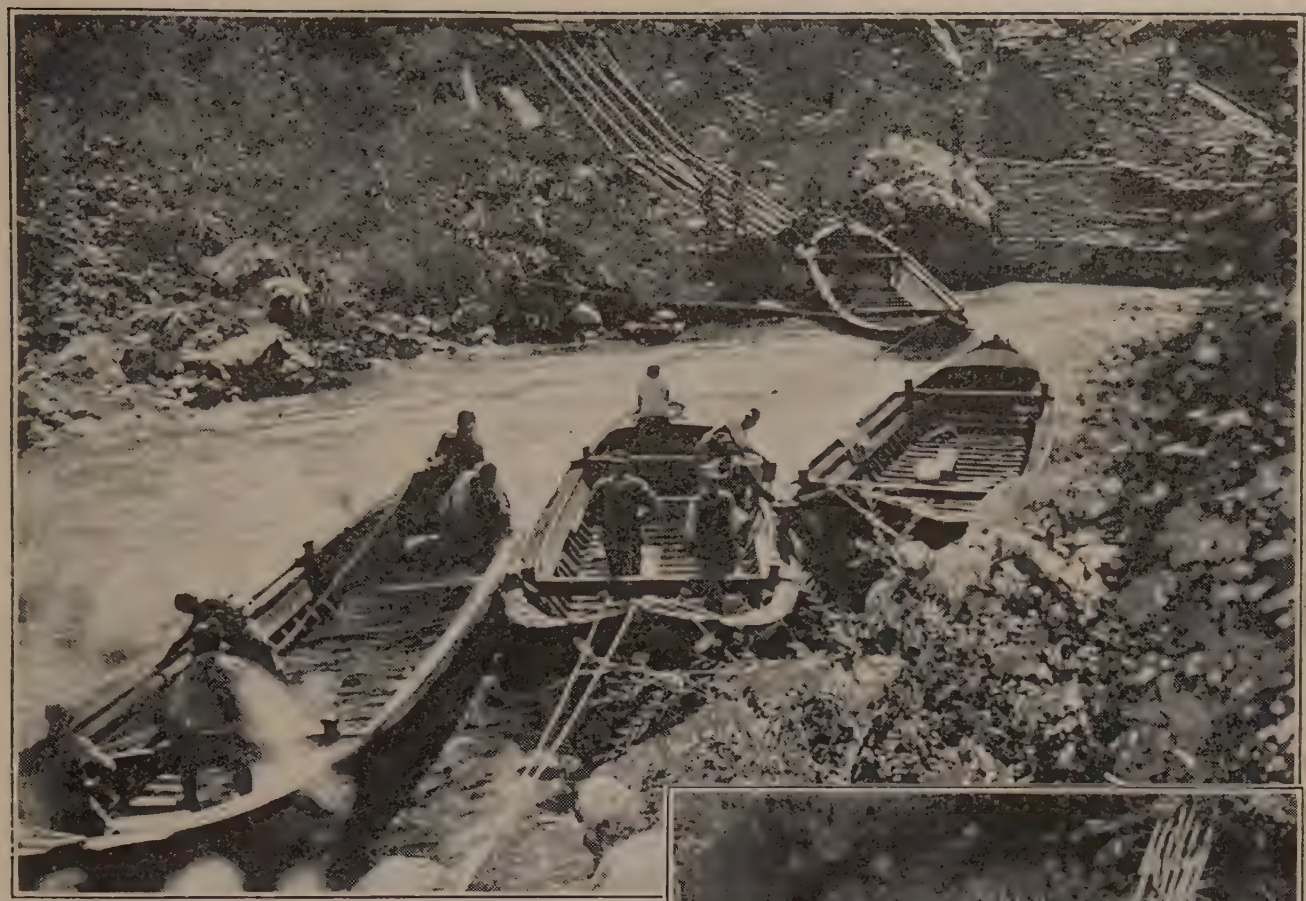
British Official Photographs

British officers studying a map to supplement information received from Italian soldiers. Left: Motor-lorry which came within an ace of toppling over a precipice.

Watching the movements of the enemy from the cover of a brambled bank. Right: Artillery forward observation officers directing by telephone the fire of their battery.

A British gunner spotting enemy aeroplanes, and (right) another view of the observation-post shown in the third picture. December, 1917, found the British forces in Italy installed in their sector, and active in artillery registration, patrols, and counter-battery work.

Italian Boats that Went by Mountain Ways



Boats for forming one of the fourteen bridges which the Italians threw across the Isonzo in preparation for their great advance.

One of the bridges of boats successfully thrown across the Isonzo, and (right) the method by which the boats were lowered down the mountain slopes. Below the points they bridged the Italians formed a barrage of sandbags to lessen the force of the swift current.

Titanic Feat of Italian Seamen at Trieste

Heavy Italian artillery passing through Castelfranco on its way to the front, where "General Winter" helped to hold the enemy in the heights, and where spirited attacks by the Italians resulted in the taking of many prisoners. (French official.)

Heroic enterprise of Italian sailors in a night attack at Trieste. Creeping up in the darkness in small launches, the seamen spent over two hours in cutting the steel hawsers that held the harbour net, while Austrian searchlights looked for danger in the sky. Having opened the harbour, two Italian boats stole in and torpedoed the Wien and the Monarch, sinking the former and damaging the latter.

H.M.S. HERCULES PASSING THROUGH KIEL CANAL ON DECEMBER 4, 1918, CHEERED BY RETURNING BRITISH PRISONERS OF WAR.

To face page 3360

Italy's Road to Victory Through the Mountains

Oxen-drawn road-roller at work where Italian soldiers were engaged in making new roads in Albania. At this task, one of those most essential in modern warfare, the Italians proved themselves remarkably efficient on the various fronts on which they were fighting.

Convoy of supplies traversing a mountain road constructed by Italian sappers. Mr. Perceval Gibbon, in a message, said that in the north beyond the Isonzo the Alpini, the Bersaglieri, the infantry, and the Territoriale were road-making over miles of conquered ground "which is now for ever Italian."

Great Guns to the Firing-line by Powerful Crane—

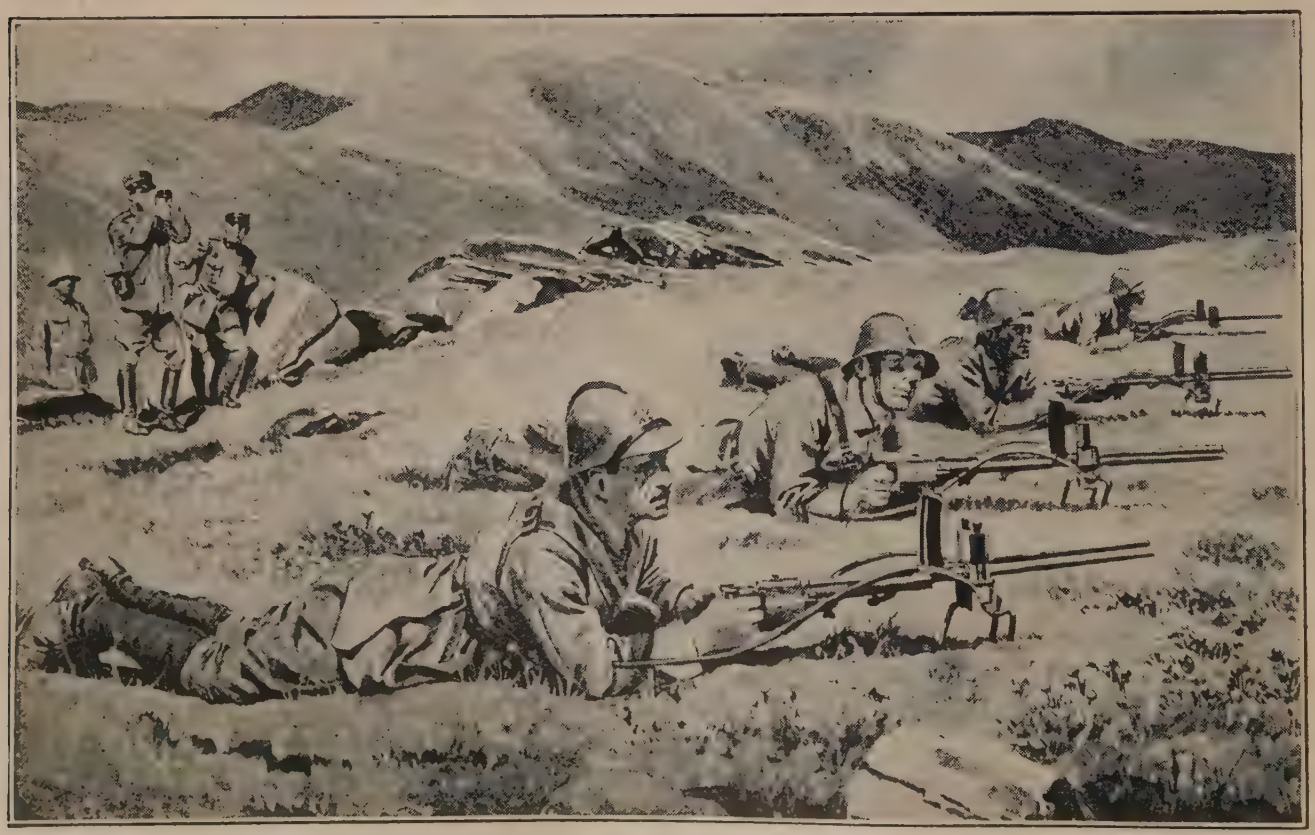
The monotony of trench warfare could only be realised by those who had done duty underground for many weeks "when there is nothing to report," so to speak. Mountain warfare, however, though quite as protracted, was unique in the excitement and exhilaration afforded to participants. Imagine this enormous piece of Italian ordnance swinging across a yawning Alpine chasm, attached by steel hawsers to a powerful crane. In this way much of the Italian mountain artillery was lifted into almost inaccessible positions from which the Austrian forts could be shelled with the greatest possible effect.

—Wounded Men Return by Wire Through Space

On the facing page appears a photograph of Italian Alpini hauling a heavy gun up to a mountain peak by means of a crane. In a similar manner wounded gunners, after having been temporarily treated, were sent down to a base on a wire. Placed on a stretcher, so designed to keep horizontal, the wounded were rapidly sent from place to place. To carry an injured man down some of the dangerous precipitous passes of the Alpine war zone was impossible, and no safer, quicker, or more ingenious method could be devised than that shown at work in the above illustration.

How Italy Guarded Against Prisoner Spies

Mr. Julius Price, official artist with the Italian Army, saw this unusual spectacle of Austrian prisoners being brought blindfolded out of a transport and feeling their way down the gangway to the quay, whence Italian Carabinieri marched them, still blindfolded, to the railway station—an exceptional precaution against observation by prisoners who might prove to be spies.



Italian machine-gun section in action against the Austrians in Albania, using very light weapons called "revolver" machines. On July 6th, 1918, the Italians, in liaison with French troops farther east, and helped by British monitors from the sea, began an offensive on the Adriatic coast, capturing Berat and working up northwards towards the important Austrian port of Durazzo.

The Americans on Land & Sea

On land American troops bore a notable part in achieving final victory. A brilliant episode was the straightening out of the St. Mihiel salient, September 12th-15th, 1918, by the First American Army. On September 26th the latter force, along with a French army, attacked on both sides of the Argonne Forest, and for weeks fought stubbornly in this narrow but important sector. By November 3rd the Argonne was cleared.

SAFEGUARDING THE U.S. ARMY ON ITS WAY TO EUROPE.—This drawing by Mr. C. M. Padday, made from material officially supplied, illustrates an incident that occurred to one of the many transports that daily left America. A submarine was sighted, and all the troops crowded on deck to watch, with the naval gunners, an escorting destroyer and patrol vessel engage the enemy.

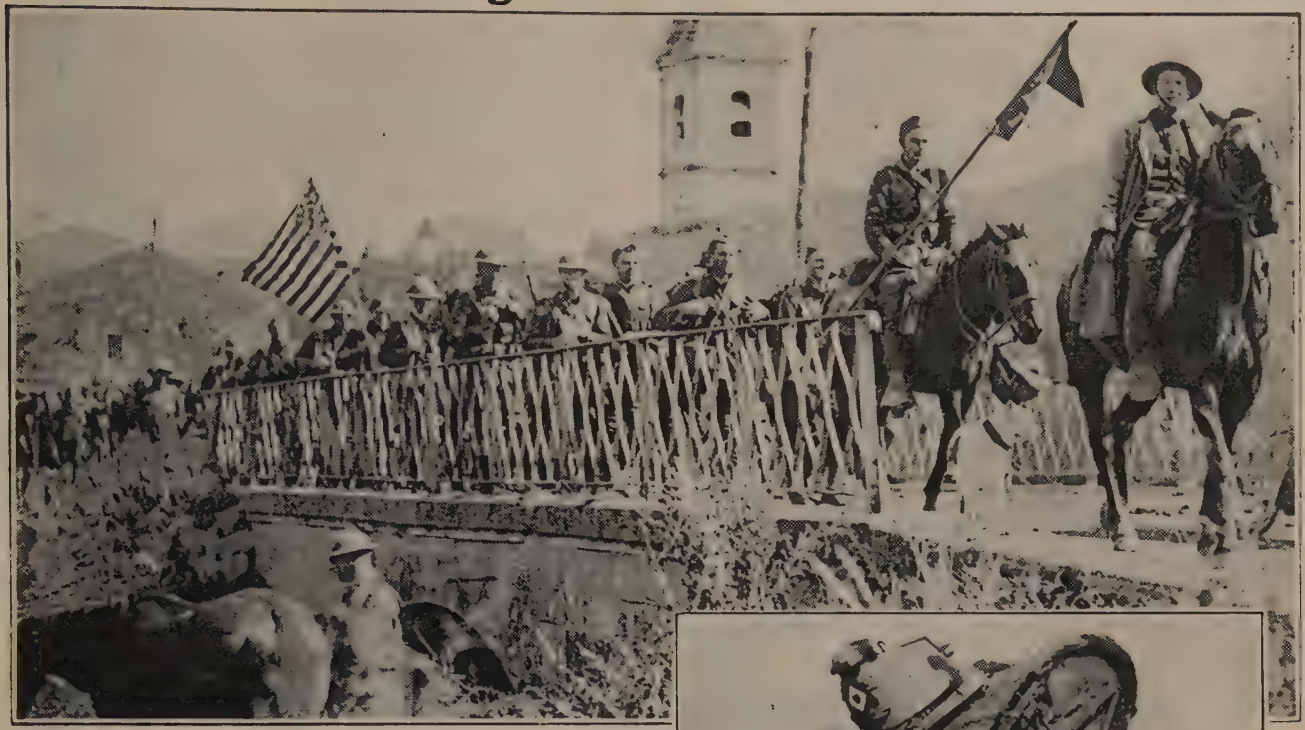
American Manhood Makes Good on the Marne

American soldiers going into battle in open order. It was thus that they approached Juvigny, which they captured on August 30th, 1918, advancing up a horribly bare and exposed slope swept by machine-gun fire to the plateau on top of which the town stood.

U.S. howitzer battery in action. Right: Pontoon left behind by the retreating Germans. U.S. engineers repaired the boat and used it in crossing the Marne.

American troops preparing a position in a French cornfield. In the Somme sector U.S. soldiers helped in the capture of Grossaires Wood on August 11th, 1918, and recovered for France a town, a ravine, and wheatfields equal in area to Central Park, New York.

America's Winning Ace in the St. Mihiel Salient

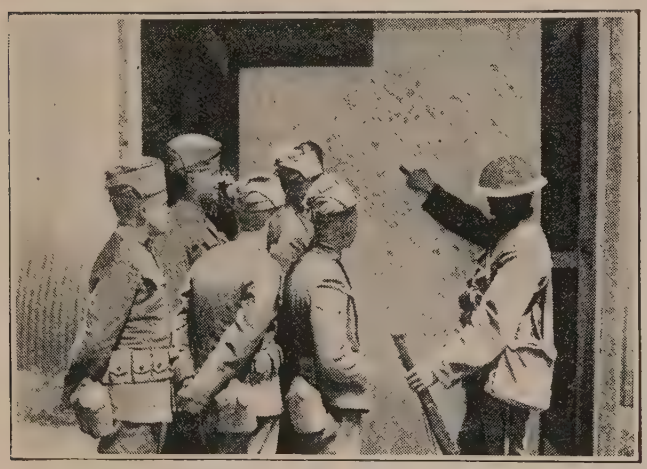


Engineers of the American Army returning with flying colours from their work at the front in the St. Mihiel salient.

First batch of German prisoners taken by the Americans in their brilliant coup in the St. Mihiel salient, Sept. 12th, 1918; and (inset above) one of their light Tanks—"Ace of Hearts"—going over the top in the action by which they won the formidable hill of Mont Sec.

Ready to Reinforce Those Who Fight for Freedom

Men of the U.S. armies who were training in France undergoing instruction from British sergeants in the use of machine-guns. On the left a couple of young gunners learn the working of the cartridge-belt, and (right) a sergeant holds forth to a large class.



A British soldier who has "been there" explains a part of the battle-map with which he is familiar to five Americans. Right: American signallers at work.

Group of American troops in training in France receiving a special lesson concerning the rifle—"the soldier's best friend." Right: A machine-gun section in training take up their position at a point admirably suited for "carrying on" with their particular weapon.

Resourceful, Resolute, and Not to be Stayed

An American artillery unit, as a result of continuous fire, ran short of ammunition. The men volunteered to make a three-mile trip down a road, every inch of which was shell-swept, in order to get fresh supplies. Before the return trip was accomplished all the horses had been killed, whereupon the men harnessed themselves to the caisson waggons and dragged them up by hand.

Halt! This stirring picture shows a shell bursting in the middle of a road along which a battery is advancing. Instinctively the horses turn their heads, while the gunners wait to learn whether it was a single lucky shot or the first of a bombardment ranged upon the road.

Forward With Freedom's Fine Fighting Reserves

Troop train passing through a Paris suburban station carrying enthusiastic American soldiers to the western front. The ever growing American armies—at the end of August, 1918, it was announced that 1,500,000 troops were in or approaching France—gave magnificent evidence of their great quality during the fighting early in the Fifth Year of the war.

American troops being trained by British officers in France. General Mangin, addressing the American Third Army Corps on its share in the great allied counter-offensive, said: "You went to the battle as to a feast. You have shown yourselves worthy sons of your great country, and you have won the admiration of your comrades in arms."

America's First Army Moves Towards the Moselle

American troops fighting forward from a newly-captured position, and (inset) making themselves comfortable, with the skill and philosophy of tried campaigners, on the slopes near their lines.

American machine-guns and supply waggons standing by in a shattered town in the eastern half of the St. Mihiel salient for the word to press on towards the Moselle Valley. The flattening out of the salient was the first great triumph of the First American Army.

American Troops in the Triumphant Advance

Americans on the march in the St. Mihiel salient, showing heights of Montsec, which they carried on September 14th, 1918. Inset: A street barricade in Fismes which failed to stay the Americans.

American munition convoy struggling over a difficult bit of road. These official photographs illustrate some of the doings of the First American Army which made such valuable contribution to the Allies' triumphs by flattening out the St. Mihiel salient, and co-operating in the French advance in the region of Verdun and with British troops in breaking the Hindenburg line near St. Quentin.

America Mobilising Her Many Millions

Mgr. Lavell, on the steps of New York Cathedral, reviews troops of the 69th Regiment on their way to a State Mobilisation Camp.

West Point Cadets marching down Pennsylvania Avenue, one of the world's finest processional ways, towards the Capitol in Washington, and (inset) the band and 1st Battalion of the 7th Regiment marching down Fifth Avenue, New York.

America's Aid in Mitigating the Wounds of War

French Official Photographs

Dressing-station in a village church on the Meuse, with American cars for the conveyance of wounded from the front.

American ambulance-car taking up wounded men from a village behind the western front for removal to a hospital.

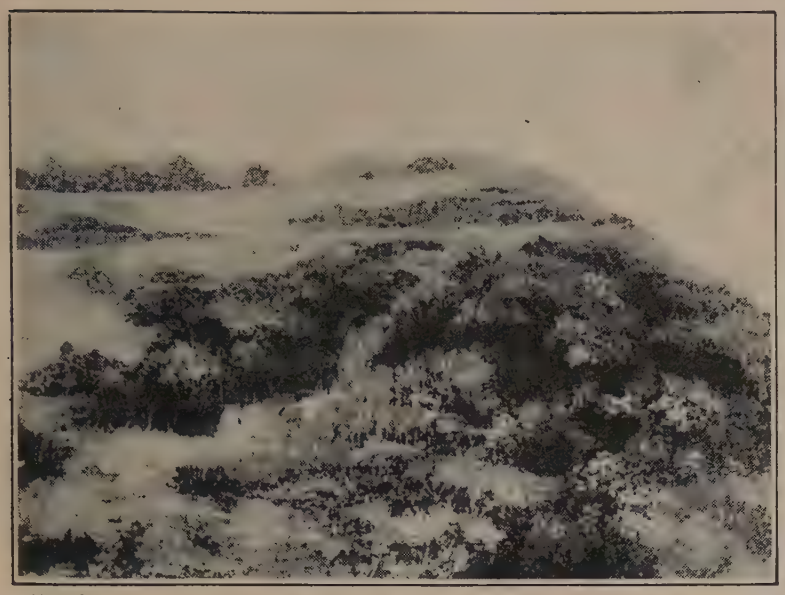
Club headquarters at Passy for the American motorists who devoted themselves to the task of succouring the wounded.

Sterilising surgical dressings at an American institution Paris, maintained for the making of such by lady workers.

Convalescent patients taking the air on the veranda of the American hospital for wounded soldiers at Neuilly, near Paris.

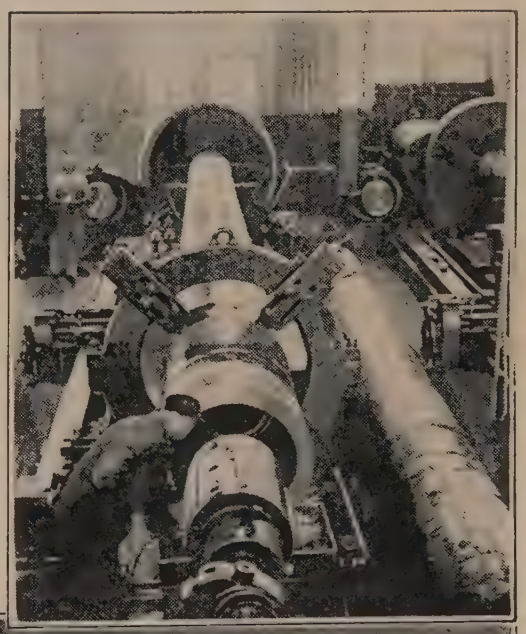
Busy centre of benevolence. Miss Murray Vail (left) in the director's office of the American Committee for French wounded.

Activity of Shipways and Gun-Works in America

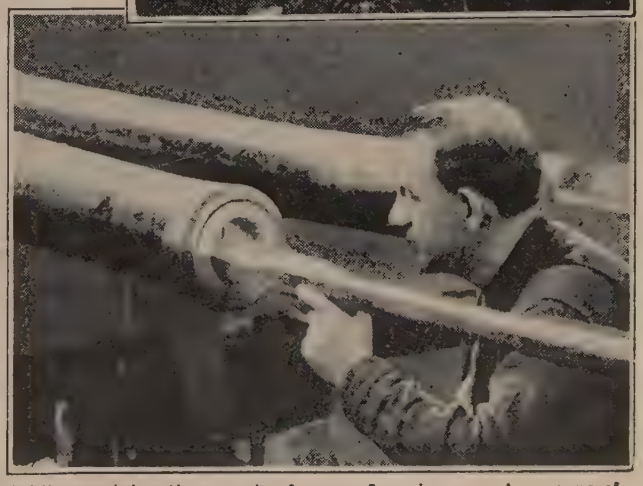


Hog Island as it was three months before the American Government determined to convert its stretch of arid land into a great shipyard.

American girl workers who wear masks for protection against gas used in fumigating cotton cargoes.

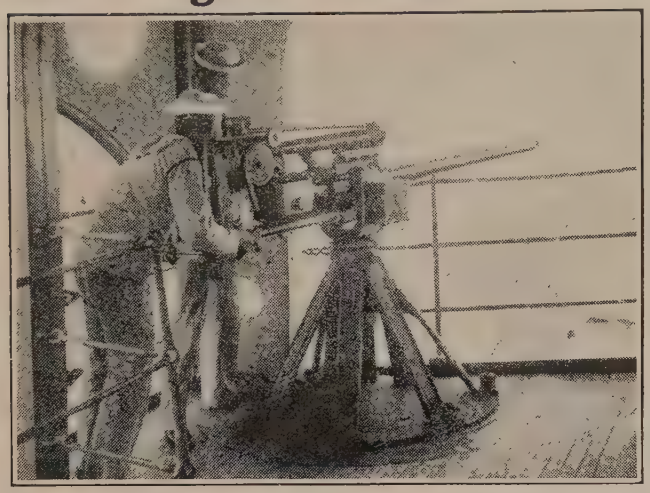


The island shown in the first photograph after three months—with shipways for fifty vessels in the making. Right: Boring an American big gun.



Boring the breech of a gun at an American munition works; and (right) examining the muzzle of a new American gun by means of movable mirrors, to make sure that there are no defects in the metal.

Taking a Hand in the War Against Piracy



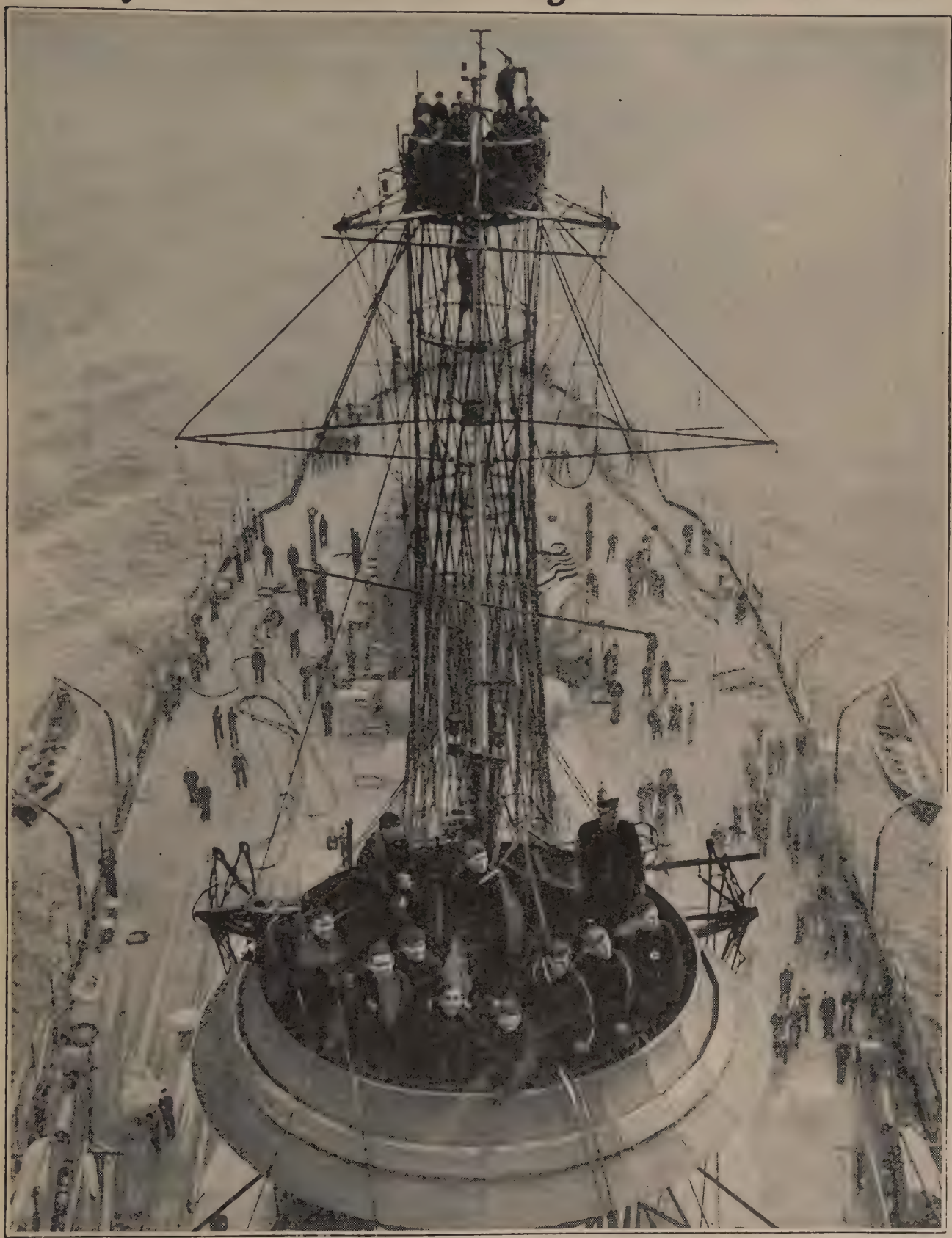
Gunners on board a U.S. battleship engaged in peaceful ceremony of firing a salute, but later ordered for sterner work.

Preparing for action. Men of the U.S. battleship New York busily employed in loading ammunition for one of its heavy guns.

Gun practice in the American Navy. On board a warship one of the gunners is carefully sighting his weapon before firing.

Sturdy American bluejackets in the New York Navy Yard engaged in going through their small-arms drill in preparation for the stern work that is before them. Above: Three large mines of the latest pattern, ready for use, on an American mine-layer.

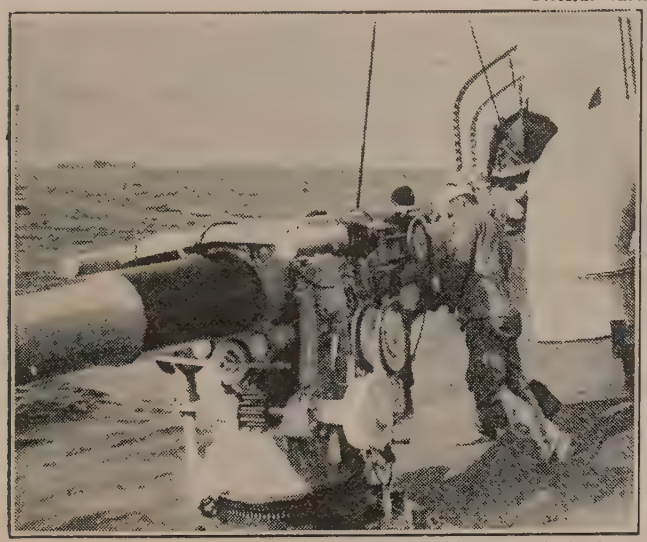
Ready to Vindicate Her Right to Sail the Seas



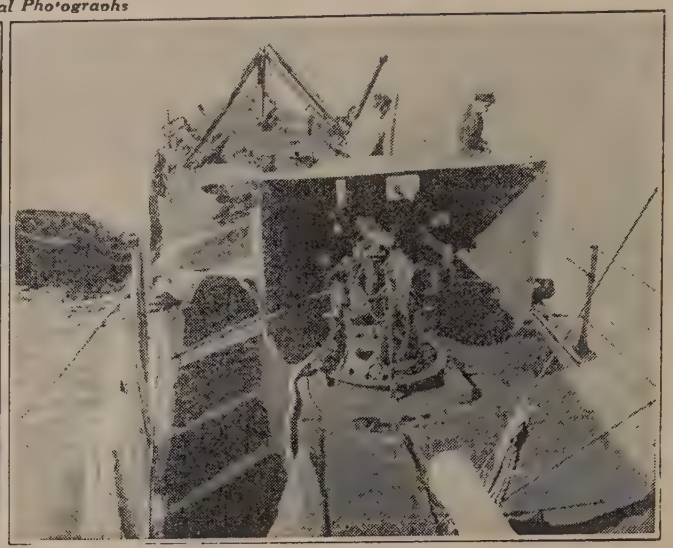
The U.S. Dreadnought New York, taken from the Manhattan Bridge as she was proceeding down the East River, New York. The New York carries ten 14 in. guns, four forward and six astern, and twenty-one 5-pounders, together with four 21 in. torpedo-tubes. Her normal displacement is 27,000 tons, and her complement 1,015. The men in the foreground are gathered in the fore fire-control top, where the spotters and range observers are stationed in action. Lattice masts are characteristic of American battleships. They are so made that several shots can strike them without carrying away all the top hamper.

Glimpses of Some Warships of the American Navy

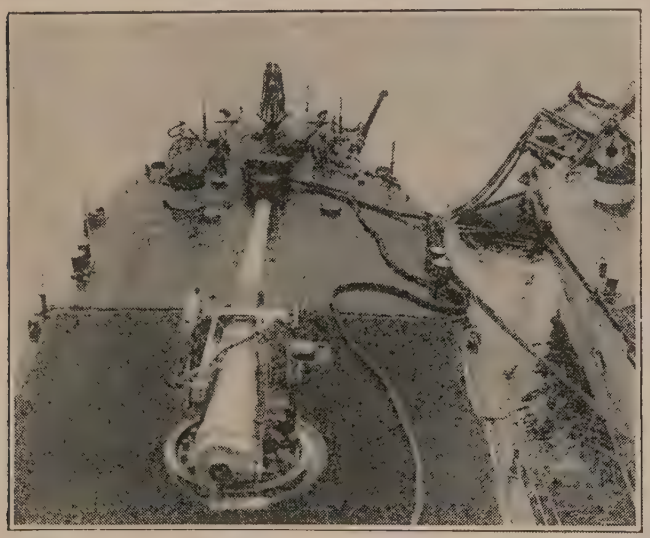
Official Naval Photographs



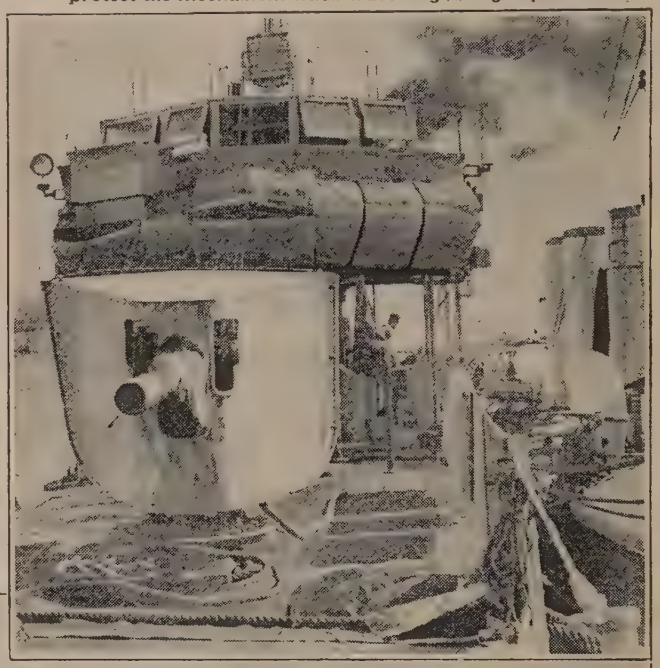
American sailors at gun practice training a gun on the deck of a battleship awash in a running sea.

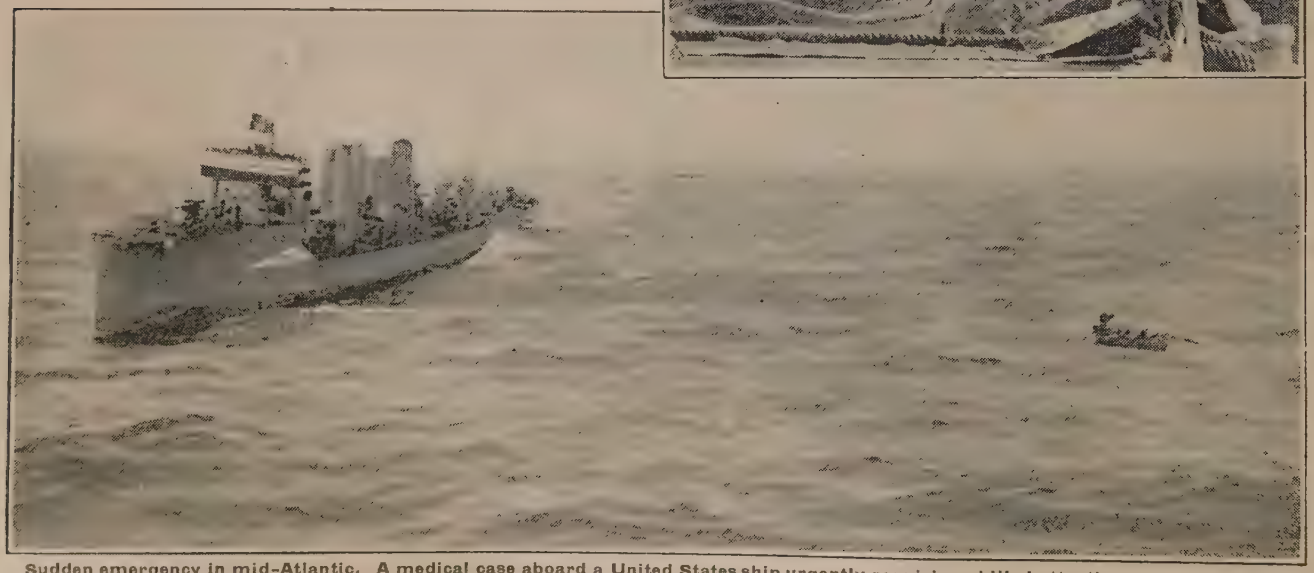


Spray shield to the forecastle gun on an American war vessel, to protect the mechanism when travelling at high speed.



View aft of an American warship in a certain port. Right: Gun-shield and bridge fitted with plate-glass windows.





Sudden emergency in mid-Atlantic. A medical case aboard a United States ship urgently requiring skilled attention, a boat is lowered to fetch the doctor from another vessel, which fortunately happens to be in the neighbourhood, with a medical officer on board.

America Getting Ready for War in All Elements

Gas-mask adopted by the American War Department for the use of the U.S. forces.

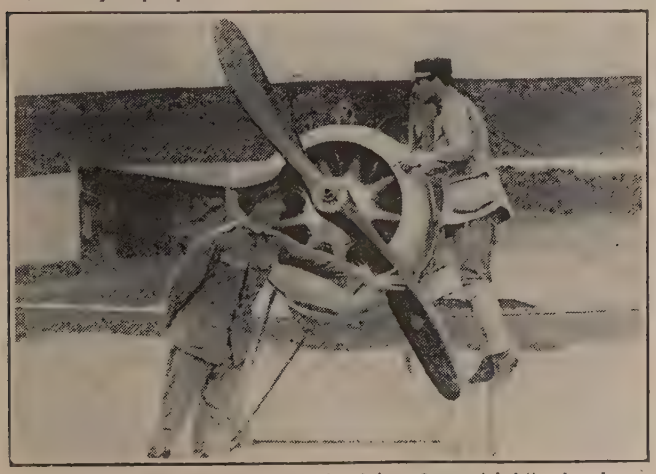
One of the latest American types of dirigible making its maiden trip over home waters.

American soldiers at Fort Meyer, Virginia, practising bomb-throwing.

British and American sailors typifying the unity of purpose of their countries.

One of the many war posters by means of which America called upon her citizens.

American and Canadian guards on the bridge linking their lands at Niagara.



Lieut. E. Lemaitre, of the French Flying Corps (right), showing his Nieuport battle-plane to Capt. J. C. Batelf, in command of an American flying station.

Serving out soup to American soldiers in France from a motor "cookhouse." The Americans employ "autos" for all branches of their Army service. (British official photograph.)

The First U.S. President to Visit Europe

Captain Twining, Admiral Sims, and Commander Babcock, aboard the U.S.S. Wyoming, sight the George Washington bringing President Wilson to France.

The George Washington with President Wilson aboard passing through the lines of the welcoming Allied Fleet at Brest on December 13th, 1918. Inset: Outside the pier at Brest the President was received with a popular ovation that brought delighted smiles to his face.

American Activity Against All Freedom's Foes

American soldiers in an English camp removing their cookhouse. They found this method quicker than taking the house to pieces. Right: Ohio National Guardsmen with the American forces in France proceeding to their posts in the front trenches.

American construction company laying timbers in a new dock two miles and a half long at an American base port in France. In circle: Americans creeping forward to attack enemy trenches.

American sailors preparing to fire a gun aboard one of the new torpedo-boat destroyers built in great numbers in 1918 for immediate service. Right: Mr. Wilson, one of the American delegates in Scotland, putting a rivet into a standard ship at John Brown's yard.

Welcome Home for Heroes of America's Navy

Arrival at New York of the United States Fleet from Europe. Anxiety of the American sailors to be first to land "home." The officer had shouted the order "Disembark" as the photograph was taken. Inset: The U.S. Overseas Fleet back in the Hudson River.

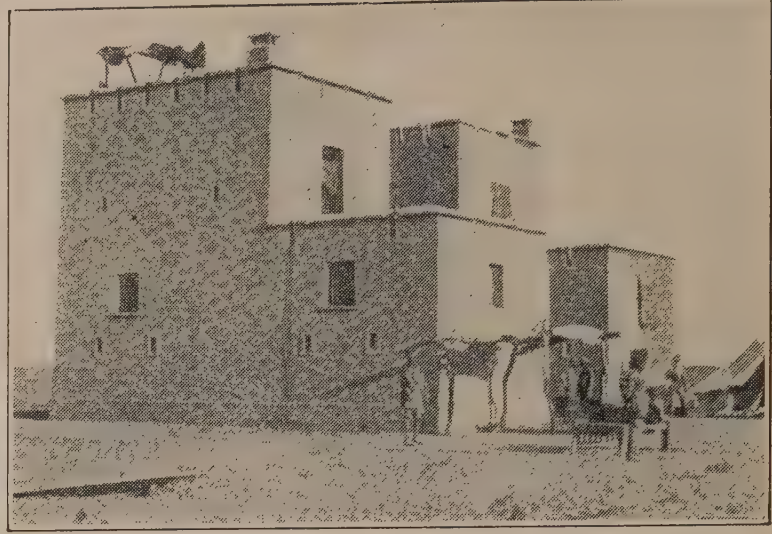
America accorded her sailors a magnificent reception on their return home after bearing their part in the great struggle for "Humanity" in Europe. Some of the sailors are here seen marching down one of the thronged and decorated avenues of New York.

Final Victories over the Turk

General Allenby opened his final offensive against the Turks in Palestine, September 19th, 1918, when he broke the enemy line, capturing 18,000 prisoners. Pressing on the heels of the routed Turks, he occupied Nazareth, Acre, and Damascus. In Mesopotamia, General Marshall began his final campaign, October 18th, and by the 26th had cut the Turks' communications with Mosul. On October 30th Turkey signed an armistice, and the conquest of Palestine and Mesopotamia was complete.

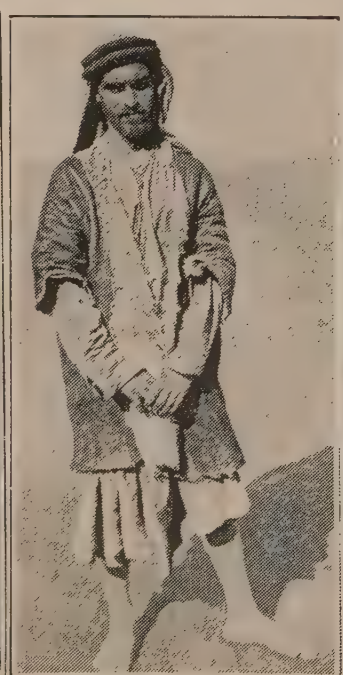
PALESTINE PRISONER'S VOLUBLE PROTEST.—A stern-faced young British soldier in Palestine in charge of an old Arab sheikh who has been placed under arrest. The lightly-garbed Briton ignores the voluble and gesticulatory protests of his captive.

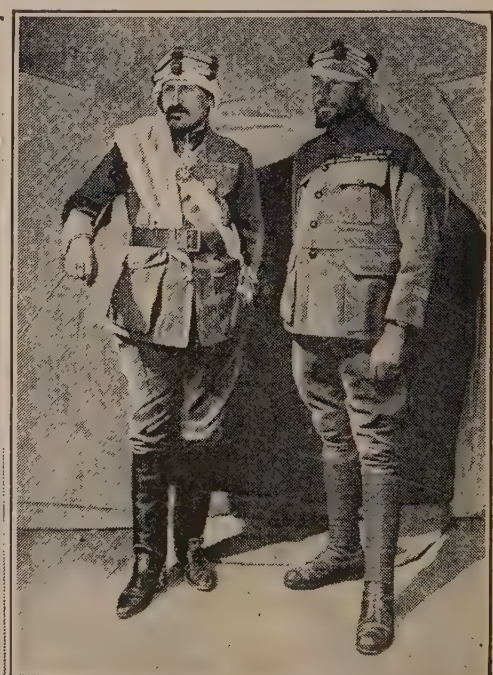
Help from the Hedjaz in Ousting the Ottoman



Railway station in Mesopotamia on the "Berlin-Bagdad" Railway, built by German forethought to serve also as a fort. It was taken by the British.

At cross-roads in the stony ways of Judean foothills—a point on which the British soldiers fixed the humorous designation of "Ludgate Circus." In oval: An Arab in Palestine threshing out corn with the aid of a mixed team of two oxen, a donkey, and a camel.





Frenchmen who were operating as officers with the Arabs in the Hedjaz, and (in centre) a Turk captured in the Hedjaz Campaign. Right: Capt. Pisani, in command of the French detachment co-operating with the Arabs in Arabia, and Colonel Ibrahim Ben Tabit.

Hedjaz Arabs in Arms Against Turkish Tyranny

Arab allies of the Entente making bricks for camp construction. The scene depicted is in Northern Hedjaz, a part of Western Arabia known as Arabia Petræa (or stony), where the natives joined in the great war for freedom against the tyranny which the Potsdam oligarchy essayed to spread anew from the North Sea to the Pacific.

Arab sharpshooters firing at a Turkish aeroplane on an observation flight. The picture gives a vivid impression of the changes wrought by the war in the wastes of the desert. Arab co-operation against the Turks in the land bordering on the Suez Canal and the Red Sea added materially to the discomfiture of their old-time oppressors.

General Sir Edmund Allenby

By HAMILTON FYFE

IF you could persuade him to dress up in chain armour he would look very much like a twelfth-century Crusader. He is more than common tall, well over six feet, and broad-shouldered in fitting proportion. I am sure he could swing a battle-axe with dire effect.

Nor would his features contradict the resemblance. The square face with domed forehead and resolute jaw-line might well have belonged to one of Cœur de Lion's Norman knights. It is a face that proclaims character, the character of a man who pushes through whatever he undertakes; who is energetic, self-reliant, enterprising. If it were not for the kindly eyes and the frequent smile, you might suppose him as ruthless in his methods as some of those earlier Crusaders. They reassure you that "the Bull" has another side to his character. He is famous for his "charges," but all who know him will bear witness also to his good-nature, to his even temper and sense of fun.

Such is the man whose name will be linked in history with those of King Richard of England, King Louis of France, and the other leaders of the earlier effort to free the Land of the Holy Places from Moslem rule. He was born in 1861, comes of an East Anglian family, was sent to Haileybury, passed well into and out of Sandhurst, and in the early 'eighties joined the "Skillingers," the 6th Inniskilling Dragoons.

Disregarder of Convention

The luck which put the young cavalry subaltern into this regiment had something to do with his rapid success in his profession. He would have risen anyhow. Nothing could keep such a man down. But the fact that the "Skillingers" had no "frills," that they were kept abroad, mostly in the veldt in South Africa, for a great many years on end; that the officers lived the lives of soldiers, not of loafers in English garrison towns, had an effect upon young Allenby. It helped to bring out the stuff he had in him. He developed a healthy disregard of convention, a common-sense habit of taking the simple, natural course, even though it cut through stubborn traditions.

Thus he worked at the War Office in hot weather in his shirt sleeves. One morning a fussy, self-important visitor looked in and expressed his surprise.

"This is nothing," Allenby said. "If you'd dropped in later when the sun gets really scorching, you'd have probably found me minus several other garments as well."

"Might be a prosperous stockbroker," was said of him while he was Inspector of Cavalry. This was after his long term of service in South Africa, with spells of fighting in Bechuanaland and Zululand, and after the South African War, throughout almost the whole of which he commanded his regiment. He was one of our most successful cavalry leaders out there, and along with his skill and judgment he displayed an unusual indisposition to put himself forward. When the troops entered Barberton, Colonel Allenby was asked to take the lead. "My men and their horses are fatigued," he said, and the regiment rode in quietly next day.

After the South African War he commanded the 5th (Royal Irish) Lancers for a time, and then was given the 4th Cavalry Brigade. As brigadier he was effective and still unconventional. At manœuvres he asked one of the umpires some question. "I'm not here to give information," was the testy reply. "No, no," said Allenby, looking him up and down; "of course not. I ought to have realised that you are here for ornament!"

Leap to the Front Rank

Allenby was a "coming man" clearly when he was at the War Office, and the war gave him an opportunity to leap straight into the front rank of the distinguished soldiers of his generation. He was given command of the Cavalry Corps in the Expeditionary Force, and it was the ability with which he covered the retreat after Mons that chiefly saved us from disaster. With his 4,000 troopers he spread out a network of patrols and small columns over a front of twenty-five miles. Field-Marshal French didn't overstate General Allenby's services when he wrote in his despatch:

"The undoubted moral superiority which our cavalry has obtained over that of the enemy has been due to the skill with which he turned to the best account the qualities inherent in the splendid troops he commanded."

The management of that retreat made Allenby sure of his powers. He had proved now that he possessed the highest qualities both as tactician and as leader of men. It was very difficult work to keep the enemy off while our guns and infantry went back and back and back. The general had one narrow escape himself. An encircling movement was attempted by the German cavalry. Allenby rode hard all one night with a French guide and with the best part of a cavalry division following as hard as they could. Luckily the tired Germans stopped just when they were on the point of rounding up the British force, which got safely away.

Arrival in Palestine

Early in 1915 General Allenby "pulled the situation out of the fire" at the Second Battle of Ypres. I was in Russia then, and for long afterwards, but I was back when "the Bull" charged the enemy in the Battle of Arras, and charged so fiercely that in twelve hours 11,000 prisoners had passed through his corps' cages and he had captured 145 guns. He had been an army commander then for two years. The Third Army was his, that which has done so magnificently under Sir Julian Byng. He stayed with it until the summer of 1917, when he went out to take command in Palestine.

He found the Turks strongly entrenched, and our men entrenched just as strongly opposite to them—position warfare in its most tedious form. Headquarters had been in Cairo, 300 miles away, and it seemed as if stagnation might continue for ever.

With Allenby's coming the atmosphere changed. He declined to stay in Cairo. He trundled across the desert in a Ford car, and set up his headquarters in a wooden hut ten miles from the front line. He set to work at once to organise railways and make roads. He commandeered all the beer in Egypt for his thirsty troops and road-makers. In four months he had prepared a heavy blow, and he struck with full assurance of its taking effect. On the last day of October he took Beersheba; on November 7th Gaza fell, on November 17th his forces were in Jaffa, December 7th saw Hebron occupied, the next day Jerusalem was in our hands.

This was an excellently planned campaign. The design unrolled itself piece by piece until the final objective was reached. Those about him during this time said that the general was never elated when things went as he had planned them, never depressed if they went a little wrong. He gave the impression not only of knowing exactly what he was about, but of knowing what the enemy's thoughts and intentions were also, and of being confident that all would go well.

After this came a long period of quiet. Allenby was preparing another blow. The Turks were terribly afraid of this new British commander. "Allah nabi" they called him, which, in Arabic, means "the man sent by God." They were afraid of him, but they did not understand him, or they would have known that all the time he kept so quiet he was making ready to fall upon them unawares.

A Napoleonic Plan

Long ago he had declared that the best way to outwit your enemy was to do something which he did not think you likely to attempt. Now he made ready with patience and thoroughness of preparation to carry out a daring strategic plan of which neither the Turks nor their German advisers had the least suspicion.

It was Napoleonic in its simplicity, in its daring, in its success. With a rush "the Bull" broke through the enemy's front, then, with the instinct of a cavalry leader, he sent all the horse he could collect through the gap. As a finished operation it is the finest thing in the war, excepting Tannenberg. Two armies were utterly broken. A third was scattered. Sixty thousand prisoners and hundreds of guns were taken. Palestine was by this one blow cleared of Turks. The road lay open to Damascus.

A really great victory, and one that will make Allenby's name famous for all time. There is something in the freeing of the Holy Land which sets the imagination afire. I met the other morning a hardened politician of my acquaintance, a former Cabinet Minister. He was reading a newspaper as he walked, and there were tears in his eyes. "Have you seen it?" he asked, pointing to an account of the Thanksgiving Service in St. Paul's Cathedral. "Nothing has moved me so much for years."

History will link Allenby's name with this great event, and, if it be well informed, it will tell how the victory was won by a man who is first, last, and all the time a soldier, a student of war, a born leader, hard as nails himself, simple in his way of living, no time-server, no politician, no puller of social wires, owing nothing to favour, nor to anything but solid ability and steady deserving.

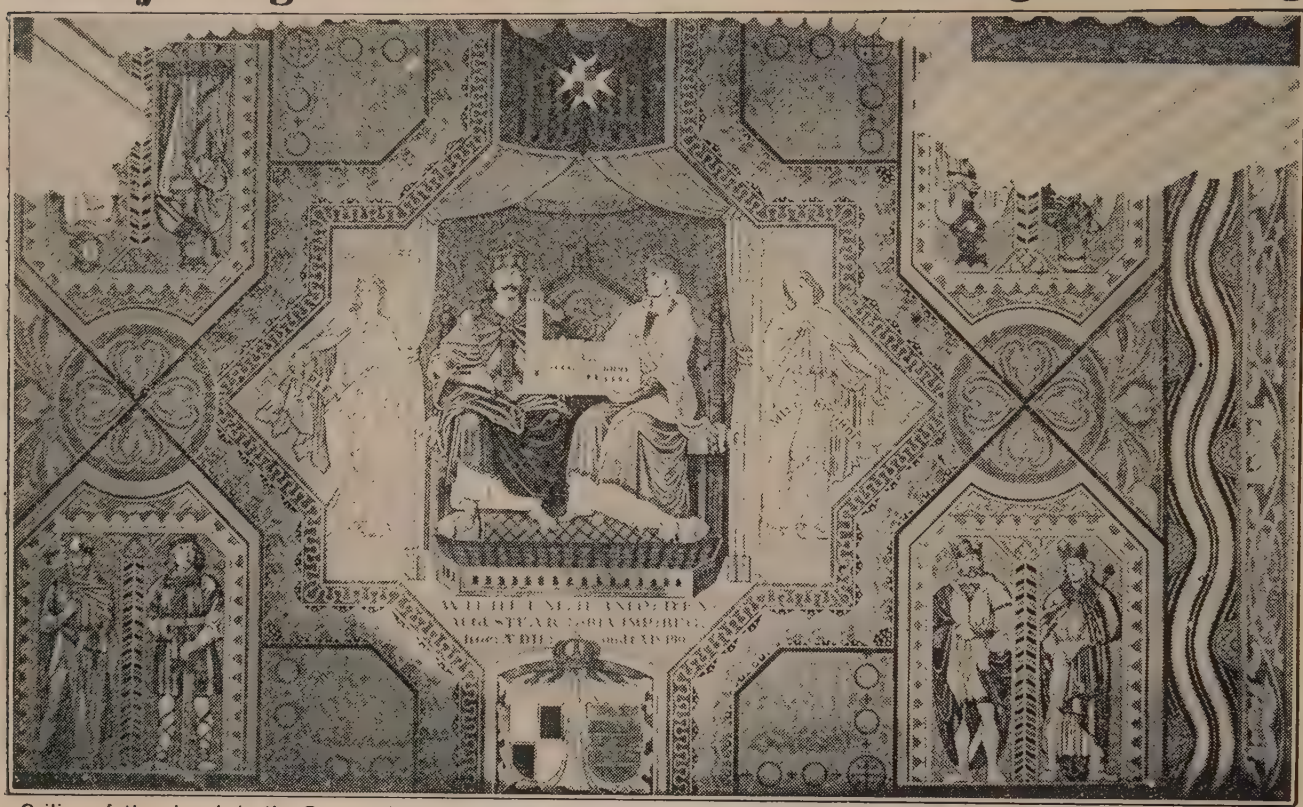
Arabs Who Helped the Allies in the Hedjaz

Officers with the troops of the King of Hedjaz inspecting the Turkish lines near Maan, on the Hedjaz Railway. Left: Arab water-seller refilling his bottles.

Djeddah Jalmond Bey (second from the left), Minister of War to the King of Hedjaz, with French officers operating with the Arab forces against the Turks.

Emir Faical reviewing the Sherifian troops in Arabia. In circle: Hussein I., formerly known as the Grand Sherif of Mecca, who in 1916 repudiated the authority of the Turkish Government over the Arabs, and was proclaimed King of the Hedjaz and Hereditary Custodian of the Holy Cities of Mecca and Medina.

'Hadji Guglielmo' & Some of His Hangman Gang



Ceiling of the church in the German hospice built by the Kaiser on a site given him by the Sultan on the Mount of Olives in commemoration of the visit of Wilhelm II. and his wife to Jerusalem. The Kaiser's well-known ambition to be overlord of the Mohammedan world is well suggested by the omission from the inscription of the name of the Empire over which he held sway.

Turkish official photograph of the murder of five Armenian Christian priests, hanged at the gate of Jaffa just before that seaport was captured by the British forces on November 17th, 1917. The wholesale massacre of the Armenian people by their Turkish oppressors —one of the most horrible atrocities of the war—was perpetrated with the full knowledge of the German Imperial Government.

Palestine Finally Freed From Turkish Misrule

British stretcher-bearers with camel transport advancing to Es Salt, between the River Jordan and the Hedjaz Railway, at dawn. General Allenby's forces occupied Es Salt on March 25th, 1918, but retired from it at the beginning of April. Then, on September 23rd, continuing the brilliant triumph of the British forces in Palestine, cavalry captured the port of Haifa and historical Acre and Es Salt.

London Scottish marching through Es Salt. On May 1st, 1918, General Allenby resumed operations east of the Jordan, and while the infantry moved forward to attack the enemy in the foothills, to the south and south-west Australian mounted troops went forward, and were the first to enter the village, capturing 33 German and 317 Turkish prisoners.

TEAM WORK IN PALESTINE.—Bringing a field-gun into a desert camp over the sand. More than fifty men were hauling on the drag-ropes of the heavy weapon, the wheels of which sank in the yielding sand. Many tracts of the country over which General Allenby's forces pursued their victorious way through Palestine were broad stretches of soft sand.

BRITISH CAMELRY OUT AFTER TURKISH PATROLS.—British Camel Corps in Palestine emerging from a palm grove on a reconnoitring and skirmishing expedition. The various camel corps—British Yeomanry, Anzacs, Egyptian Army, and Bikanir Camel Corps—did admirable work against the Senussi, in the Sinai Peninsula, and in Palestine.

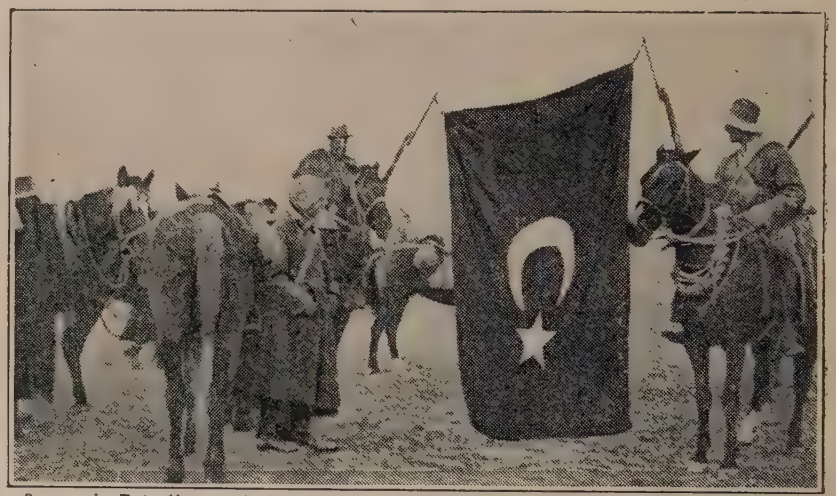
Western Science in an Eastern Environment

Telephone exchange on the British front in Palestine. This desert "exchange" is stoutly built up of sandbags in the form of the base of a pyramid. Arabs look with surprise at the high-perched soldiers fixing wires, while officers scan approaching aircraft.

British Engineers engaged in boring for water on the Palestine front. On the left is to be seen a sailcloth tank of the vitally necessary fluid, the need for maintaining a constant supply of which forms one of the difficulties that have to be surmounted in desert warfare.

Echoes & Episodes of General Allenby's Advance

Australian soldiers examine the wreath happily placed by someone at the base of Richard Cœur de Lion's statue in Old Palace Yard, Westminster, in celebration of the recapture of Jaffa, which that crusading king took in 1191. Right: A water-carrier of Bagdad.



Anzacs in Palestine exhibit a Turkish flag captured in the great advance. Left: An Australian soldier happens upon a good-natured camel. (British official.)

Measuring out the fodder for the animals of the Camel Transport Corps during a halt on the Palestine front. Each camel's "feed" is placed on a separate cloth and then carried to it. (British official photograph.)

Doughty Gurkhas and Punjabis in the Desert

Gurkha rifle battalion going over the top from a trench in Palestine. Right: Officers of an Indian rifle battalion on the Palestine front. (British official photographs.)

Dug-outs in the desert. An Indian rifle battalion in reserve on the Palestine front. Right: Soldier of a Punjab rifle battalion on observation duty in Palestine. (British official.)

Reservists and recruits rounded up in Palestine by the Turks being marched unwillingly to barracks. Right: Troops of the Turkish Regular Army marching newly-raised levies through Jerusalem to a camp in readiness for their projected attack on Egypt.

Miracles and Magic in the Mysterious East

"Tanks" caused consternation among the Germans when they first made their appearance in France, so it is intelligible that armoured cars, little brothers of the "tanks," should have scared the natives when they first plunged across the Egyptian desert.

Transport Arabs accompanying the British Expeditionary Force through Sinai were enormously interested in the telephone, which they regarded as part magic, part miracle. When an officer halted to get into communication with headquarters, they gathered round to watch and discuss the apparatus with suspicion not altogether untinged with fear.

British Bridge Hands as Played in Palestine

Anzac engineers in Palestine building a barrel-pier bridge with wine casks procured from local wine cellars. Right: One of the temporary barrel bridges as it was when completed.

Trestle bridge built by Anzac engineers in Palestine. Although when this photograph was taken camels and men were able to wade scarcely more than ankle-deep, the rather lofty bridge was necessary, for the stream when in flood rises fourteen feet at this point.

With General Allenby in His Palestine Advance

Egyptian Official Photographs

Men of the Bersaglieri practising an attack in Palestine. They wear their distinguishing bunch of feathers on their sun-helmets.

Indian, British, Italian, and Algerian comrades in the Holy Land, where Sir Edmund Allenby won notable victories at Beersheba and Gaza, October-November, 1917. Right: Italian Bersaglieri training on the Palestine front receive machine-gun instruction.

Explosion of a land mine on the Palestine line of communications, and (right) lightly-clad members of the Australasian force inspecting the hole caused by the explosion of the land mine.

Where British Armies Pressed Forward in the East

View from one of the hills overlooking Gaza, the capture of which by General Allenby on Nov. 7th, 1917, marked an important stage in the Palestine advance. The hedges are "prickly-pear" cactus.

Outside of the Golden Gate in the city wall of Jerusalem. This gate has been kept walled up ever since the time of Herod, close upon two thousand years ago.

British soldiers engaged in man-hauling a heavy gun along a sunken way at Bagdad. The motley crowd of Arabs, old and young, watch with interest the work of the men who have delivered them from the dominion of the Turk. (British official photograph.)

Brothers in Arms from East and West in Bagdad

Indian camel transport crossing the Tigris at Bagdad by means of a pontoon bridge. Indian forces formed a considerable part of the army with which Sir Stanley Maude recaptured Kut and pushed on to the important sequel to the operation, the taking of Bagdad.

British troops marching along one of the palm-fringed streets of Bagdad. Mr. Bonar Law, in announcing to the House of Commons the capture of Bagdad, paid tribute to the valour and endurance of the troops, both British and Indian, that had achieved the great task.

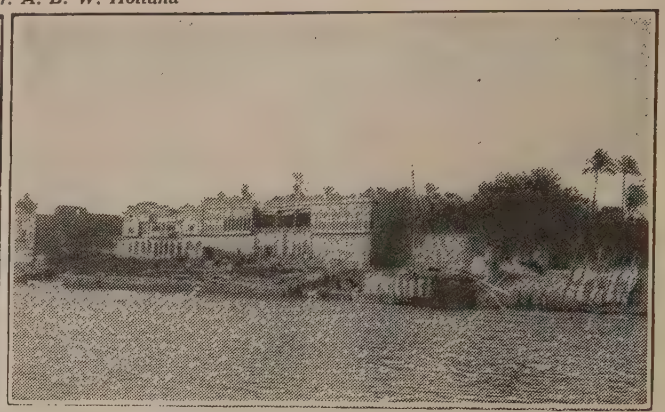
Obstacle Race After the Turks Along the Tigris

British troops wading knee-deep through a morass during the Mesopotamian advance. The not uncommon impression that the whole of the country is a sandy waste is of course quite an erroneous one, as is well shown by this palm-grown swamp.

Landing of British sailors on the Tigris. Though little of detail was heard of the part played by the Navy in the Mesopotamian Campaign, the gunboat crews were of incalculable assistance both on the river and in transport work.

On the Teuton-Freed Tigris From Basra to Bagdad

Photographs by Mr. A. B. W. Holland

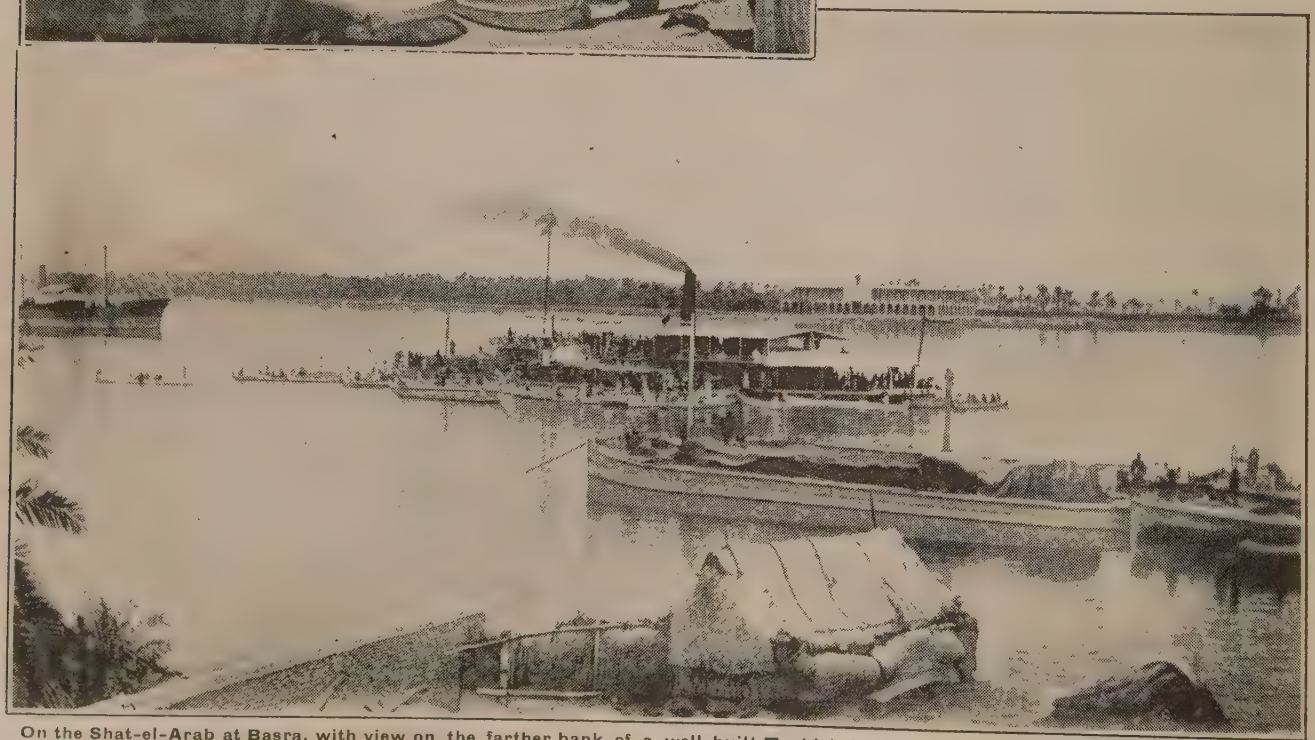


New British Residency and Consulate General at Bagdad. It accommodates the Resident, and contains the British Post Office, a house for the Residency Surgeon, and barracks for the Consular Guard of Sepoys. Right: The old German Consulate, higher up the river.

THIS further selection from Mr. Holland's admirable Mesopotamian photographs—of which several appear in another page—affords a series of striking views on the great river along which Sir Stanley Maude passed to the recapture of Kut and the taking of the ancient city of many memories, Bagdad.

Shat-el-Arab is the name of the united stream of the two great rivers the Euphrates and the Tigris. After flowing roughly parallel, though at points about a hundred miles apart, from above Bagdad, they run together at Kurna. Thence as the Shat-el-Arab the river reaches the Persian Gulf below Basra. At Basra the barges are loaded with goods and then lashed to the sides of steamers, such as that shown in the picture at the bottom of this page, for conveyance to Bagdad.

The views above afford an interesting contrast. They show the new centre of British influence in Bagdad, the British Residency, which is described as one of the finest buildings on the left bank of the Tigris, and the centre of the now happily discredited and dispossessed German influence.



On the Shat-el-Arab at Basra, with view on the farther bank of a well-built Turkish hospital. The crowded British steamer was about to leave on the long up-river journey to Bagdad. Above: Arab women in Mesopotamia sifting and cleaning corn.

Gallant Gurkhas Making Good in Mesopotamia

West and East the Gurkhas fought gallantly on behalf of the Emperor-King. Here a sturdy draft of these first-class fighting men are seen on the march along the sunny sands of Mesopotamia to reinforce the troops engaged against the Turks on the Tigris.

Field-kitchen of a well-known Gurkha regiment near to the front line in Mesopotamia. Here their accustomed diet is prepared for these brave Indian soldiers by their cook comrades in full accordance with their particular requirements.

On the Tigris river-boats, such as these alongside the bank, were used for transporting small bodies of troops up to our Mesopotamian front, thus supplementing the land line of communications. This appears a busy though but a temporary "port of call."

Bits of River Beauty from Basra to Bagdad

Photographs by Mr A. B. W Holland

One of the beauty spots of Basra. A glimpse of the Abu Kasib Creek, on which some of the best of the European houses are situated. It is navigable by the bellums, or native boats, at all states of the tide. Right: The Asshar, or main creek of Basra.

Bit of an ancient wall of Basra left by an old governor because it supported a gun, the removal of which he thought too expensive.

FROM these beautiful pictures taken by Mr. Holland readers of THE WAR ALBUM will be able to get some fresh and agreeable impressions of the great Mesopotamian rivers—the Tigris and the Euphrates—where, as the Shat-el-Arab, they flow together past Basra to mingle their waters with those of the Persian Gulf.

The creek views of Basra—with their reeds and palms—contrast strikingly with that of the bare banks of the Tigris, where the old East Gateway stands across the moat that encircles the ancient city of Arabian romance. This moat is filled with water in the springtime as a result of the "nazeez," or oozing of the water through the subsoil when the river is high.

Basra, which is surrounded by a wall ten miles in circumference, is a large centre of transit trade between Mesopotamia and Persia and India. A British Consul has been there since 1898.

Arab notables of Basra gathered together to look on at a review of troops belonging to the Mesopotamian force. Above: The East Gate of Bagdad, one of the old gates of the city which was left standing when the ramparts were demolished by Midhat Pasha.

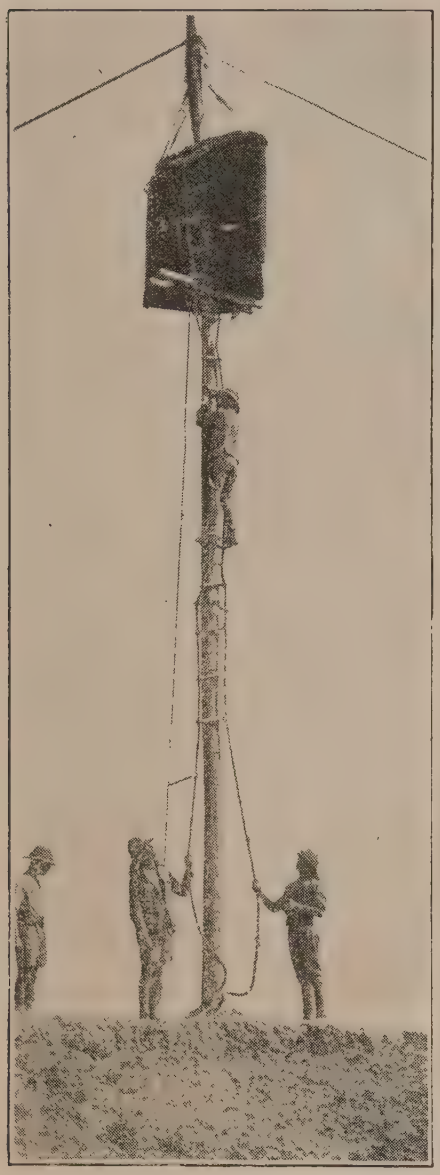
Trench and Transport Scenes Along the Tigris

Campaigning in Mesopotamia. Stout-limbed British soldiers escorting a Red Cross waggon from the trenches to a field-hospital. Mules were found of great service for transport along the rough roads of the Tigris Valley owing to their sureness of foot.

Motor-launch on the Tigris. The vessel's rudder has fouled the rope of the barge it is towing.

A bullock transport in Mesopotamia. Inset: British troops proceeding along a communication trench on their way to attack the Turks. The barren nature of the country where the campaign was waged is strikingly illustrated.

Humane Treatment of Turks Taken in the Pursuit



British soldiers at a Turkish observation post, on a telegraph pole, near Ramadie.

Blindfolding a Turkish prisoner before taking him through the British lines on the Jebel Hamarin, and (right) wounded Indian soldier being assisted to a dressing-station.

Youthful Turk taken prisoner in Mesopotamia being interrogated by a British officer. That he was receiving sympathetic treatment may be gathered from his smile of amusement.

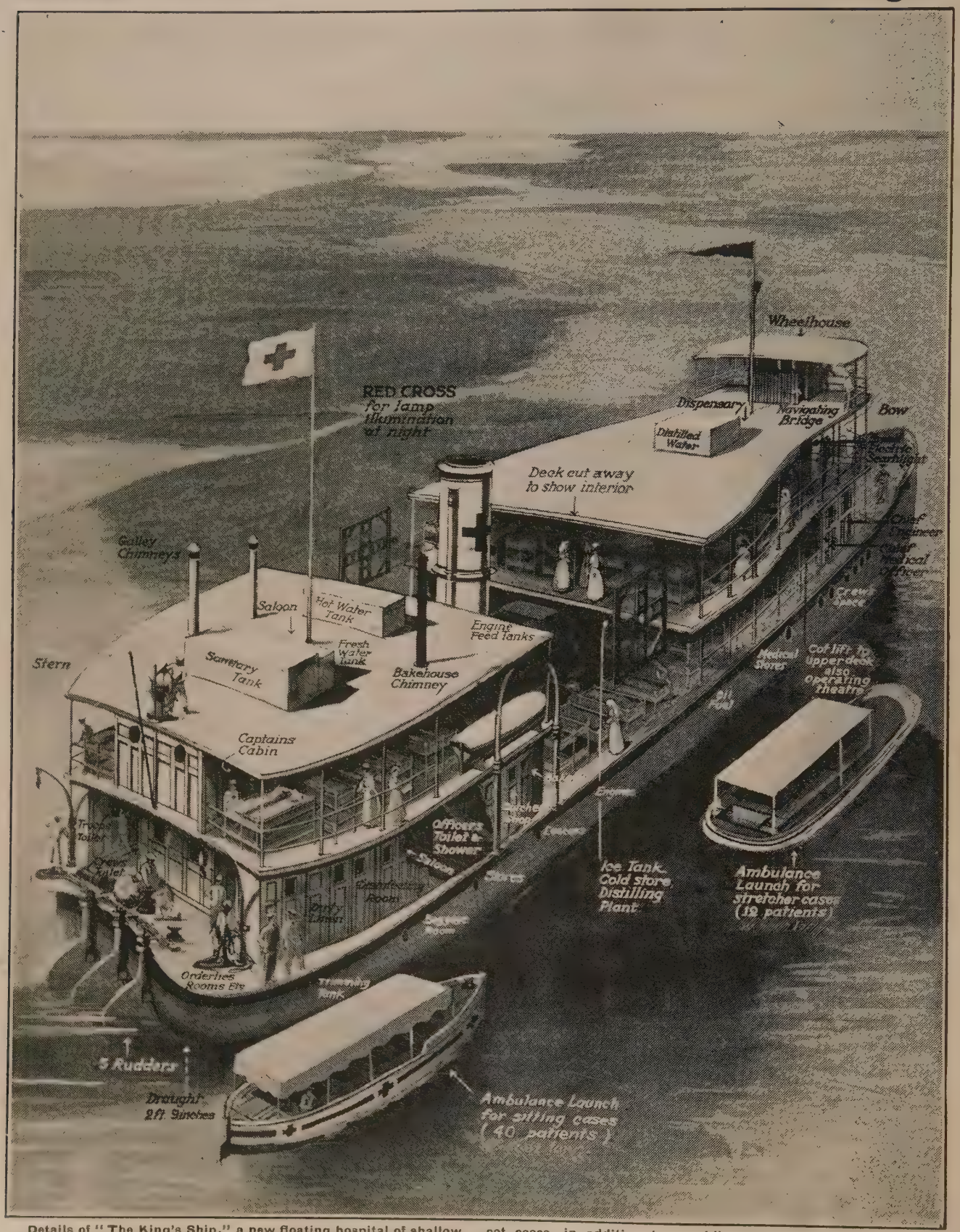
Staff officers in Mesopotamia examining a number of bombs of various sizes that had been left behind by the Turks in their retreat. Right: Giving a drink of water to a wounded Turkish prisoner at an advanced dressing-station in Mesopotamia.

Men of the East Render Ready Help to the West

Indian troops, with their well-laden transport donkeys, passing along New Street, Bagdad. The photograph shows something of the demolition of houses by the Turks in the laying out of new thoroughfares in the ancient city from which they have been driven.

At a wayside station in the East. Indian coolies waiting for the train that shall carry them a farther stage on their journey forward to where their fellows were already doing valuable work in connection with the armies. (French official photograph.)

Indian Prince's Red Cross Gift For the Tigris



Details of "The King's Ship," a new floating hospital of shallow draught, designed and built for work on the Tigris. It is the munificent gift of the Maharaja of Nabha, a feudatory state of the Punjab, and has been built in England from designs by Thornycroft. The vessel was built to carry one hundred and eighty cot cases, in addition to providing accommodation for minor casualties, and was fitted with a system of ventilation to keep it comparatively cool during the hot season and warm in the autumn and winter seasons, which are somewhat severe on the upper waters of the river for which the craft was destined.

Means and Modes of Locomotion in Mesopotamia

View of Sheikh Saad, a village south of Kut-el-Amara, from the River Tigris, down which immemorial waterway natives are shown (on the right) towing a boat by means of a rope attached to the top of the single mast.

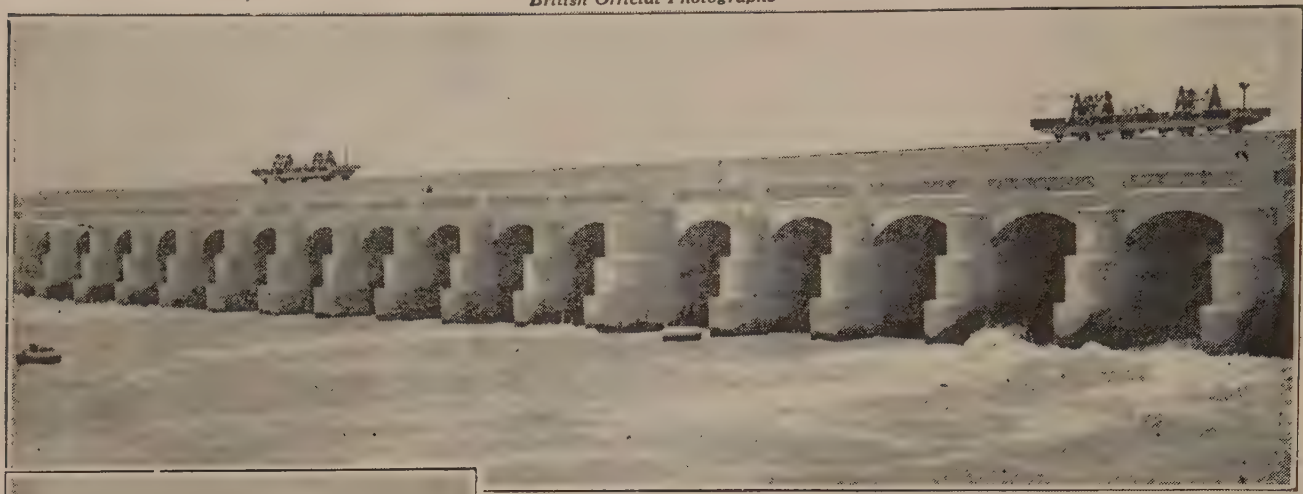
Man's latest most wonderful means of locomotion. A seaplane at Orah, eleven miles below Kut, starting on a reconnaissance.

The familiar "ship of the desert" was used freely in Sir Stanley Maude's campaign. The field-ambulance conveyed slightly-wounded men to the rear this way, placing them in bucket-seat saddles. Right: Another ingenious method of moving wounded was devised in the shape of sledges drawn smoothly over the sand by horses.

Man's first mode of locomotion—"Shank's mare." Highlanders marching across the desert. Right: Old and New met at the ferry, where an ancient "grind" was used to transfer a modern motor-car across the river near whose waters the story of man began.

From the Ruins of Babylon to Modernised Bagdad

British Official Photographs



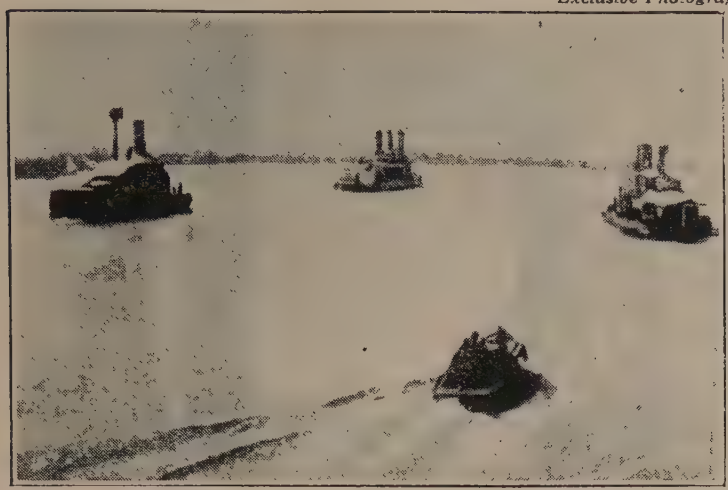
The Hindie Barrage on the Euphrates, the first completed section of the great Mesopotamian irrigation scheme, as it was in June, 1917.

Fine mosque in an ancient street of Bagdad now known as New Street; it was formerly Khail Pasha Street. Right: Where East and West met. The entrance to one of the Bagdad restaurants, which acquired English names.

The mounds of Babylon—on the Euphrates to the south-west of Bagdad—showing some of the results of excavation up to the summer of 1917, and (right) the entrance to the Citadel of Bagdad under British occupation.

Splendid Work of the Gunboats on the Tigris

Exclusive Photographs



Approach to Bagdad of Captain Wilfrid Nunn with his flotilla of gunboats on Sunday, March 11th, 1917. Right: Launch of H.M.S. Butterfly at Abadan, where—and at Basra—a number of the river craft employed in the Mesopotamian operations were put together.

IN view of the publication of Captain Nunn's reports of the operations of the gunboat flotilla under his command during Sir Stanley Maude's advance on Bagdad, these illustrations of some of the vessels of that flotilla are particularly interesting.

Vessels of the "insect" fleet saw some stiff fighting during the advance on and capture of Kut—where Captain Nunn hoisted the Union Jack on February 24th, 1917—and later during the pursuit of the enemy to Bagdad, the boats keeping abreast of our advancing army and harassing the retreating Turks.

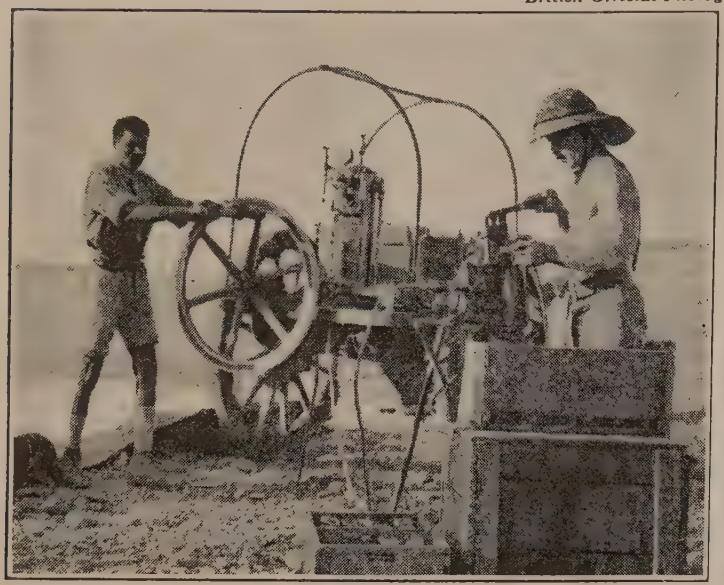
At times the gunboats came under very severe fire, especially on February 26th, and suffered many casualties.

Captain Nunn, C.M.G., D.S.O., received the further distinction of C.B. for his work in Mesopotamia, and many of his officers were appointed to the Distinguished Service Order or received the Distinguished Service Cross.

Vessels of the Tigris "insect" fleet on the stocks at Abadan. They have been termed the "insect" fleet because thirteen out of the sixteen are named after insects. Above: H.M.S. Moth, one of the sixteen shallow draught vessels under Captain Nunn's command.

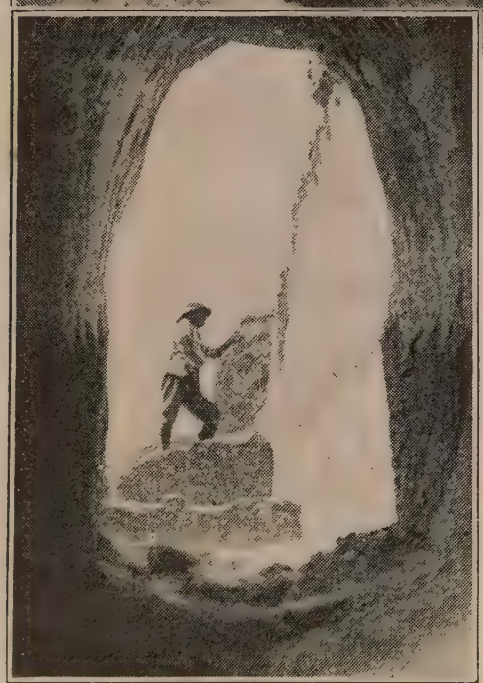
With General Marshall's Men in Mesopotamia

British Official Photographs



Making cooling drinks in a thirsty land at a British regimental soda-water "factory." A daily ration of two "sodas" was allowed each officer and man during the hot weather. Right: A British heavy gun firing.

Indian sappers engaged in laying a trench telephone cable, and (left) keeping well under cover while going along a desert trench.



Ruins of a Caliph's house which were adapted by British soldiers as a ready-made dug-out, and (right) Indian troops passing along a trench cut through the stony desert.

Prowess and Pity in Mesopotamia and Palestine

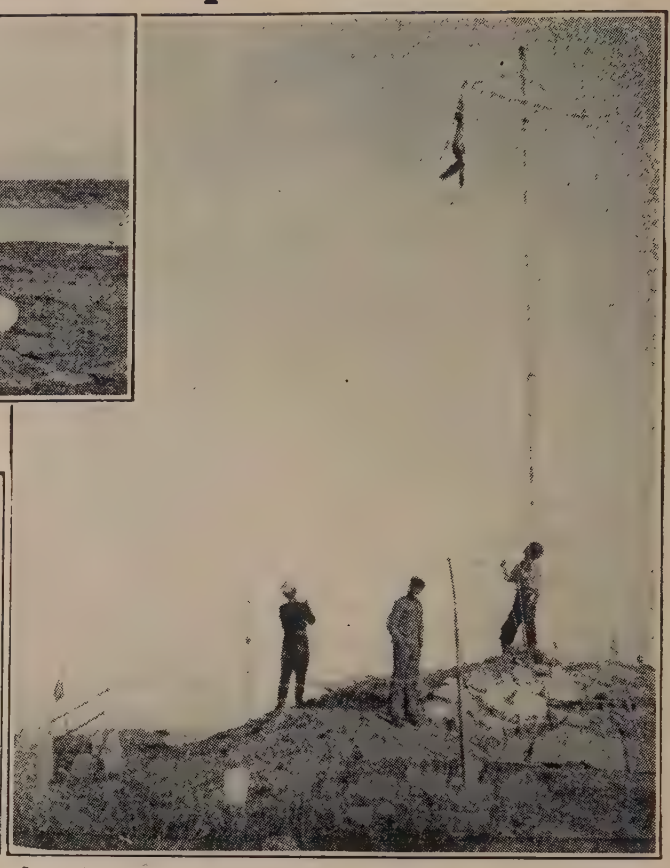
British and Indian infantry co-operated in the capture of Ramadie Ridge, on the Euphrates, on Sept. 29th, 1917. Under concentrated fire they hung on to their positions, and so occupied the Turks that another column was able to seize Aziziye Ridge before dusk.

The plight of the people of Palestine and Syria under Turko-Teuton rule was terrible, and the advancing British troops were sorely taxed in alleviating it. Pathos blends with the humour of this picture of a soldier doling out garments to almost naked children.

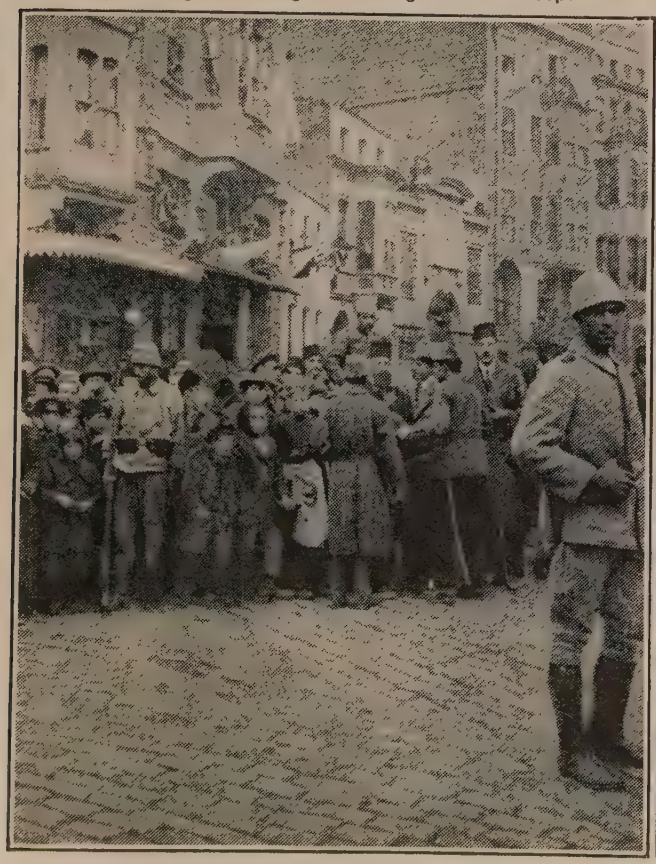
Gallipoli: Where the British Kept Watch & Ward

British gunners of the R.M.A. are interested in a Turkish monument erected partly of ancient and modern projectiles.

Beacon kept in readiness by the Turks so that it might be rapidly lighted to give warning of a landing of British troops.



A great moment. Hoisting the British flag once more on the Gallipoli Peninsula—scene of undying heroism and of tragic memories.



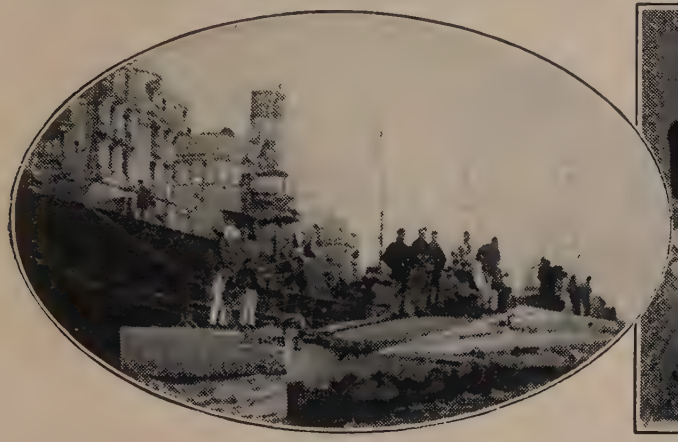
Waiting to greet the British troops on their arrival—a mixed crowd in one of the streets of Constantinople.

At an outlook and signal station on the Gallipoli Peninsula, which was occupied by British troops in December, 1918.

British soldiers at a Turkish dug-out at the Dardanelles. The old or new tenants had fixed a horseshoe over the entrance "for luck."

Allied Flags Fly Proudly Off the Golden Horn

French submarine in the Golden Horn, the famous narrow inlet of the Bosphorus which separates Constantinople from Galata and Pera. It was in the morning of November 13th, 1918, that the Allied Fleet steamed slowly up the Bosphorus to Constantinople.



French submarines moored alongside a steamer at one of the quays on the Golden Horn, and (right) French officers in the Turkish capital. General Bunoust (third from the left) talking to High Commissioner Amet (second from the right).

British soldiers landing at Constantinople, and (right) a British mine-sweeper alongside the Galata quay. The arrival of the Allied Fleet was delayed for nearly a fortnight after Turkey's surrender, to allow of the mine-sweepers clearing the waters of mines.

Allied Flags Fly at Constantinople and Cattaro

Arrival at Constantinople, on November 22nd, 1918, of General Franchet d'Esperey, the Commander-in-Chief of the Allied Armies of the Orient. The naval officer on the right, who is saluting, is Admiral Amet, French High Commissioner, and in front of him is General Franchet d'Esperey, shaking hands with General Sir Henry F. M. Wilson, in command of the British forces of occupation.

The Austrian commander, General Baltin, being received on board the Italian warship Quarto off Cattaro by the officers entrusted with the duty of surveying the fortifications. Cattaro, a strongly fortified seaport on the Dalmatian coast, lies between the Montenegrin mountains and the Adriatic. It had belonged to the Venetian Republic, but was ceded to Austria by the Treaty of Vienna in 1814.

THE WAR ILLUSTRATED · GALLERY OF LEADERS

LIEUT.-GEN. SIR WILLIAM R. MARSHALL, G.C.M.G.

Appointed Commander-in-Chief in Mesopotamia, November, 1917

PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR

GENERAL MARSHALL

GENERAL SIR WILLIAM RAINE MARSHALL, who so successfully carried on and completed the campaign in Mesopotamia after the tragically sudden death from cholera of Sir Stanley Maude, was born at Durham on October 29th, 1865. Son of the late William Marshall, of Fountain House, near West Hartlepool, he was educated at Repton School, Derbyshire, and the Royal Military College, Sandhurst.

He entered the Army in his twenty-first year, being gazetted a lieutenant in the Nottinghamshire and Derbyshire Regiment (the Sherwood Foresters) on January 30th, 1886. Promoted to a captaincy on January 13th, 1893, he first saw active service in the Mohmand campaign on the North-West Frontier of India in 1897, being awarded the Mohmand medal with clasp.

With the Mounted Infantry in South Africa

He took part also in the succeeding Tirah Campaign of 1897–8, being present at the memorable action at Dargai and at the capture of the Sampagha and Arhanga Passes, and took part in the operations in the Bazar Valley, receiving the clasp.

During the South African War of 1899–1902 he was employed with the Mounted Infantry, and in command of a mobile column, being twice slightly wounded. His services in the actions at Bethlehem, Wittebergen, Bothaville, and Caledon River were the subject of double mention in despatches, and secured for him the brevet rank of major (November 29th, 1900), and of lieutenant-colonel (June 26th, 1902), the Queen's Medal with three clasps, and the King's Medal with two clasps. Promoted to the brevet rank of colonel on June 26th, 1908, he was assistant-commandant of the School of Instruction for Mounted Infantry at Longmoor from January 25th to September 8th, 1911.

When the Great War broke out Colonel Marshall went to France in command of a battalion of his regiment. Then, with the temporary rank of brigadier-general, he was given the command of the 87th Brigade in Gallipoli, was slightly wounded in the operations undertaken from Beach X, and in July, 1915, with the rank of major-general, assumed temporary command of the 42nd Division. He was present at the evacuation of Suvla, and then went to Salonika. Mentioned in despatches in June, 1916, he was made a Companion of the Order of the Bath.

Victorious Entry into Bagdad

In the autumn, when the British forces in Mesopotamia were reorganised under Sir Stanley Maude, Major-General Marshall, given another step in rank, first came prominently under public notice. General Maude decided to carry the Hai line, recapture Kut, and then strike at the main centre of the enemy at Bagdad.

Preparations for the attack were completed by the second week in December, and of the two sections into which the attacking force was divided, that on the right bank of the Tigris, which included the cavalry, was under Lieutenant-General Marshall's command. By February 16th the whole of the Dahra Bend was captured—" a phase of severe fighting brilliantly carried out."

Then followed the heroic crossing of the Shumran Bend of the flooded Tigris, and, while General Cobbe, who commanded on the left bank of that river, entered Kut, General Marshall was in hot pursuit of the retreating Turks. He reached Azizieh—half-way to Bagdad—by February 28th, marched on to Lajj, passed Ctesiphon, and got to the mouth of the Diala, the crossing of which was one of the most brilliant episodes of the whole Mesopotamian Campaign. Bagdad was entered on the morning of March 11th. On March 19th General Marshall was made a K.C.B.

In his despatch of April 10th, 1917, Sir Stanley Maude paid a memorable tribute to his services. General Marshall, he said, " has commanded his troops with determination and judgment. His quiet, imperturbable manner, his coolness and decision, inspire confidence among his subordinates, while his bold methods and intelligent appreciation and rapid execution of orders have been of the greatest value."

After clearing the Turks from the left bank of the Diala, and occupying the Jebel Hamrin range astride of that river, to secure control of the canals—operations which involved the building of seventy-five bridges and the construction of roads suitable for wheeled traffic through the hitherto roadless tangle of the Jebel Hamrin—General Marshall succeeded to the chief command through the death from cholera of Sir Stanley Maude.

It is no exaggeration to say that in the subsequent stages of the campaign General Marshall was served by his subordinates, officers and men, with the devotion and loyalty he had himself displayed towards his lost leader.

His three despatches, covering the operations between October 1st, 1917, and December 31st, 1918, are models of their kind, and among the most graphic and interesting of the despatches written from any theatre of the Great War.

He describes vividly how the Turks were driven from their hold on the Diala River above Mansewinga, the passes over the Jebel Hamrin, and Kara Tepe; the occupation of Khanikin; the consolidation of the British position at Ramadi; the occupation of Hit; the operations towards Kirmanshah; the occupation of Salahiya, Haditha, Ana, and Kasr-i-Shirin; the clearing of the Kara Tepe-Kifri-Tuz Kermatli area; the capture of Kirkuk; the operations at Baku; the preservation of the oil-fields near Ahwaz; the great victory at Kalaat Shergat; the Turkish surrender at Hammanali; and the occupation of Mosul.

Hardships of the Mesopotamian Campaign

The whole campaign of four years' duration resulted in the taking of 45,500 prisoners, 250 guns, and vast quantities of war material. It liberated 114,000 square miles from the tyranny and deadliness of Turkish misrule; and the gradual progress of the British-Indian forces was marked, not by rapine and plunder, but by the reclamation of great stretches of what was once the most fertile area in the world; the revival of industry, such as the manufacture of prepared bitumen and lime, the construction of railways—the Hilla district was connected with Bagdad by a broad-gauge line—the development of the port of Basra, the partial reopening of trade and fisheries of the Caspian, and the feeding, hospital treatment, and general care of many thousands of refugee Armenians, Assyrians, Nestorians, and Jelus, for whom a great camp was formed at Bakuba in September, 1918.

The campaign was carried out in a land destitute of shade in the summer, and impassable, owing to floods, in wet weather. On the high ground, where snow was encountered, roads had to be blasted through the rock. Supply and communication problems—especially the drinking-water problem—were insistently harassing to the end. Influenza added materially to the handicap of other diseases. Drastic sanitary measures were frequently called for in the captured places—at Kirkuk, for example. Rival and turbulent tribes had to be dealt with. Holy places, such as Nedjef, the sacred city of the Shiahs, had to be preserved. Again and again conspiracies against the British were inspired by German gold; one of these conspiracies brought about the murder of the British political officer at Nedjef.

Famine, finance, and labour troubles, such as those at Baku and its vicinity, had to be surmounted. Moreover, especially in the later stages of the campaign, the army, which finally reached a total of 420,000, including labour battalions, was reduced from time to time by withdrawals of units and personnel, necessitating the employment of new formations with little or no previous war experiences.

The gallantry and endurance of the troops is testified to by the many awards to officers and men for valour in the field. After hostilities closed, educational training was begun to fit the men for civil life.

When the full record of the Mesopotamian " side-show " is at length made public, it will probably be found of the first importance for the future welfare of the race.

In September, 1917, General Marshall had the Legion of Honour bestowed upon him by France. He was made a K.C.S.I. in April, 1918, and a G.C.M.G. in June, 1919. He was the recipient also of the Serbian Order of the White Eagle. In June, 1919, the freedom of his native city of Durham was conferred upon him.

Closing Events in the Balkans

On September 15th, 1918, the Allies advanced on a front of ten miles into Bulgaria's mountain positions in the zone of Dopropolje, north-east of Monastir. By the end of the month a breach of ten miles in depth had been effected, and a general advance was made on the whole front. On September 30th Bulgaria accepted the allied conditions.

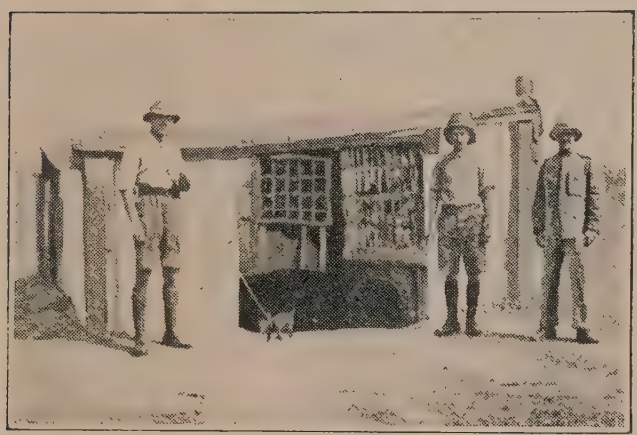
Official Photograph.—Crown Copyright Reserved.

PERMITS FOR THE WAR ZONE.—Inhabitants of a village in the sector occupied by the allied armies in the Balkans procuring a permit to travel on the roads used exclusively by the military. Such passes were provisionally granted to Greeks, Turks, and Jews.

Allied Reinforcements Move Up From Salonika

Exclusive Photographs

Column of the Allies on the march to an important town on the railway that twists from Salonika to Monastir.



Camp cookhouse constituted of petrol tins in Macedonia. Roads and roadside accommodation are practically non-existent in Macedonia.

Serbians taking shelter in a gully near Florina, south of Monastir. The reconstituted Serbian Army, consisting of some hundred and fifty thousand warriors, was placed on the left wing of the allied army, that spread fanwise towards the Serbian frontier. Inset: Troops on their way to Salonika marching round the deck during daily drill aboard ship.

Hardy Albanian Highlanders Help the Allies

Patrol of Albanian irregulars enrolled in the Italian Army who fought among the Allies for the liberation of their country.

Types of the Albanians who were fighting under the Italian flag, showing the picturesque costume worn by these fearless warriors of the Albanian highlands.

Observation post in an Albanian village. Right: Albanians on scouting duty among their mountains. In addition to thousands of regular Albanian recruits, the Italians enlisted the service of many irregulars as invaluable auxiliaries.

Fine Fighting Triumphs of Greeks and Serbs

General Vassitch, in command of the First Serbian Army, addressing a company of his troops specially trained for assault. The magnificent attack by the Serbian Army—in conjunction with its French, British, Italian, and Greek allies—began on September 15th, 1918, and met with such success that barely a fortnight later—on September 30th—it was announced that Bulgaria had surrendered.

Greek soldiers on the shore of Lake Doiran, where the British and Greek troops, following on the Franco-Serbian success, took part in the great allied Balkan offensive. As a result of their heavy pressure on this front on September 23rd, 1918, General Milne reported that the Bulgarians were retreating. Three days later the British and Greek troops had not only invaded Bulgaria, but captured Strumnitza.

Patriotic Guardians of the Glory of Old Greece

British Official Photographs

Evzones leaving for the fighting-line. The Evzones are the Greek Highland regiments, whose uniform is the picturesque national dress of the country—white kilt, wide-sleeved white shirt, embroidered vest, red-pointed shoes, and blue-tasselled red cap.

Colonel Christodoulous, who defended Seres from the advancing Bulgarians, leaving Salonika at the head of his men for the front. Inset: Two Cretans, fine fighting men from the home of M. Venizelos, whose Provisional Government the Allies recognised.

Busy Balkan Highways and Byway Solitude

British Official Photographs

French troops marching through a principal street of Monastir after they had helped to drive the Germans and Bulgarians from the town in November, 1916.

Main street of Monastir. The broken shutters mark one of the great shops in the Macedonian capital which the Bulgarians had broken into and looted. Right: An Italian pack transport entering the recovered town.

Market-place in Monastir, deserted save for a few soldiers, and (right) an empty street, the shops close-shuttered against enemy shrapnel flying overhead. In the course of 1916 soldiers of nine of the warring Powers trod the paving-stones of Monastir.

Field-Gun Breasting a Bank in the Balkan Line

British Official Photographs

To the crack of the whip and jingle of harness an artillery team takes a Macedonian bank at a gallop. There is no more exhilarating military duty than that of bringing the guns into action with the aid of well-trained war-horses.

Including the Allies' Colonial soldiers there were no fewer than eleven nationalities in the Entente ranks on the Balkan front. In this unique photograph can be recognised British, Moroccan, Russian, French, Italian, Serbian, Senegalese, and Chinese from Cochin China.

Minor Mishaps to Mules and Motor-Cars

British Official Photographs

Professional attendance by a mobile veterinary section. It is best not to rely on the grateful patience of a mule; hence the securing of the sound leg while the injured one is dressed. Right: A French lorry charged a bridge-rail and "turned turtle" in the stream.

Royal Engineers bridge-building in the Balkans. Right: A pile-driver at work in a river near Monastir. None of the rivers in the Monastir region is wide, but owing to the mountainous nature of the country most of them are rapid.

Mishap to an Indian mule-cart, the mules accepting the situation with placidity. Right: A couple of Indian soldiers start on the job of removing the spilt load, while a British trooper looks on and allows his horse to enjoy a little of the fragrant provender.

British Trench Artillery on the Balkan Front

British Official Photographs

Trench-howitzer about to be fired—a camera impression from the Balkan front. In the protracted trench warfare this form of light artillery was brought to a high point of ingenious efficiency.

Loading a trench-howitzer. Right: Nine points of the law of tenancy. Smiling Tommies in a captured German dug-out on our west front. The large sign—the German equivalent for "No thoroughfare," but literally "Passage forbidden"—had been disregarded as evidently not intended to apply to British soldiers.

Church Parade 'Midst Macedonian Hills

British Official Photographs

Church parade at the foot of a wooded hill near Monastir. Inset: Scene of devastation in the Valley of the Ancre.

Group of British soldiers highly appreciative of a present of cigarettes just received from home. Right: Railways are like magnets attracting the steel of shells. These snapped rails and this deep pool is the result of a direct hit by a high-explosive shell.

Entrenching in the Hills near Monastir

French Official Photograph

French soldiers digging trenches on a hillside in the region of Monastir in anticipation of a Bulgar attack. Monastir stands at an altitude of over 2,000 feet on the eastern slope of richly-wooded mountains which separate Lake Prespa from the Valley of the Czerna. As the meeting-place of roads from Salonika, Durazzo, Uskub, and Adrianople, the military advantages of its position are very great, and its possession is of prime strategical importance to the Allies, as well as of sentimental importance to the Serbs.

Serbia Resurgent Re-Enters Into Her Own

French Official Photographs

Serbian infantry in the open among the hills driving the enemy before them during the victorious attack upon Monastir.

The return of the natives, their gladness marred by angry resentment at the destruction to which their homes had been subjected at Bulgarian hands. Inset: A shattered church whose dome, elaborately painted in the Byzantine style, resisted the shock of its fall.

Dawn of the Day of Deliverance for Serbia

Prince Alexander of Serbia drawing the attention of General Mishitch to a movement in the enemy lines while watching operations from a mountain position. By his unremitting devotion to the Serbian Army, of which he was much more than a nominal Commander-in-Chief, the Crown Prince, promoted to General's rank, won the admiration of the troops whom he led to the full recovery of their land.

Greek soldiers bringing in Bulgarian prisoners through a communication trench. Greek troops co-operated in the pursuit of the Bulgarians north-west of Monastir, and with the British troops who carried the enemy positions at Doiran. One of the conditions imposed on Bulgaria after her unconditional surrender was the return of the material of the Fourth Greek Army Corps seized in her invasion of Greek Macedonia.

Bulgaria Breaks Away From the Central Powers

King Ferdinand of Bulgaria, personally responsible for his country's disaster.

M. Radeff, one of the three Bulgarian delegates who went to Salonika, Sept. 28th, 1918.

M. Malinoff, Bulgarian Prime Minister, who proposed the armistice.

General Lukoff, one of the three parlementaires who went to negotiate the armistice.

Gen. Gerome (on the right) with Gen. Milne, in chief command of the British forces on the Balkan front. Right: Gen. Franchet d'Esperey, in chief command of the allied armies in the Balkans (right), with Gen. Royovitch, of the Serbian Army, on the left.

Typical representatives of the reconstituted Serbian Army which so magnificently distinguished itself in its heroic offensive against the Bulgarian invaders. From the middle of September, 1918, when, in concert with their Allies, the Serbian Army went forward, it passed from triumph to triumph. Inset is a portrait of the Crown Prince of Serbia, who was in chief command of the Serbian armies.

THE WAR ILLUSTRATED · GALLERY OF LEADERS

Lafayette

GENERAL SIR GEORGE F. MILNE, G.C.M.G.,
British Commander-in-Chief in the Balkans

PERSONALIA OF THE GREAT WAR

GENERAL MILNE

GENERAL SIR GEORGE FRANCIS MILNE, G.C.M.G., K.C.B., D.S.O., who fought with distinction in France and Flanders, and was afterwards Commander-in-Chief of the British Salonika Force, was born November 5th, 1866. Son of the late George Milne, of Westwood, Aberdeen, he was educated at Aberdeen University, and entered the Army in 1885, his commission as lieutenant in the Royal Artillery being dated September 16th in that year. Promoted captain, July 4th, 1895, he first saw active service in 1898 in the Nile Expedition, which, following the campaigns of 1896 and 1897, re-established British authority over the Sudan provinces that had been abandoned in 1883. He took part in the Battle of Khartum, and was awarded the British and Khedive's medals with clasp.

Services in France and Flanders

In the South African War of 1899-1902, he was appointed to the Staff and served in the Orange Free State, the Transvaal, and Cape Colony; taking part in the operations at Paardeberg and the actions at Poplar Grove, Vet River, Zand River, Pretoria, Diamond Hill, and Colesberg. Promoted major, November 1st, 1900, he was mentioned in despatches, gained the brevet rank of lieutenant-colonel, and was awarded the Queen's Medal with four clasps, the King's Medal with two clasps, and the Distinguished Service Order.

On November 8th, 1905, he was given the brevet rank of colonel, and from April 1st, 1908 to October 31st, 1909, was General Staff Officer, 2nd Grade, North Midland Division, Northern Command. With the substantive rank of colonel, from November 1st, 1909, to September 30th, 1913, he was General Staff Officer, 1st Grade, 6th Division, Irish Command, being made a C.B. in 1912; and with the temporary rank of brigadier-general he was Commander R.A., 4th Division, Eastern Command, October 1st, 1913, to August 4th, 1914.

General Milne crossed the Channel with the "Old Contemptibles" in 1914, was for a time Chief Staff Officer of the Headquarters Staff, Second Army, and was twice mentioned in the early lists of those whom Field-Marshal French recommended for gallant and distinguished services in the field, serving in both France and Flanders. As their divisional general, December, 1914 to September, 1915, officers and men of the 27th Division had many good things to say of him, and his services were recognised on February 8th, 1915, by his promotion to the rank of major-general.

Then came his transfer to Salonika, where, after holding for a time the command of the Sixteenth Corps, he, on May 9th, 1916, when Sir Bryon Mahon was transferred to Egypt, succeeded that general in the command of the British Salonika Force. From that date to the end of the war, General Milne—he was promoted temporary-lieutenant-general on December 14th, 1915—had a task as hard as that of any British general in the field. He had to contend against a vile climate; to control troops for whom home relief was uncertain and, anyhow, very rare; to be a politician as well as a soldier; to co-operate and see that all under his command co-operated to the best advantage with several bodies of allies; to accept orders from an allied chief—first General Sarrail, then General Guillaumat, and next General Franchet d'Espérey—and finally to plan an act of military sacrifice so that the enemy, who was powerful in numbers, confident in his strength, and all but impregnable in position, could be surprised by the French and Serbian forces.

The Truth about Salonika

Moreover, all this work had to be done with the minimum of home encouragement, and little reward beyond the consciousness of work well done. The Macedonian operations were scantily reported, the public knew little of what went on. Some thoughtless and ill-informed person, indeed, wrote a song, "If you don't want to fight, go to Salonika," which, as the Bishop of London pointed out, was gall and wormwood to those who had almost reached the limit of endurance.

Salonika was spoken of as a "side-show," and as such opposed very strongly by a section of critics in England. The few who got home on leave found the opinion common among their friends that they had been spending their time a few miles outside Salonika, with frequent opportunities of visiting on most evenings the cafés of the town. General Milne's despatches of October 8th, 1916, and December 1st, 1918, are evidence of how far these ideas were from the tragic truth.

One of General Milne's earlier acts after taking up his command was to arrange with General Sarrail that the British forces should become responsible for that portion of the allied front which covered Salonika from the east and north-east. In 1918, the British sector was some hundred miles long, and distant between fifty and sixty miles from the town of Salonika. On the north-east it barred the way against an advance from Serres and the Rupel Pass; on the north-west it both guarded and threatened the Vardar Valley, the enemy's main line of communication and his shortest and easiest road to Salonika, which the Germans had boasted would be in their hands by January 15th, 1916.

It is doubtful if at any time the allied forces in this region were really adequate in numbers for the task they had to fulfil. Apart from the actual fighting, the work that had to be done in the way of making trenches, entanglements, bridgeheads, supporting points, and ways of communication was appalling.

In March, 1918, the malevolent pro-German influence of King Constantine having been overcome, the 1st Hellenic (Larissa) Division was placed under General Milne's command and took over a sector of the line to the north of Lake Tahinos; but this reinforcement was counter-balanced by an extension of front, owing to the failure of the Russian troops under General Guillaumat's command.

Further additions from the Greek Army were again counterbalanced in May and June by the transfer of British infantry to France. Towards the end of July preparations began for a general offensive. To deceive the enemy as to the sector chosen for the main allied attack, operations were begun on September 1st against the salient north of Alcak Mahale, on the right bank of the Vardar. This was entirely successful. The general attack began on September 14th.

Defeat of Bulgaria

The Grand Couronne and the Pip Ridge were stormed by direct assault to draw away attention from the flanking movement of the Serbs and French. The Bulgars were held, the flank attack succeeded, but at heavy cost. One British battalion came out of the principal attack with nineteen unwounded soldiers and one wounded officer.

In spite of sickness and depleted ranks, the British joined in the pursuit of the flying enemy, and were only prevented from cutting off the main Bulgarian army from Sofia by the signature of the Convention of Salonika; and they were advancing to co-operate with the French and Serbians against Austria-Hungary when, on October 10th, General Milne was instructed to assume command of the allied troops operating against Turkey in Europe and to transfer the army under his command to that theatre of operations. Adrianople and Constantinople were under a direct threat of occupation when Turkey sued for peace.

General Milne closed his despatch of December 1st, 1918, with an expression of his "high appreciation of the splendid spirit and devotion to the service of their country shown by all ranks of his army, the majority of whom will return to their homes with constitutions shattered by a prolonged stay in this malarious and inhospitable country."

Promoted lieutenant-general, January 1st, 1917, and temporary general in August, 1918, General Milne was made a K.C.B. in January, 1918, a K.C.M.G. in January, 1919, and a G.C.M.G. in June, 1919. His foreign honours include the Dannebrog, 2nd Class, 1905; Star of Rumania, 3rd Class, 1906; Grand Cross White Eagle, Serbia, 1917. He was made a Grand Officer, Legion of Honour, France, 1917; and a Grand Officer SS. Maurice and Lazarus, Italy, 1917. In 1918 he was awarded the French Croix de Guerre with palm leaves. But beyond all he doubtless values highest the honorary degree of LL.D. conferred upon him by the Senatus of his alma mater, Aberdeen University. He is the senior Aberdonian in the British Army.

Germany and her Allies in Defeat

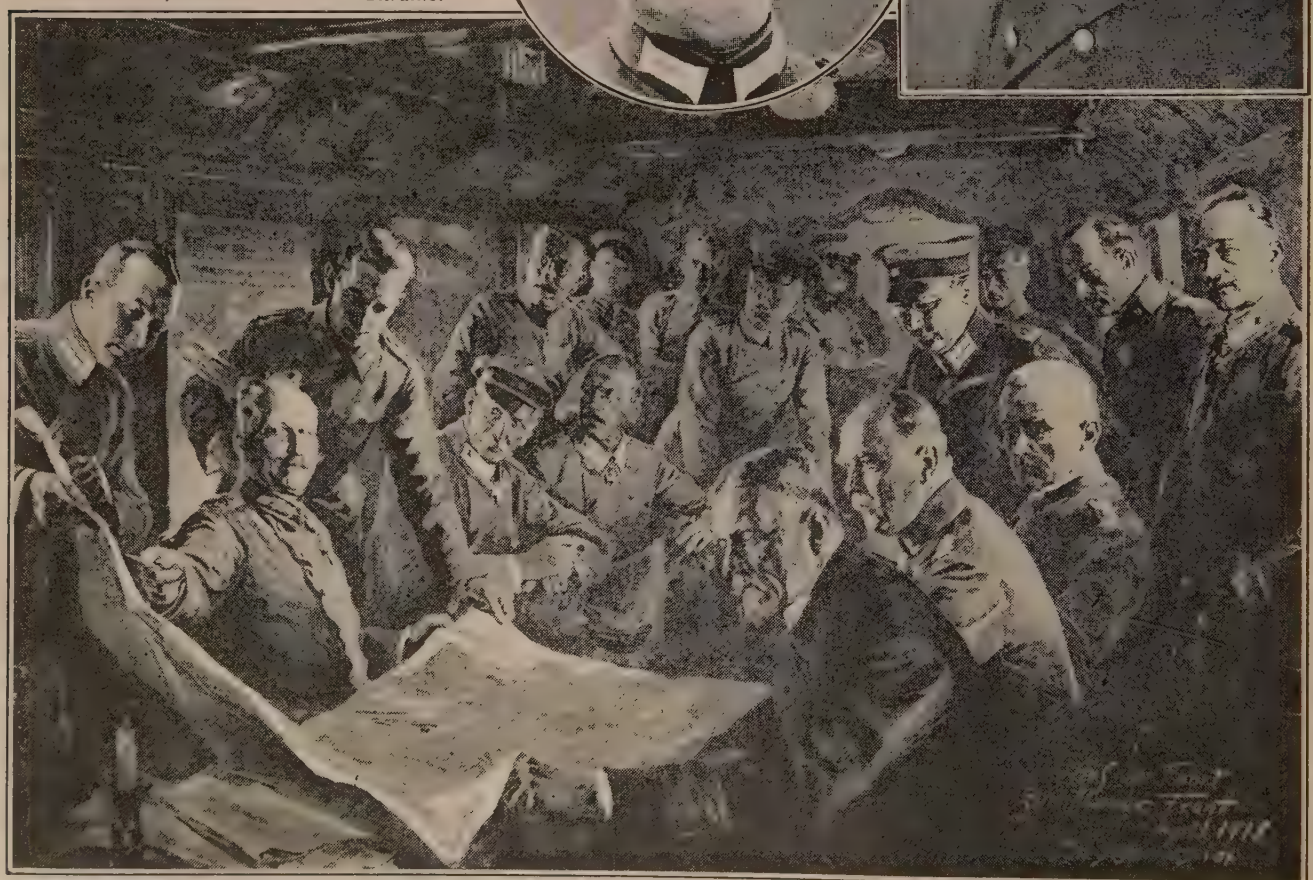
As the result of her military defeats Germany was forced to propose to the Allies an armistice. Mutinies broke out at Kiel and Hamburg early in November, 1918, and disturbances became general throughout Germany. The Kaiser and Crown Prince signed acts of abdication and sought refuge in Holland. A Republic was declared in February, 1919. The Emperor Charles of Austria abdicated in November, 1918, and the Dual Monarchy was dissolved.

WHAT HAS THE POST BROUGHT THIS TIME?—Arrival of the parcel-mail in a camp for German prisoners of war in England. The Hun prisoners who stand around look on with gloomy curiosity as the parcels are opened that a list of their contents may be made.

Heads of Hundom Plotting New Frightfulness

Gen. von Marwitz (seated), with his Chief of Staff, Col. von Tschischwitz, studying a map of the western front. In circle: Field-Marshal von Eichhorn, assassinated in the Ukraine.

Left to right: Prince Henry of Prussia, Maj.-Gen. von Sauberzweig (the notorious Hun slave-driver in Belgium), Maj.-Gen. Count Klopsch Kloth von Roden (Austria), the Kaiser, and General von Hutier.



"The Kaiser and his Staff on the way to Flanders," when they thought all was going well with their great offensive. Since then the All-Highest and his henchmen experienced a "surprise" at the hands of the Allies. Inset above: Vice-Admiral Behnke, succeeded Admiral von Capelle as German Secretary of State for the Admiralty. (The pictures on this page are from German newspapers.)

Prisoners of War, Spoils of War & Dogs of War

German prisoners, wounded and unwounded, captured by the Australians in one of their advances during the fighting in Flanders. They are ranged up in front of a camouflage net screen. (Australian official photograph.)

Lieut. Steinbrink, German U boat commander, claimed to have sunk 198 ships, and was described as the "champion." Champion wholesale murderer is scarcely a title of which to be proud.

In a Berlin depot for the sale of French steel helmets. These were sold to collectors for fancy prices, which suggests that the Germans knew the supply was by no means assured.

Taking out "military service" dogs for training. German dog owners were urged to give up their pets for war work.

German sailors patching an Ostend building damaged by a British raiding-party. (These four pictures are from enemy papers.)

Appalling German Abuse of a Wayside Calvary

It would be hard to find a more striking example of the irreverence ingrained in the German character that so shocks all the rest of Christendom than this abuse of a wayside Calvary. The soldiery of all the Allies treated these shrines with deep respect, and not one of them could be induced to fire deliberately at the Figure that presents all the ideals for which they were fighting. Knowing this, the Germans selected this Calvary as the safest imaginable spot whence an observer could direct the fire of their artillery—sacrilegiously seeking shelter behind the outstretched arm of the Christ whom they crucified anew every day.

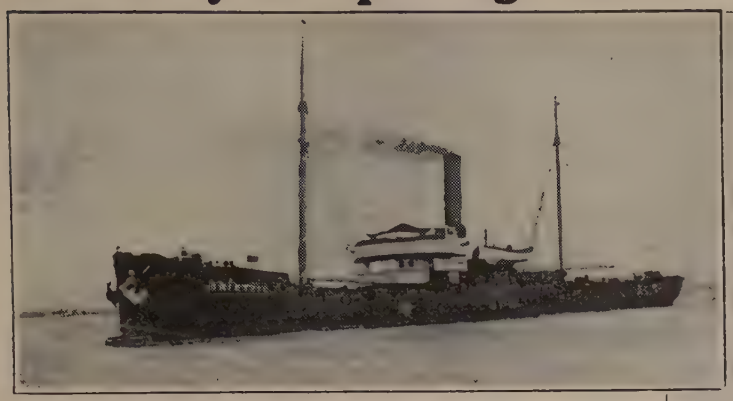
Lords of Misrule and Some of Their Poor Puppets

General Hilmi Pasha, chief of the Turks in the Dobruja. Right: General von Falkenhayn, commander of Austro-German troops, in a captured Rumanian town.

Karl I., the new Emperor of Austria-Hungary, with the Kaiser (in Austrian uniform), inspecting German troops on the western front. Indications were given that the young Austrian Emperor was less amenable to dictation than was the aged uncle whom he succeeded.

"KAMERAD! KAMERAD! PARDON!"—After July, 1916, by which time the British had acquired a definite superiority in guns and ammunition, the enemy rank and file showed an increasing readiness to surrender. The bravest among them would continue fighting until almost the last minute, only giving in when our men were actually upon them with bayonet and hand-grenades, but the moral of the rest was shattered, and they came forward in groups and in platoons, all with staring eyes, uplifted hands, and beseeching cries of "Kamerad!"

Germany Preparing for the War After the War

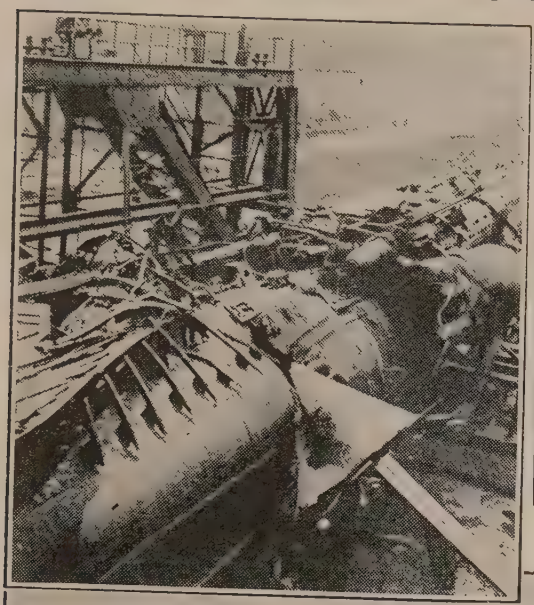


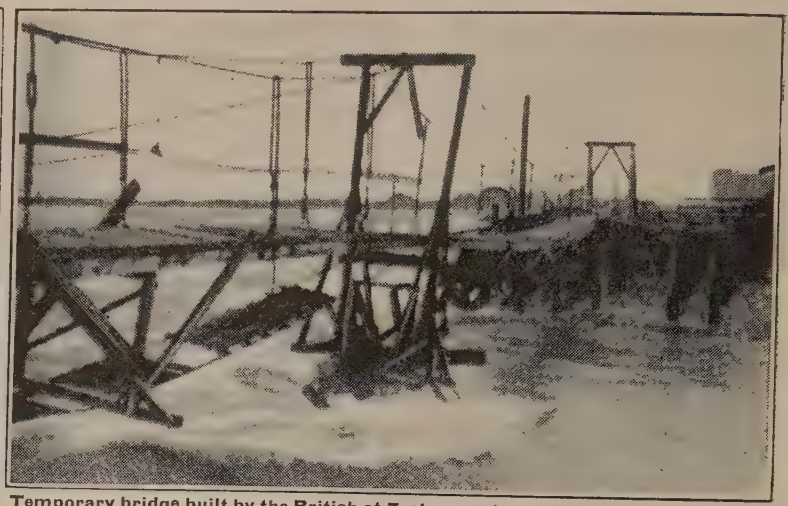
The Brietzig, of Hamburg, one of the four German steamers captured July 17, 1917, by British light forces off the Dutch coast.

Wireless station at Bagdad wrecked by the Turks immediately before the victorious entry into the town of the British under Sir Stanley Maude. Right: Mammoth German crane lifting a repaired submarine from the railway waggon on which it had been brought to the dock.

This impressionist drawing by a German artist shows the mammoth steamer Columbus of the Norddeutscher Lloyd (36,000 tons) on the shipbuilding slips in Danzig, a unit of the mercantile fleet with which Germany hoped to capture the commerce of the world after the war.

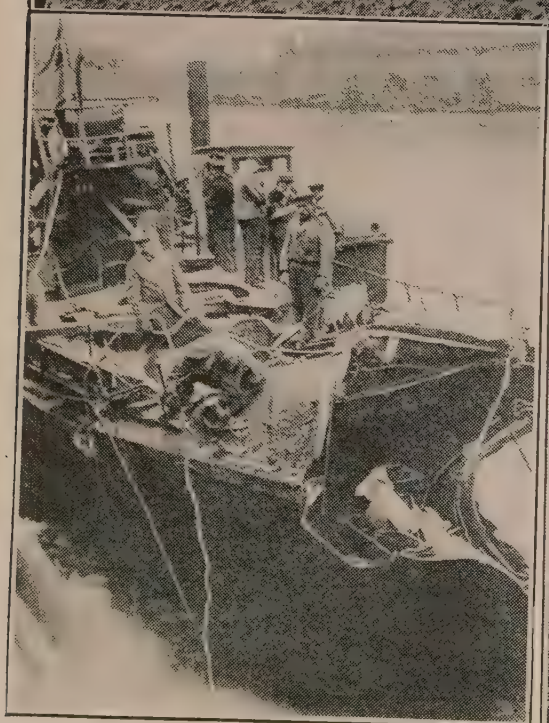
With the Kaiser in Bruges: Hun Camera Records





Temporary bridge built by the British at Zeebrugge to connect with the breached Mole. It replaced one destroyed by the Germans before retreating. Left: In Bruges docks. German submarine hit by a bomb from a British aeroplane.

Handley Page bomber brought down near Bruges last year, and (right) the Kaiser leaving the Hotel de Ville, Bruges. He is talking to Von Schroder, commandant of the town, who was responsible for the murder of Captain Fryatt.



German coasting vessel which had been mined taken to Bruges docks for repairs, and (right) Germans inspecting the Vindictive as she lay blocking the entrance to Ostend Harbour. All the photographs on this page (excepting the right-hand top one) were taken by a German officer who, before being compelled to leave Belgium, had given them to a Belgian photographer to develop. (Exclusive.)

To face page 3411

ENEMY RULERS WHO LOST THEIR THRONES BY REASON OF THE TRIUMPH OF THE ALLIES.

Front row (left to right): Abbas Hilmi, Khedive of Egypt, King Constantine of Greece, Emperor Charles of Austria, William II., German Emperor, German Crown Prince, King Ferdinand of Bulgaria, and King William of Wurtemberg. Middle row: King Ludwig of Bavaria, Duke Ernest Augustus of Brunswick, King Frederick Augustus III. of Saxony, Grand Duke Frederick Francis IV. of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, and Grand Duke Ernest Ludwig of Hesse. At the back: Duke of Saxe-Coburg, Grand Duke Frederick II. of Baden, Grand Duke of Saxe-Weimar, Prince Aribert of Anhalt, and Duke Bernhard of Saxe-Meiningen. With the exception of the Khedive of Egypt, who was deposed in December, 1914, and King Constantine of Greece, who was compelled by the Allies to abdicate on June 11th, 1917, these Kings and Princes lost their thrones in consequence of the triumph of the Allied Powers.

Giant German Periscope With Telescopic Tube

One of the first trophies taken by the French in their opening attacks of July, 1916, was a novel periscope found in the Wood of Assevillers. It was made by Zeiss, of Jena, and had enormously powerful lenses. Normally it was extended to about 50 ft., and at that height its own wheeled carriage supported it; but, if desired, it could be extended to a height of about 85 ft., when it was kept in position by stays and struts. In the inset it is shown packed for travelling, in which condition the French found it. Never having seen anything of the kind before, they thought at first that it was some new piece of artillery.

Twilight of the German Gods

By HAMILTON FYFE

TO the student of history who takes a large view of human affairs the connection of what happened in November 1918 with the events of the past needs no pointing out. But as it is impossible for all to be students, and as, moreover, of those who have studied history, only a small proportion are able to "see it steadily and see it whole," it is worth while dwelling for a little while upon that connection, and showing why this is a particularly interesting moment in the development of the European peoples.

The last resounding date in the world-struggle for Freedom was the date of the French Revolution. France was the first of the countries ruled absolutely which threw off the yoke and declared for popular government. England had never submitted to absolutism. Her nobles had always been powerful enough to keep a check upon kingly pretensions. It was not until James the First invented it that we heard of the "Divine right" of monarchs. Of the four Stuart sovereigns who claimed it, one was beheaded; another driven from the kingdom and dispossessed of his heritage. That was the last heard of "Divine right" in this country. But on the Continent it flourished until France, in 1789, sent monarchy flying and established a republic.

Bismarck and Counter-Revolution

At once began the movement known as the Counter-Revolution. The trade union of Kings plotted and planned measures for keeping their peoples under. Statesmen who were genuinely convinced that benevolent despotism was a better form of government than a Parliamentary system strove to stem the flood of liberty. They were nearly everywhere successful. In 1848 there were outbursts of impatience in many lands. Even the Prussians made their King tremble for his safety, and Germany very nearly started upon a career which would have set her in the front rank of free nations instead of lagging behind in the shadows of mediævalism long after all others had cast off the degrading chains of despotic rule.

But the 1848 effort soon expired, and during the next ten years there came into prominence one who did more than any other single statesman to prop up the decaying pillars of Divine right monarchy. Bismarck avowed himself to be opposed altogether to popular government. "The principle of the battle against the Revolution I acknowledge to be mine," he wrote to a friend in 1857. Five years after this he became Minister-President of Prussia, and began at once to shape the destinies of Europe in the interests of his sovereign and of a Germany that should be united once more.

Bismarck was a vivid type of the Counter-Revolutionary statesman. He was in favour of making people comfortable, and giving them reason to be contented, but only in order that they might do as they were told. He looked upon mankind in the same light as a chess-player looks at his pawns. He did not rate the welfare of the common people at a pin's fee beside the welfare of the dynasties and ruling castes. He was at the same time a religious man, in the ordinary sense of the word "religious"—that is to say, he professed a firm belief in the existence of God—and what most of us would call nowadays an unprincipled, cynical, stick-at-nothing servant of the devil.

"During the time I was in office," he wrote in his Memoirs, "I advocated three wars—the Danish, the Bohemian, and the French—but each time I first made it clear to myself whether the war, if successful, would bring a prize of victory worth the sacrifices which every war requires, and which now are so much greater than in the last century."

The Kaiser's Determination

It was one of the "principles" of the Counter-Revolution that wars should be undertaken whenever they gave promise of advantage, or whenever they seemed desirable as a means of diverting a nation's attention from projects of reform. All the expedients which Machiavelli set forth as permissible for monarchs in his treatise "The Prince" were adopted by Bismarck, as they had been by Metternich before him, and were afterwards by punier men such as Prince Bülow and the shadowy figures who ruled Austria in Franz Josef's name.

Gradually German statesmen were abandoning this point of view. Bethmann Hollweg, for example, held opinions not differing in essence from those of an English politician. But neither he nor anyone else ever managed to deflect the determination of the Emperor William II. to proclaim himself on all occasions the head of the Counter-Revolutionary movement, the favourite and the anointed of the Lord.

He had got rid of Bismarck, but he held tightly to the Bismarckian theory of the objects of Government. He and his family and the smaller kings and princes of Germany must always be the first consideration. "His" people had been given to him by the Almighty, and it was for him to rule over them. They could not be allowed to rule themselves. His the power of making war, of sending hundreds of thousands to "their graves like beds," just for what Shakespeare called, in the passage from which I am quoting, "a fantasy, a trick of fame," just to increase his dominions or enlarge his dignity.

"The Close of an Epoch"

The Emperor Karl of Austria belonged to the new school of sovereigns. He had no illusions about being Divinely endowed. His aim would, if he had lasted out the war, have been to become a constitutional monarch. But William II. abated no jot or tittle of his claim to mediæval pretensions. He defied the Revolution to do its worst, and it ruthlessly swept him away.

Now we can see what the German Conservative papers mean when they lament the close of an epoch. "Wilson's peace," said one of them, "destroys what Bismarck built up." Another wailed, "Bismarck lifted us up to be a master-nation, giving light to all the world and taking the lead among them." Even a man of liberal sympathies like Frederic Naumann wrote in his paper with a touch of regret, "The old generation feels broadly to-day that the Bismarckian period has really come to an end."

Yes, that is what the defeat of Germany portends, the triumph of the principles of the Revolution, the downfall of those which were professed by the Counter-Revolutionaries. It is not true that Bismarck "lifted Germany up." The German people won their place among the foremost nations by their industry, their perseverance, their enterprise. But Bismarck certainly cemented together the German Empire and left a solid system which might have been a bulwark against popular Government if—if one hardly knows what to suggest as the cause of that system's complete and irreparable break-up.

I read in 1917, while I was on the Italian front, a pamphlet which someone gave me written to prove that the Germans still worshipped the same old tribal gods as their distant ancestors. In the "Nineteenth Century" for November 1918 the same idea was developed by Dr. Arthur Shadwell. "Götterdämmerung" he called his article. The German Army commanders, he points out, named their trench systems after the gods of Valhalla, around whom Wagner wove his Ring operas. In the end those gods came to a bad end. Twilight closed round them. They faded away. That is the fate which overtook the false gods of modern Germany. Not merely twilight wrapped them, but the darkness of annihilation.

At the last the Emperor made a despairing effort to fit himself in with the new order. "We all want, and I want especially," he said, "that the German people shall become the freest people in the world." But the gesture came too late. It accorded too grotesquely with all that had gone before. The little posturing figure had postured its last.

The Imperial Actor

It would have been more dignified to leave the stage before the audience hooted him off it. But dignity was never his long suit. The theory of the Counter-Revolution demanded for its successful presentation that the ruler should at all events appear to be wise and good beyond the ordinary. No one knew better than Bismarck that sovereigns were below rather than above the average of human attainments. He did not try to conceal his low opinion of the old Emperor William, whom he called his master. But he based his ideas of government for Germany upon the unity which could only be gained by having a figurehead to serve as the symbol of the "vigorous military power of Prussia," always to be kept, as he put it, "in the foreground."

It would have been hard to imagine a figure less suggestive of "vigorous military power" than William the Second. He was an emotionalist, almost a neurasthenic. He talked about shining swords and mailed fists with the theatricality of a third-rate politician. His utterances during the war betrayed a lack of balance utterly unfitting him for the rôle he tried to play. There was a shrill note in them, a note of hysteria, whether he was confident or depressed. His acting did not carry conviction.

For his life was one long piece of acting, one long endeavour to prove that he was the reincarnation of his ancestor Frederick the Great. If he were, he would not the less have been an anachronism. The day of despotic government is over. The gods which were supposed to look with favour upon irresponsible monarchs are as dead as Dagon. May they never be revived by the folly and servility of man!

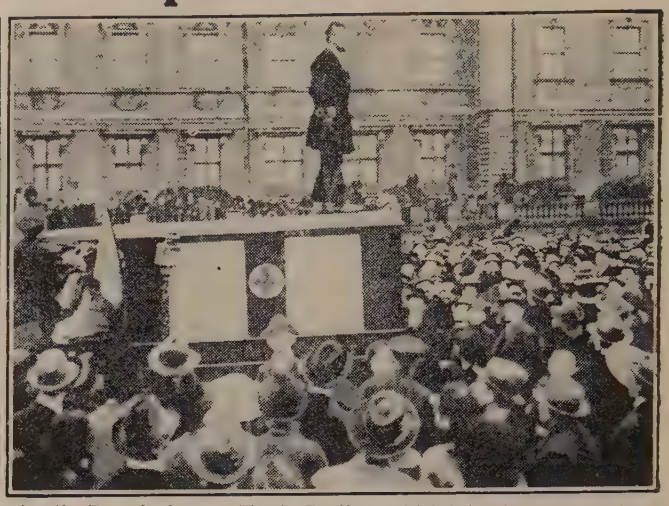
War Lords Who Sought Personal Safety in Flight

The ex-Kaiser in exile. "William of Hohenzollern" driving out near the Chateau of Amerongen, in Holland, where he had sought refuge from justice. Right: Officers of the ex-Kaiser's Staff make threatening gestures at the photographer who "snapped" them.

The Emperor who fled over a neutral frontier. The ex-Kaiser (centre figure) at his Amerongen retreat in Holland.

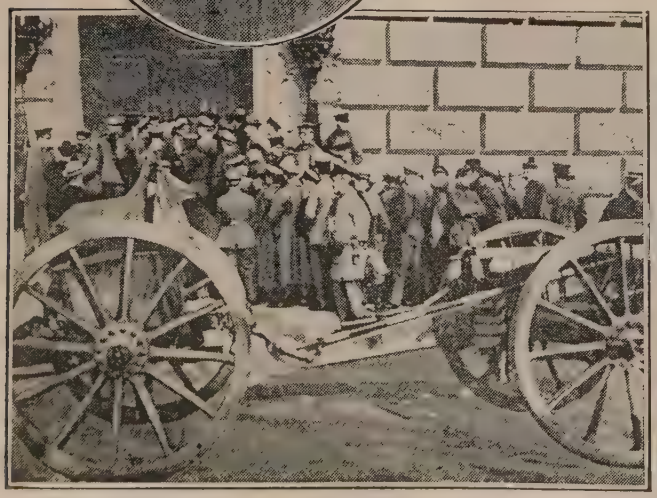
The ex-Crown Prince (second from the left) en route for the island of his internment in the Zuyder Zee. He met with a distinctly hostile reception on parts of his journey, and was received in grim silence by the fisher-folk of the island where he was interned. Inset above: The ex-Crown Prince (left) at Swalmen, where he stayed for a while on his journey through Holland.

Under the Red Flag in Republican Berlin



Armed motor belonging to the Workmen's and Soldiers' Council passing the Brandenburger Tor in Berlin, and (right) a German workman addressing the crowd from the roof of an ambulance in Berlin after the declaration of a German Republic on November 9th, 1918.

Funeral of some of those who lost their lives during the revolutionary disorders in Berlin, and (in oval) Herr Haase, a Socialist leader, delivering an oration.



German soldiers—some of them armed with their rifles—and one of their guns at the door of the Reichstag building in Berlin. Right: A supporter of the new Government making a speech from the front of the Crown Prince's palace on November 9th, 1918, only an hour or so after the establishment of the Republic had been declared.

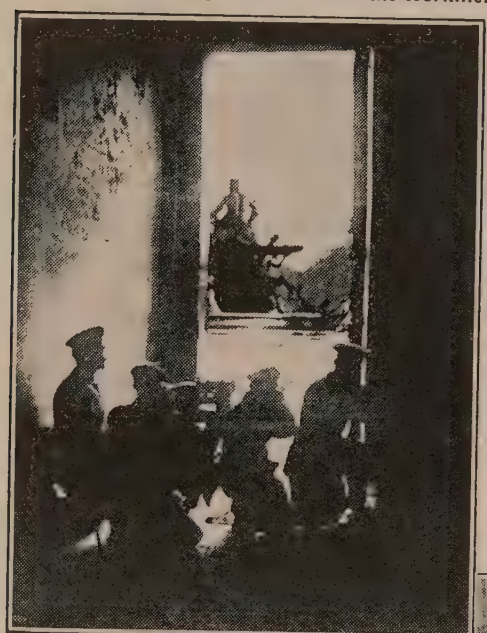
Without & Within: Germany Deciding Her Destiny

On November 9th, 1918, a great crowd gathered outside the Reichstag, to whom Deputy Scheidemann announced the abdication of the Kaiser, the overthrow of the dynasty, and the establishment of a republic. A delegate of the Corps of Officers of a Guard battalion announced that the officers were on the side of the people. Stormy applause and jubilation accompanied all speeches.

On the evening of the same day the Workmen's and Soldiers' Council held their first sitting in the large hall of the Reichstag. It was opened by Herr Barth as President, who greeted the victorious revolt of the Berlin proletariat and paid a tribute to the behaviour of the Berlin garrison, which had taken sides with the people and so helped the Revolution to win an almost bloodless victory.

Imperial Berlin Invaded by Red Revolution

Machine-gun post of Socialists in the Schloss-Platz, south of the Imperial Palace, Berlin, at the foot of the monumental fountain by Begas. Right: Members of the Workmen's and Soldiers' Council with a machine-gun trained on the Imperial stables.



Members of the Workmen's and Soldiers' Council distributing Socialist newspapers to the population from a motor-lorry. Left: Loyal officers defending the Imperial stables against Revolutionists firing at them from the courtyard.

Sailors and soldiers at Wilhelmshaven celebrating the signing of the armistice by marching through the town in procession under the Red Flag. These were the first photographs to reach this country of the Revolutionary disturbances in Berlin, November, 1918.

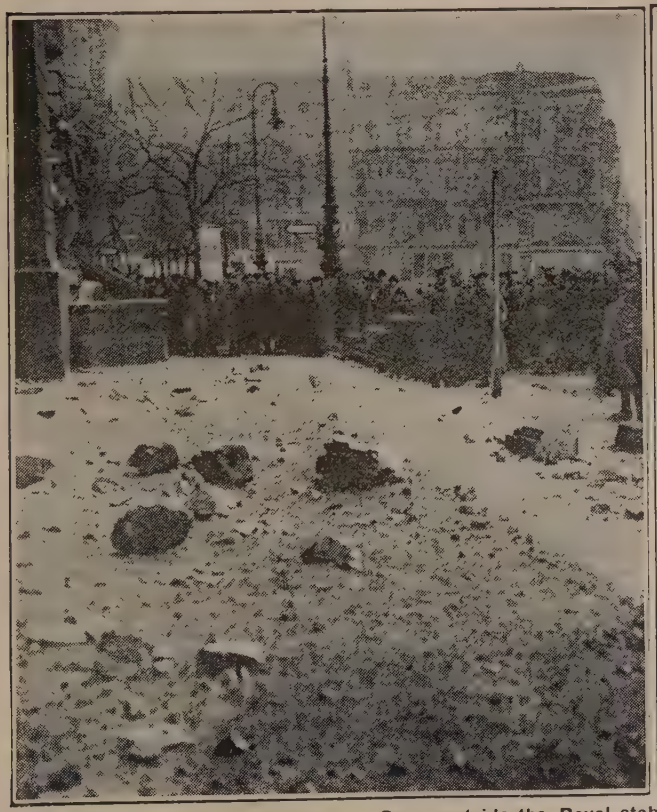
'Red' Victims of Chaos in the Prussian Capital

Civil war in the Prussian capital. Some of the "Spartacists" taking a machine-gun through Berlin during the troubles that preceded the killing of their leaders, Liebknecht and "Red Rosa," and (right) a machine-gun in action on the balcony of a Berlin house.

Karl Liebknecht, leader of "Spartacist" revolutionists, killed in Berlin, Jan. 15th, 1919.

Rosa Luxemburg, a leader of the "Spartacists," killed in Berlin, Jan. 15th, 1919.

Friederich Ebert, head of the Majority Socialists and German Chancellor.



Berlin in the throes of revolution. Scene outside the Royal stables, showing fragments of the masonry that had fallen from the bombarded building during the struggle between contending factions. Right: Arrival in the Prussian capital of German troops from their defeated armies in the west—defeat being camouflaged behind banners and floral decorations.

Ebert Beats Extremists in Barricaded Berlin

Outside the offices of the Socialist journal "Vorwaerts," in Berlin, when in the hands of "Spartacists." On January 10th, 1919, the Government forces brought artillery to bear on the offices, when the front of the building collapsed and many "Spartacists" were killed.

Party of armed "Spartacists" advancing cautiously along a Berlin street, on the look-out for adherents of Ebert's Government; and (right) Berliners running to take cover when shooting began between parties of the Government troops and their Extremist opponents.

"Spartacist" barricade—formed of rolls of paper and bundles of newspapers—near the "Tageblatt" offices during the severe fighting in the Press quarter of Berlin in the second week of January, 1919. The fighting in this quarter of the capital ended on January 11th with the success of the Government troops. Right: Representatives of the opposing forces—note the flag of truce—discussing an armistice.

The War by Sea and Air

In this section are found historic pictures and literary matter illustrative of the surrender of Germany's High Sea Fleet to Admiral Beatty off the Firth of Forth, November 21st, 1918, and the surrender of German submarines to the British off Harwich. On December 11th H.M.S. Hercules, with an Allied Naval Commission, arrived in Kiel Harbour. Thus ended Germany's dream of world dominion.

SUNSET ON GERMANY'S SEA-POWER.—The return of the Grand Fleet to the Firth of Forth with seventy surrendered German warships was a superb spectacle. At 11.4 Sir David Beatty signalled: "The German flag will be hauled down at sunset, and will not be hoisted again without permission." As the British Battle Squadron passed his flagship the Queen Elizabeth cheering the Commander-in-Chief, Sir David stood in the evening sun waving his cap in this impressive final ceremony.

Last Sailing of the Hun Armada

Its Inglorious Voyage from Kiel to Scapa Flow

By EDWARD WRIGHT

"The German people will have to seek firm cohesion in its glorious Army and in its belaurelled young Fleet."—Baron von Freytag-Loringhoven.

THE good old German gods, in whom the Huns put their trust, must be convulsed with derisive laughter at the expense of their victims. Within a few months of the day on which Baron von Freytag-Loringhoven uttered his proud boast, the "belaurelled young Fleet" lay helpless in the harbours of Harwich and Rosyth.

The U boats, belaurelled with records of murder and piracy, and the High Sea Fleet, be-barnacled from the Kiel Canal, humbly, even cravenly, crept out of their hiding-places in submission—the U boats to Admiral Tyrwhitt, and the surface ships to Admiral Beatty. The surrender in batches of the U boats was the more important of the two historic events, the coming out of the High Sea Fleet the more spectacular.

In the morning mist of **November 21st, 1918**, two long columns of ships of the line steamed in sombre majesty over a leaden sea, under a leaden sky, fifty miles off the Firth of Forth. Ahead were light cruisers, and veiled in the fog were protective swarms of destroyers. The hundred thousand men manning the ships were in a mood of grim expectation. With their paravanes out to enable them to escape any secret minefield they stood in action stations. In the great turrets, by the breech of every gun, was a cage with shell and charge ready to be rammed home, and at all fire-control positions gunnery officers were intent upon marking down the enemy.

Drama of the Meeting Fleets

Smudges appeared on the sky-line, and gradually took the shape of enemy battle-cruisers and battleships. Closer they came, until the range for action was murderously short and the flag of their admiral could be seen. Britons and Americans fingered the mechanism of their turrets, and the directing instruments were all turned with deadly precision on the single line of the oncoming enemy fleet. Men scanned the narrowing intervening space of water for the wake of torpedoes. But nothing happened, except that the lightening mood of the Britons, who had half-hoped for a battle, was reflected by a transformation in the scene of an ignominious surrender.

The sun broke through the clouds, and dappled with blood-red tint the grey shapes of the leading German battle-cruisers. There were men who said to each other that it was the blood of the children murdered in watering-places on the Yorkshire coast that stained the steel of the Moltke. But sea and sky brightened soon with chill gladness. To the men of the island race, November 21st, 1918, was a day of victory such as Drake, Blake, and Nelson had not known, and by happy chance Nature put off her wintry vesture and smiled on the strangely quiet drama of the meeting fleets. As the clouds shredded away from the sun, under a strong wind that took the flags that had flown at Jutland and stretched them in streaming, tattered glory, a lane of dancing gold sparkled down the water between the two lines of British and American capital ships.

The lines formed an imprisoning gateway of steel, with Sir David Beatty, in the Queen Elizabeth, at the end of the gateway acting as warden. Slowly all the finest forces of the German Navy crept into the moving gate that closed behind them. The captors turned about, and keeping at a distance of three miles on either side of their captives, as a precaution against underhanded or torpedo attack, steamed for Rosyth.

Corpse of German Sea-Power

Still there remained many British seamen who wished for something to happen. They thought that, for the sake of the general honour of fighting seamen throughout the world, something might take place. Would not some German sink his ship rather than surrender it with its tremendous fighting power intact? Nothing happened. In eloquent silence, beween the guarding lines of the most silent, powerful, and victorious instruments of sea-power seen on the waters of the earth, the great Fleet that had surrendered without firing one shot crawled towards its temporary prison anchorage in the Firth of Forth.

The German ships formed but the corpse of German sea-power. They were drawn in funeral procession to a shameful grave, somewhat as the bodies of suicides used to be hauled for burial under a stake at cross-roads. There were empty magazines and skeleton crews on the rusty, neglected warships that had been built to win the dominion of the world. Not only had the soul gone out of the warships; it had passed, with the passing of the sea spirit, from some eighty thousand Teutonic seamen, Marines, and naval division men. The unparalleled spectacle of the final ceremony of surrender, when by order of Admiral Beatty the German flags were hauled down from the German ships at sunset, consummated a national tragedy of cowardice.

This tragedy had opened in the last week of October, when the German High Sea Fleet was about to put out to sea. In addition to all the seamen, there was collected a large force of Marines and other fighting men. The men were told the design merely was to interrupt the transport of British and American troops and munitions across the Channel by means of a dashing raid by light craft. The battle-cruisers and battleships, it was explained, were only to steam out a little way as supporting forces.

Invasion Plot that Failed

Everything possible was said and done to induce the sailors to go quietly and steadily on the expedition. But the men knew they were being told lies, and that the real design was to attempt, by a grand naval stroke, to help the half-encircled and breaking armies of Hindenburg to escape from immediate disaster. It was a battle of utter desperation that Admiral von Hipper, the new commander of the German High Sea Fleet, intended. Hipper, it will be remembered, emerged into evil notoriety off Whitby and Scarborough, but he did not lack bitter courage. The plan he adopted was that which Lord Fisher had long foreseen.

Outside the Firth of Forth some twenty-seven German submarines were waiting beneath the water to ambush the Grand Fleet. Then across the course the British squadrons would have to take when pursuing the Germans a great secret minefield was newly laid. There was to be, apparently, a landing on the English coast of some fifty thousand men, who would have to fight forward to the death and ravage as much as possible, while the enemy fleet crashed through the British patrols and, reaching the Atlantic, play havoc with the British and American sea lines of communication, until ship after ship was gradually overtaken and sunk.

The calculated damage and disorder would have been enormous. Germany, in the hour when her armies were being overwhelmed, would have ended her career as a great sea Power with honour, even if, as was most likely, Sir David Beatty defeated the plan of the enemy admiral. But the German Navy was dead by the end of October, 1918, and when an attempt was made to galvanise its empty carcass to life complete rottenness set in.

In some ships stokers were induced to get up steam, but the fighting crews forced their way into the engine-rooms and, using the same fire-extinguishers as had been employed in the Jutland Bank action to put out the flames caused by British shells, they extinguished the boiler fires. Marines were then called out to shoot the mutineers. In some cases these soldiers of the Fleet succeeded in temporarily cowing some of the sailor men, but they themselves were in a mood of revolt. At night many of them wept over their fate. They had as little stomach for battle as their comrades, and with a feeling of angry shame they also began to turn against their officers.

Sailors and Revolution

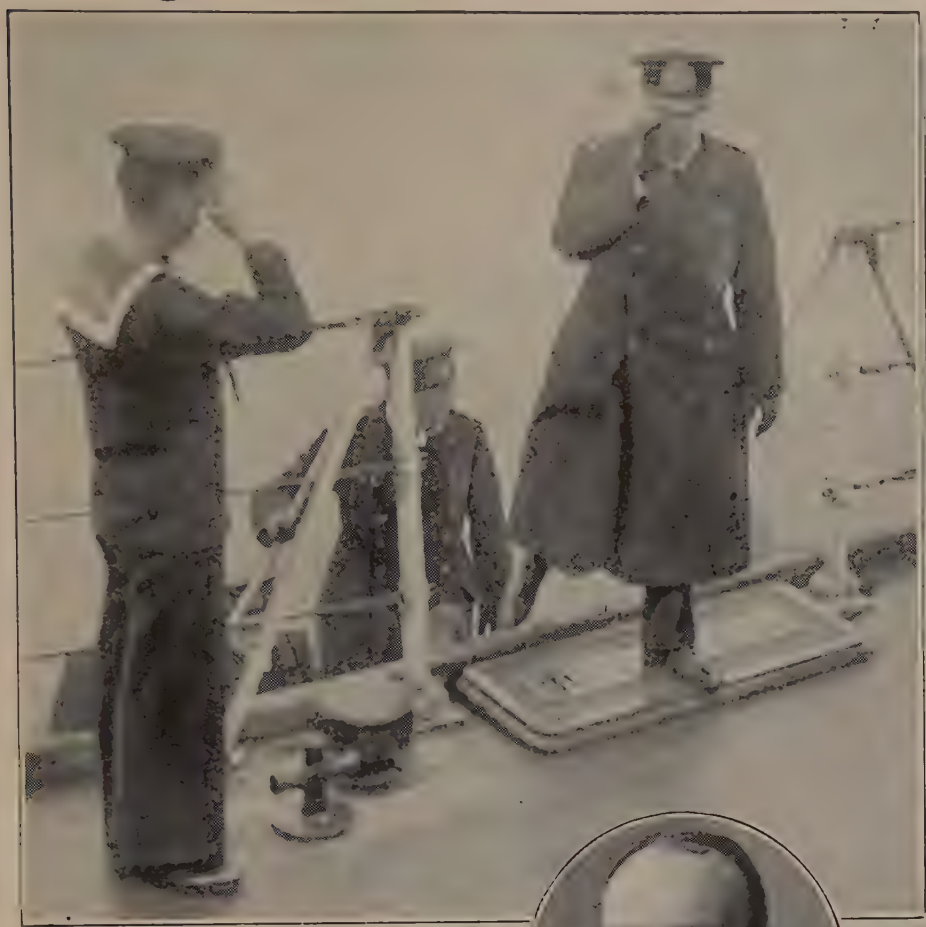
It must be admitted that some officers of the enemy Fleet were ready to die like fighting men. They at least had something of the tiger courage of the old type of pirates. They knew that the curse of mankind rested on them, and, they had a devil's pride that might have kept them game to the last. All their sinister strength of character, however, was only the frenzy of despair.

Rather than face the British guns again the landsmen of Germany, conscripted into a sea life for which they were by nature unfitted, turned upon their officers and shot them down. At least one German naval captain joined the mutineers. It is a curious fact that revolutions in despotic military States usually begin among sailors. The French Revolution started at Toulon before the fall of the Bastille. The first Russian Revolution opened at Kronstadt, and the German Revolution began at Kiel.

It was the Grand Fleet of Britain which inflicted decisive disaster upon the armies of Hindenburg. By battering the enemy into a condition of fear in the only fleet engagement of the war, by reducing him in health in a slow but persistent blockade, and finally terrorising him by the use of depth charges and other strange and deadly forms of underwater warfare, the seamen of Britain so infected the German crews with panic that the contagion of surrendering cowardice immediately spread to the German armies.

Admiral Beatty, without knowing it, outraced Marshal Foch in achieving the decision in the war on land as well as at sea.

Ending the Vain Dream of German Sea-Dominion



Admiral Sir David Beatty, Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Fleet. Left: Rear-Admiral Meurer coming aboard Sir David Beatty's flagship to arrange the surrender of the German High Sea Fleet.

Admiral Meurer with the three German officers who accompanied him—two being the commanders of a submarine and of a Zeppelin respectively—on the quarter-deck of H.M.S. Queen Elizabeth, where on Nov. 16th, 1918, the details were settled of the ceremony of handing over the German warships. In circle: Rear-Admiral Hugo von Meurer, Plenipotentiary of the German Naval High Command.

Locked in the Firth of Forth at Set of Sun

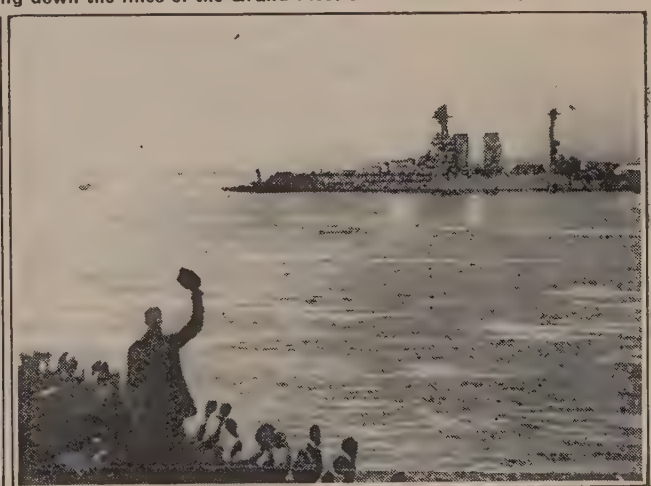
Scapa Flow, where the German warships were interned. This sea-basin in the Orkneys, about fifteen miles long by eight broad, approached by narrow sounds requiring knowledge and good seamanship to navigate, is an ideal place for containing an enemy fleet.

German destroyers passing through the Grand Fleet on the way to internment. The terms of armistice required fifty of Germany's newest destroyers to be handed over for internment, and forty-nine actually surrendered—one (V20) striking a mine and sinking on the way over. Inset: Admiral Sir David Beatty watching the surrender scenes from the bridge of his flagship the Queen Elizabeth.

Britain's Most Glorious Hour Since Trafalgar

The Grand Fleet steaming under the Forth Bridge when putting to sea to meet the seventy warships of the German High Sea Fleet on the morning of November 21st, 1918. Right: H.M.S. Cardiff, attended by naval airships, leading the surrendering German vessels down the line of British warships that were to escort them later to internment in Scapa Flow.

Admiral Sir David Beatty, Admiral Rodman, U.S., the King, Admiral Sims, U.S., and the Prince of Wales aboard H.M.S. Queen Elizabeth. Right: H.M.S. Oak, with the King on board, passing down the lines of the Grand Fleet on November 20th, 1918.

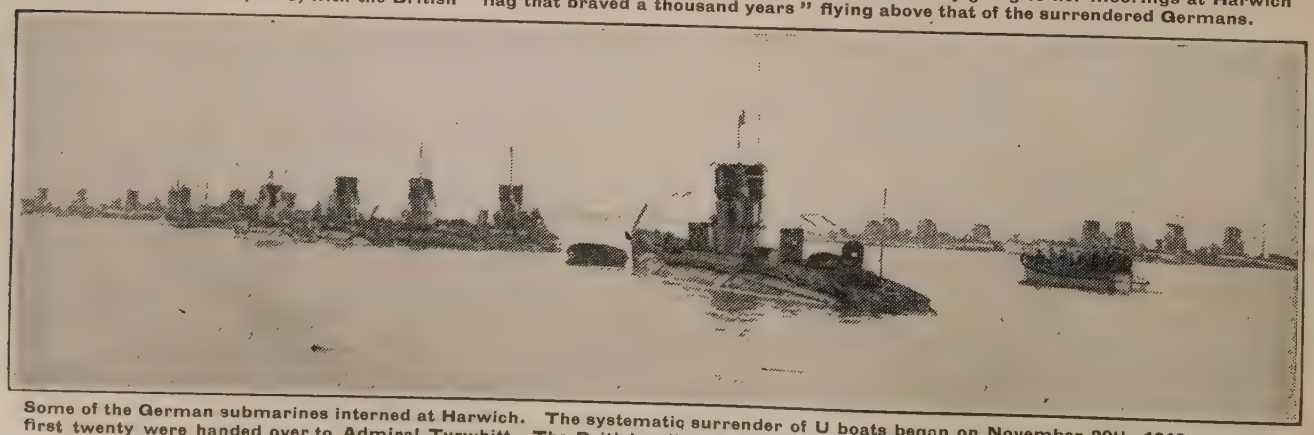


General view taken from one of H.M. destroyers of the German High Sea Fleet arriving to surrender. Right: The Grand Finale: Crew of H.M.S. Hercules, flagship of the Fourth Battle Squadron, cheering Admiral Beatty on his flagship the Queen Elizabeth.

Some Arrivals at 'U Boat Avenue,' Harwich

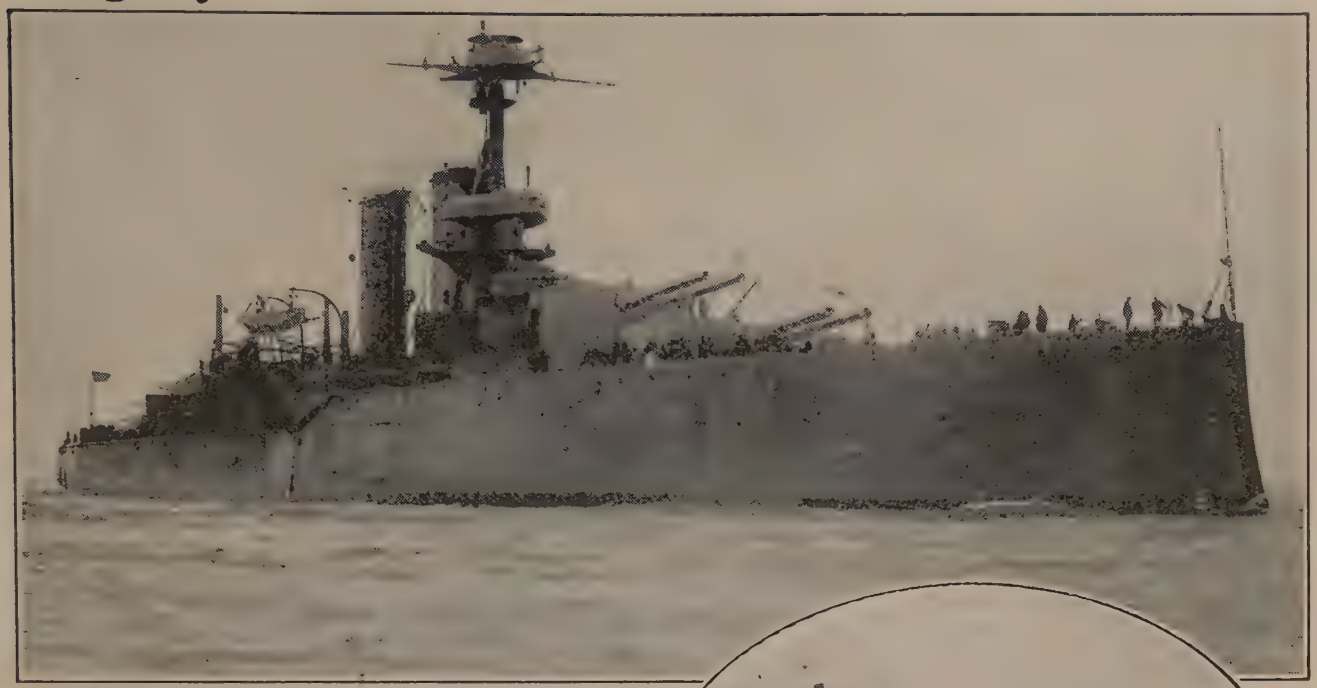
A tugload of sightseers going down "U Boat Avenue," at Harwich, where the surrendered German submarines were interned. More than a hundred were there on November 24th, 1918.

Lieut. Blacklock, D.S.C., demanding to be informed as to the whereabouts of the German ensign which had disappeared from one of the U boats as soon as the British boarding-party came alongside; and (right) U boat 48 under way going to her moorings at Harwich on November 24th, 1918, with the British "flag that braved a thousand years" flying above that of the surrendered Germans.

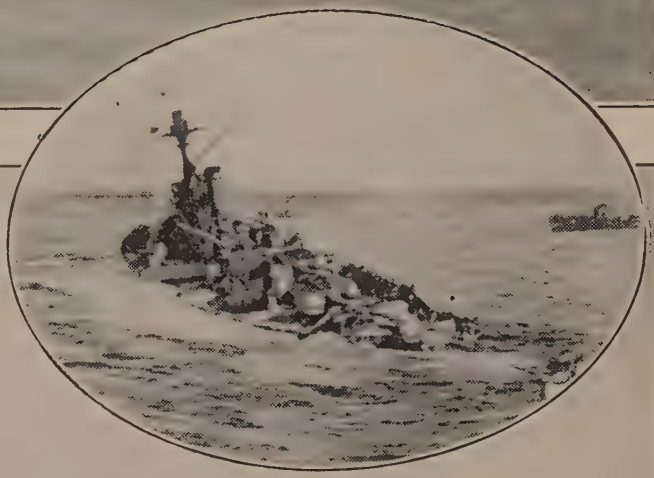


Some of the German submarines interned at Harwich. The systematic surrender of U boats began on November 20th, 1918, when the first twenty were handed over to Admiral Tyrwhitt. The British sailors accepted the surrender in complete silence, for "these were boats whose like had fouled the traditions of the sea, and humiliation was a light punishment for those who manned them."

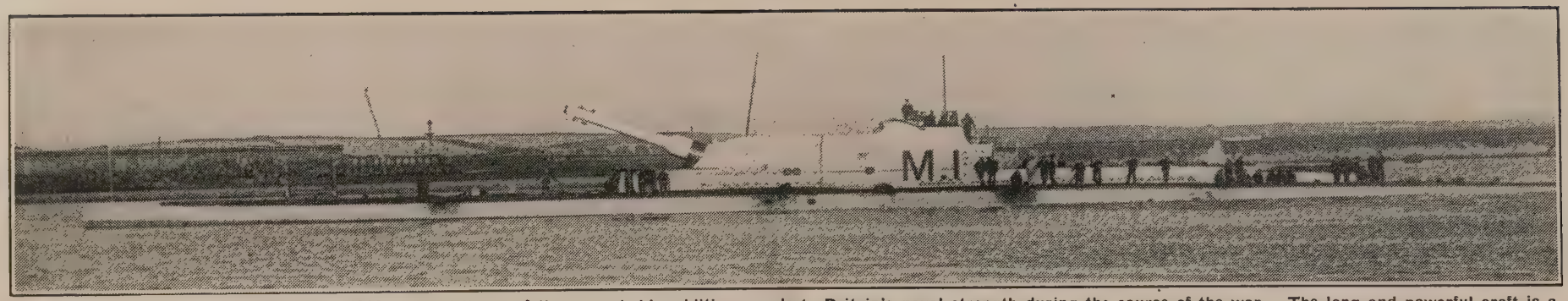
Tragedy of the Sea Revealed After Four Years



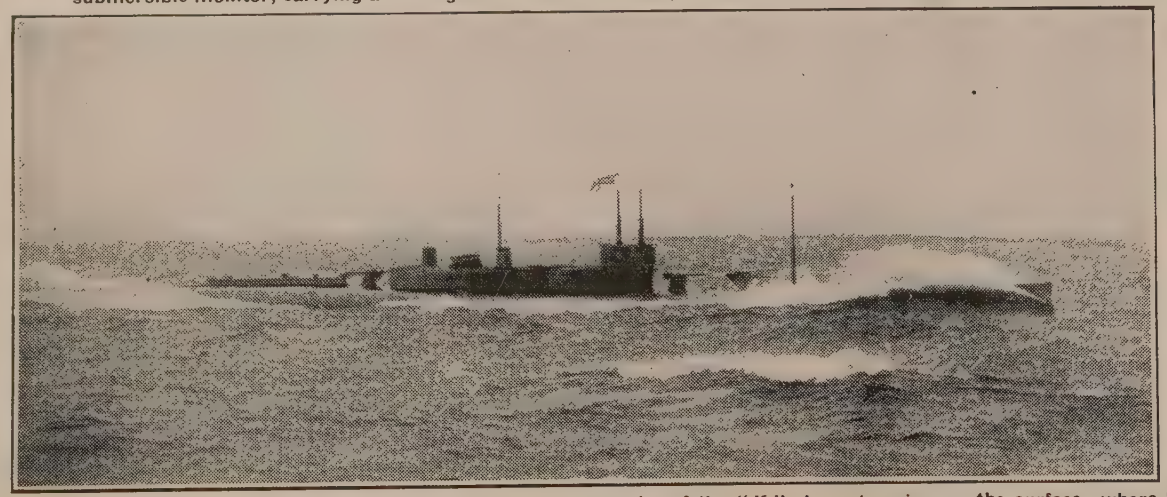
H.M.S. Audacious, the loss of which off the Irish coast on Oct. 27th, 1914, was only officially announced on Nov. 14th, 1918.



Taking off the survivors from the sinking battleship Audacious, and (in circle) the vessel gradually submerging. It was between 9 and 10 a.m. that the Audacious struck a mine which exploded her magazine, but though many of her crew were injured, none was killed. The loss of the ship was not published earlier at the urgent request of the Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Fleet.



Photograph, first made public early in 1919, of "M1," one of the remarkable additions made to Britain's naval strength during the course of the war. The long and powerful craft is a submersible monitor, carrying a 12 in. gun. This is the most powerfully armed submersible vessel ever constructed, and she was laid down in 1914. Her gun fires a shell of 850 lb.



One of Britain's well-kept secrets of the sea. A super-submarine of the "K" class steaming on the surface—where her two funnels give her something of the appearance of an ordinary warship. Right: A close view of one of the "K" boats. These vessels are 350 feet in length, and carry 4 in. guns fore and aft and anti-aircraft guns amidships.

STRIKING MARVELS OF BRITAIN'S NAVAL POWER.—One of the great "K" submarines—the largest craft of the kind produced by any nation. These vessels are propelled by steam when on the surface, and they are sufficiently powerful to be able to pit themselves against the largest destroyers afloat, or even against cruisers in a surface-of-the-water contest.

To face page 340

BRITAIN'S NAVAL MIGHT: CRUISER SQUADRONS LYING OFF ROSYTH, IN THE FIRTH OF FORTH.

Peace reveals a secret of war. During the war no photograph of the British Cruiser Squadron at anchor off Rosyth, in the Firth of Forth, could be seen by the public. With the coming of peace it was permissible to print such a picture as this impressive scene, the photograph being taken in the evening from an airship, a gondola of which is seen.

British Naval Activity Against the Bolshevists

The harbour at Reval, with the ships beflagged in honour of the visit of the British warships. That port was reached by a squadron of three cruisers and three torpedo-boats on December 12th, 1918.

On duty in severe wintry weather in the Gulf of Finland. Sentry on board H.M.S. Caradoc at Reval, with the thermometer down to zero, and (inset above) sailors on the Caradoc chipping the ice off the deck with hammers. Bolshevist activity in Esthonia necessitated naval intervention off the coast, and in a British naval raid on Wulf Island, off Reval, the Bolshevist naval commissary was captured.

Under the Union Jack in Wintry Baltic Waters

British destroyers in the Baltic going into action against the Bolshevists. On the sides of the forward vessel can be seen a coating of ice.

Divers engaged in examining the underwater damage to H.M.S. Calypso, which went aground near Libau and damaged her propellers. Right: Esthonian women clearing a path through the snow at the quayside in readiness for the landing of the British at Reval.

British cruisers and destroyers on their way to Reval with arms for the Esthonians, to enable them to withstand the threatening Bolshevists. Right: The Union Jack hoisted on a British warship at Copenhagen—for the first time since war broke out in 1914.

Under the White Ensign in Kiel's Black Waters

A lock station on the Kiel Canal as seen from H.M.S. Hercules as she was passing through, and (right) the same battleship passing under a bridge across the Kiel Canal.

H.M.S. Hercules, with British destroyers alongside, lying in the Kiel Canal. The passage of the Kiel Canal by the vessels of the Allied Naval Commission, under Admiral Sir Montague Browning, was a memorable, even an historic, event. The Hercules was described as being " the first British battleship to ruffle the brown-black waters " of the canal.

Murder on the High Seas by the Kaiser's Minions

On October 10th, 1918, the Dublin mail-boat Leinster, bound for Holyhead with 770 passengers aboard, was torpedoed in the Irish Channel. Hit a first time she began to go down, but the loss of life might not have been great had not the submarine launched a second torpedo, which sank the Leinster in seven minutes, with a loss of 533 lives, many of them women and children.

British shipping making for a home port in the dusk of the evening. Prominent among the vessels returning to their base are some of the mine-sweeping trawlers, to the unsleeping vigilance of whose crews and their cool fearlessness of peril by mines, bombs, torpedoes, and shell fire it was chiefly due that the main sea avenues were kept clear of the mines sown by the enemy.

Links in the Line that Girdled the Globe

Tank steamers, accompanied by destroyers, taking out supplies of oil for cruisers at sea. The use of oil as motive power greatly facilitated the task of getting aboard the necessary quantity of fuel, whether the vessel was in harbour or at sea.

An armed liner, one of the many great vessels of peace that were forced, in self-defence, to become potential auxiliaries of war, owing to the adoption by Germany of the infamous policy of the "unrestricted" use of submarines.

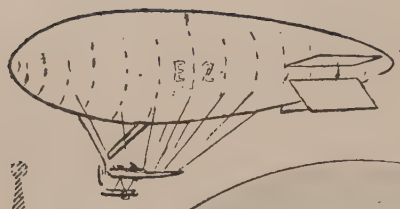
Fearing Neither Gale Nor Lurking Submarine

With all the possible tonnage that could be obtained to fulfil the demands made upon our shipping by our own requirements and the fulfilling of our obligations to our Allies, the sailing ships and five-masted schooners that seemed threatened with extinction in competition with steamers came into their own again during the Great War. In this picture Mr. G. H. Davis shows different types of these "wind-jammers" in a high wind, laden with necessaries brought from afar. The brave crews, having passed thus far the peril of the U boats with their unscrupulous pirate gangs, are rapidly approaching the wished-for home waters.

Stealthy Hun Highwaymen of the High Seas

View of a U boat as given in a German journal. This underwater emulator of the deeds of more picturesque but not more savage piracy was about to submerge for an attack on a convoy, the smoke smudges of which can be seen along the horizon.

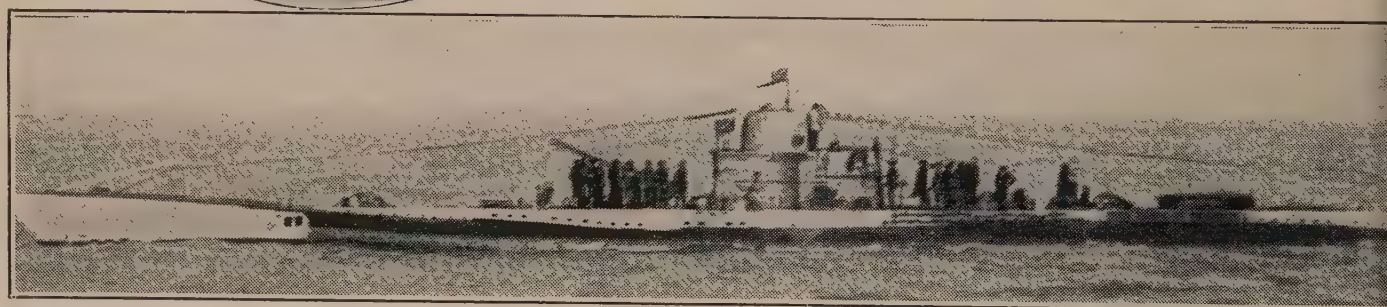
U boat outrage on neutral shipping. A German submarine stopping the Spanish mail steamer Infanta Isabel de Borbon, off Cadiz. The passengers and crew anxiously watched their dangerous neighbour while their fate and that of their vessel was in the balance.



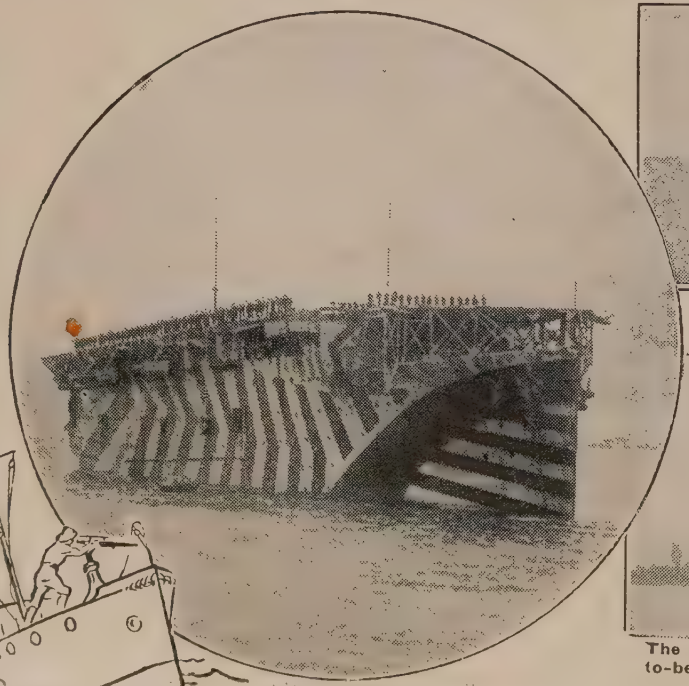
Britannia's Day of Triumph:

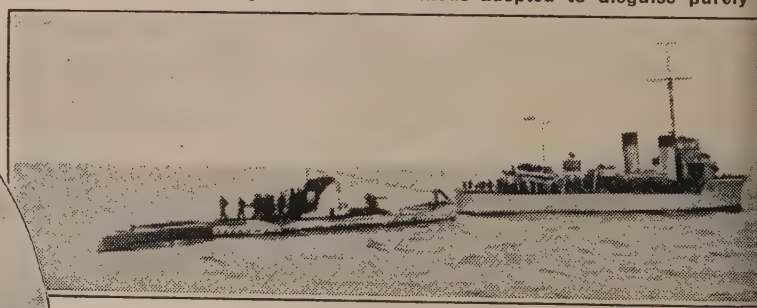
The first twenty of the German U boats given up under the armistice terms surrendered to Rear-Admiral Sir Reginald Tyrwhitt soon after daybreak on

Seaplane taxi-ing out to meet the U boats. In circle to the left several of the surrendered craft are shown at their moorings.

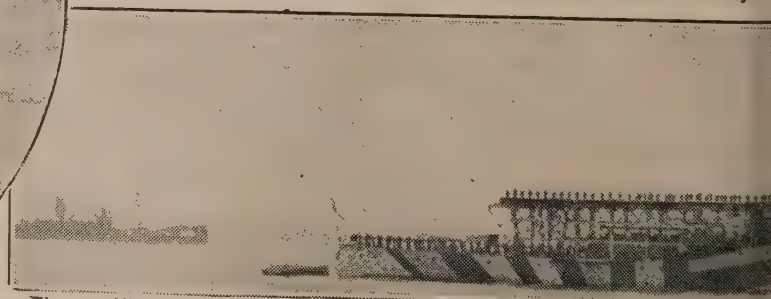


Two of the more modern types of U boats, with British and German crews aboard and the White Ensign proudly sailing "uber alles." These craft, when afloat, presented such a prominent target that they were camouflaged after the methods adopted to disguise purely



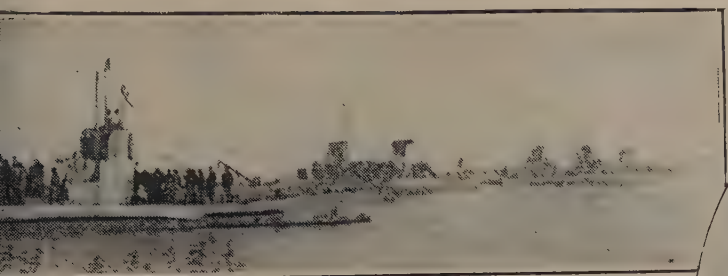


German submarine made fast to a British destroyer, and (right) a U boat, manned by a British crew, on its way to Harwich. The way in

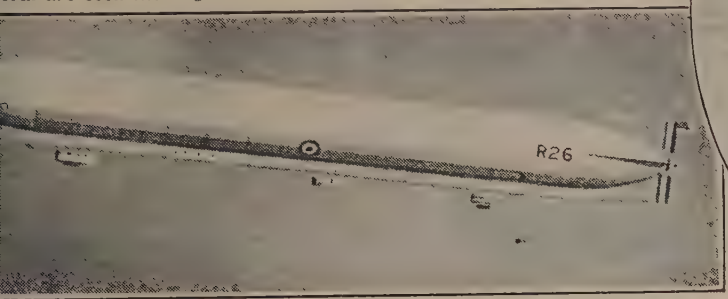


The new Vindictive, replacing the one which figured so gloriously in the never-to-be-forgotten exploits of Sir Roger Keyes and his heroic men at Zeebrugge

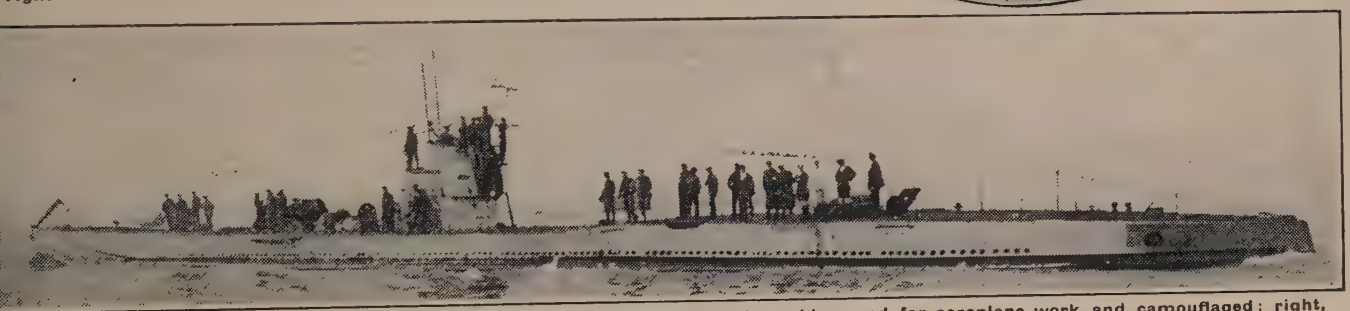
German U Boats' Day of Doom



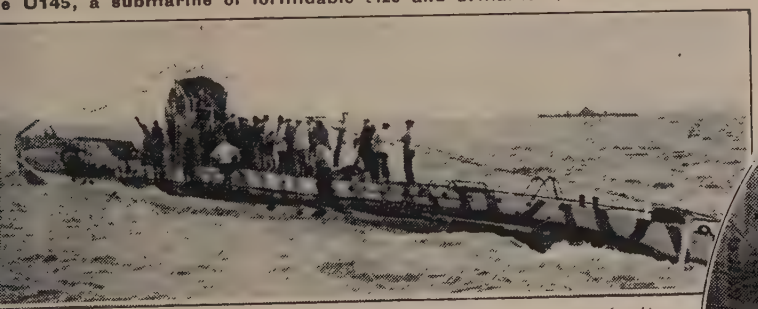
vember 20th, 1918, at a point about 35 miles off the Essex coast. Above, eral are seen moving to their moorings at Parkstone Quay, Harwich.



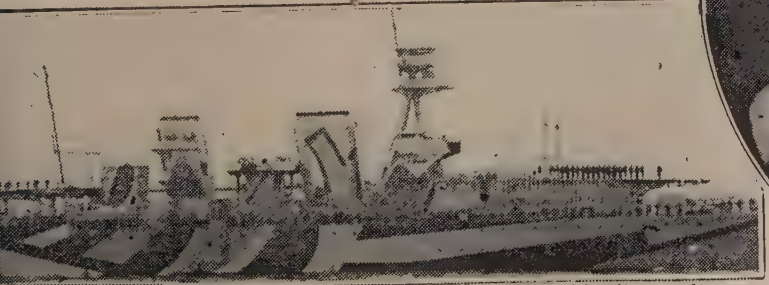
e of the R.A.F. airships which patrolled the scene of surrender. In circle to right: British naval officers engaged in a critical survey of their new charge.

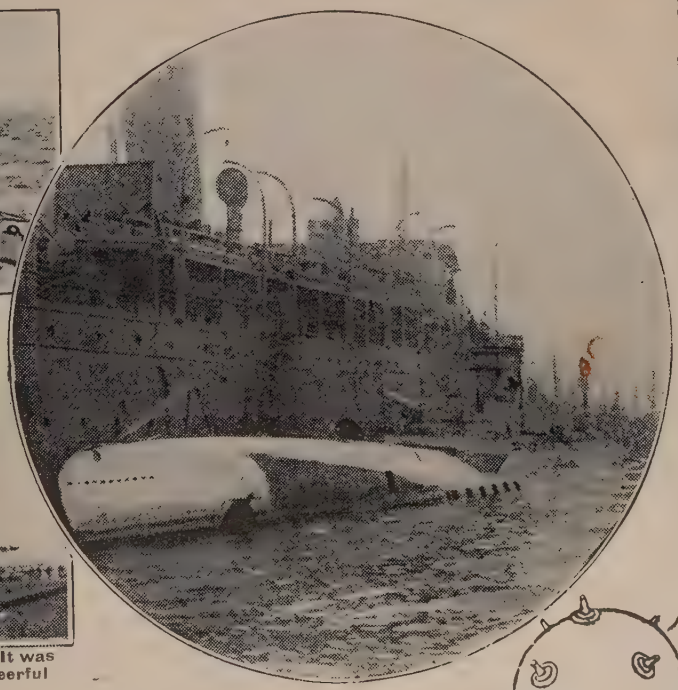


rface craft. In circles below: Left, H.M.S. Argus, one of the famous mystery ships used for aeroplane work and camouflaged; right, e U145, a submarine of formidable size and armament, built about three months before the date on which it was surrendered.

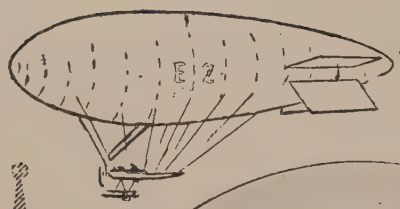


which the surrendered U boats were handled when they came under the control of their British crews elicited Admiral Tyrwhitt's warm praise.

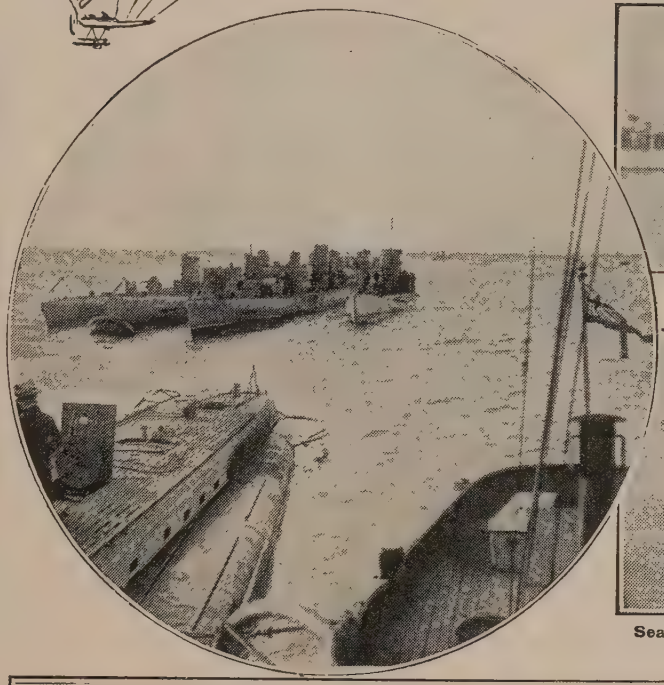




in April, 1919. The surrender of the U boats was carried out in silence. It was noted by the "Times" correspondent that the men were bright and cheerful

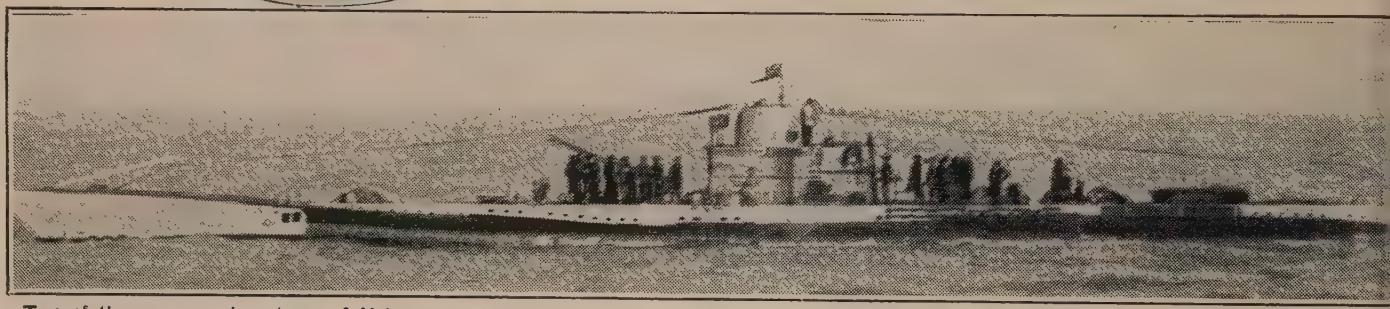


Britannia's Day of Triumph:

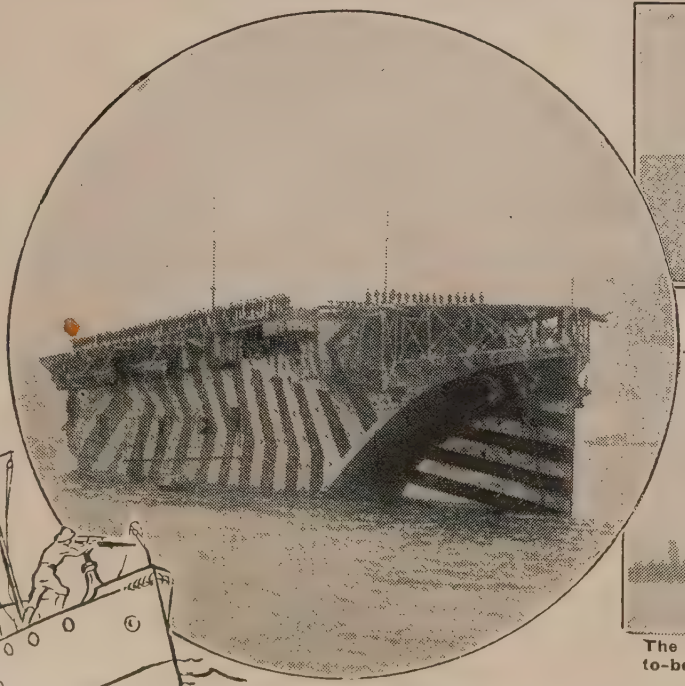


The first twenty of the German U boats given up under the armistice terms surrendered to Rear-Admiral Sir Reginald Tyrwhitt soon after daybreak on

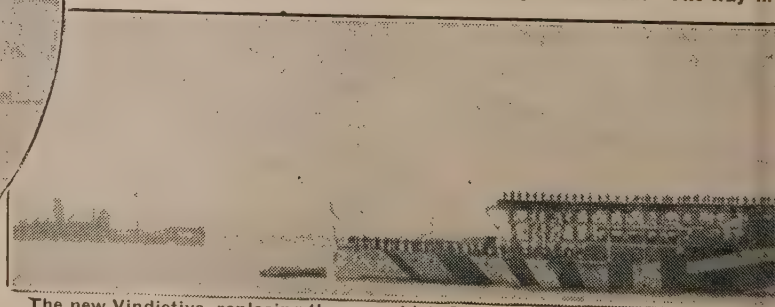
Seaplane taxi-ing out to meet the U boats. In circle to the left several of the surrendered craft are shown at their moorings.



Two of the more modern types of U boats, with British and German crews aboard and the White Ensign proudly sailing "uber alles." These craft, when afloat, presented such a prominent target that they were camouflaged after the methods adopted to disguise purely



German submarine made fast to a British destroyer, and (right) a U boat, manned by a British crew, on its way to Harwich. The way in



The new Vindictive, replacing the one which figured so gloriously in the never-to-be-forgotten exploits of Sir Roger Keyes and his heroic men at Zeebrugge

German U Boats' Day of Doom

November 20th, 1918, at a point about 35 miles off the Essex coast. Above, several are seen moving to their moorings at Parkstone Quay, Harwich.

One of the R.A.F. airships which patrolled the scene of surrender. In circle to the right: British naval officers engaged in a critical survey of their new charge.

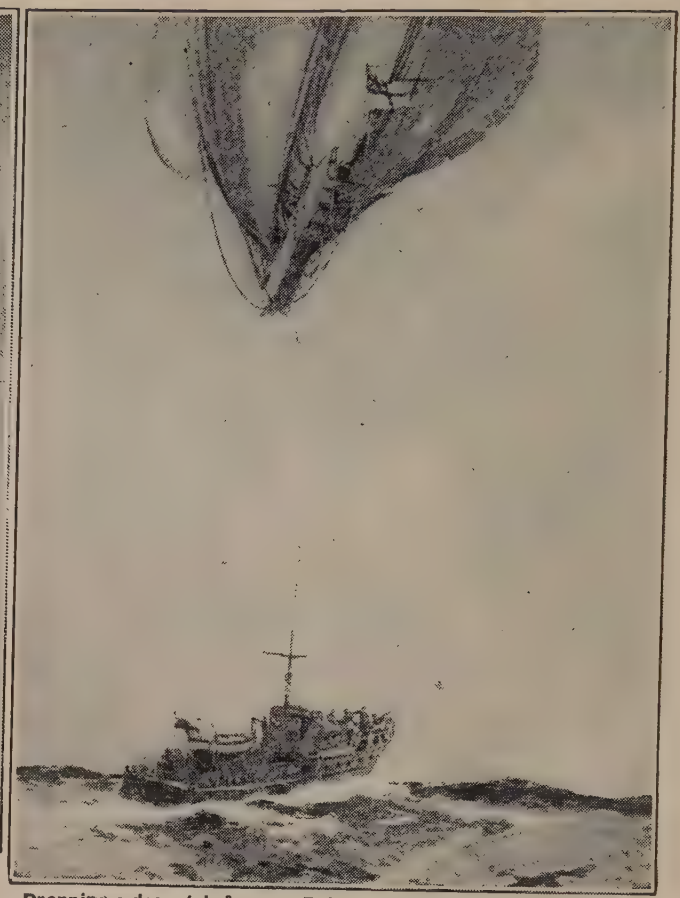
surface craft. In circles below: Left, H.M.S. Argus, one of the famous mystery ships used for aeroplane work and camouflaged; right, the U145, a submarine of formidable size and armament, built about three months before the date on which it was surrendered.

which the surrendered U boats were handled when they came under the control of their British crews elicited Admiral Tyrwhitt's warm praise.

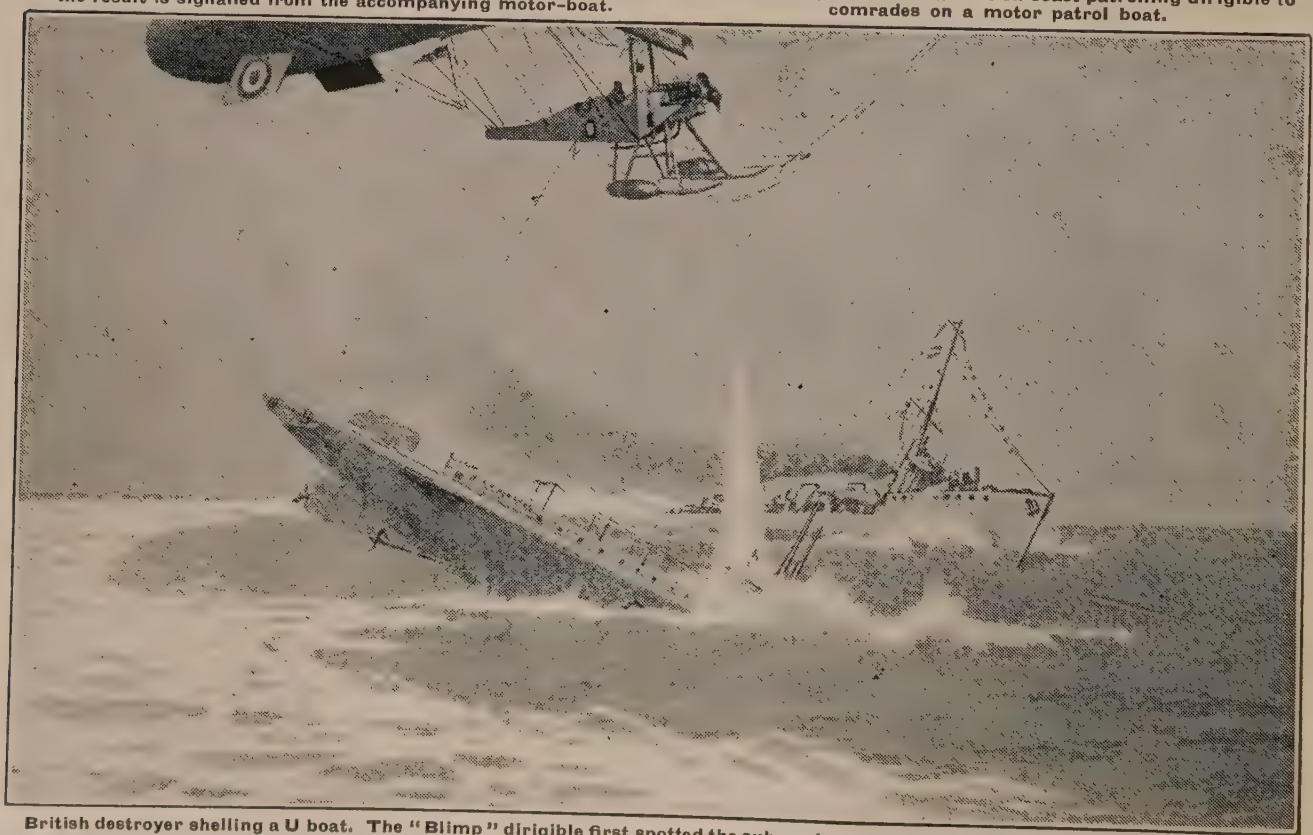
in April, 1919. The surrender of the U boats was carried out in silence. It was noted by the "Times" correspondent that the men were bright and cheerful

How Our Coast Patrols Countered the Pirates

Bombing practice by British aeroplanes. The target is drawn by the nearest hydroplane. The others circle around, and then one, spotting the target, drops its bomb. As the bomb explodes the result is signalled from the accompanying motor-boat.



Dropping a despatch from a British coast patrolling dirigible to comrades on a motor patrol boat.

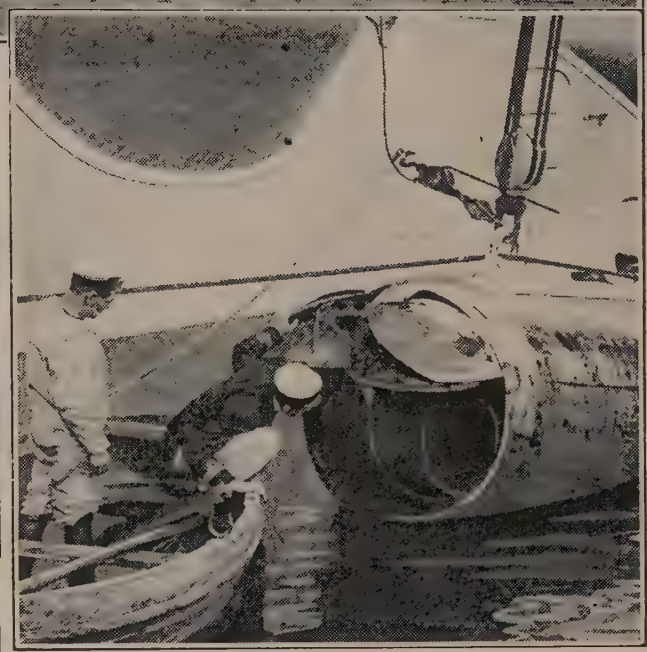


British destroyer shelling a U boat. The "Blimp" dirigible first spotted the submarine, then "the 'Blimp' told the destroyer, and the destroyer did the rest." One month's journeys of aircraft patrol of our coasts equalled more than four times the earth's circumference.

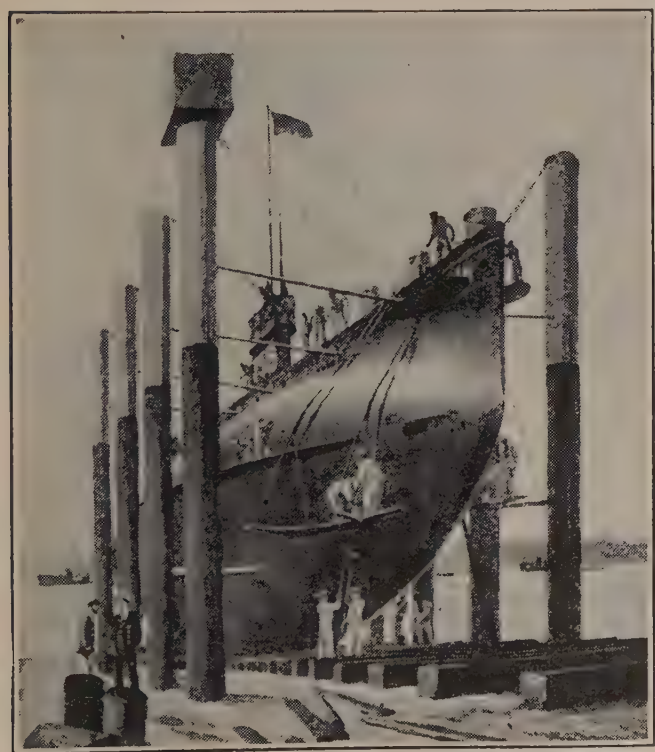
Under-Water Homes of Our Modern Mermen

A British submarine trimming before diving: a poetically beautiful photograph that yet suggests the menace of under-water navigation.

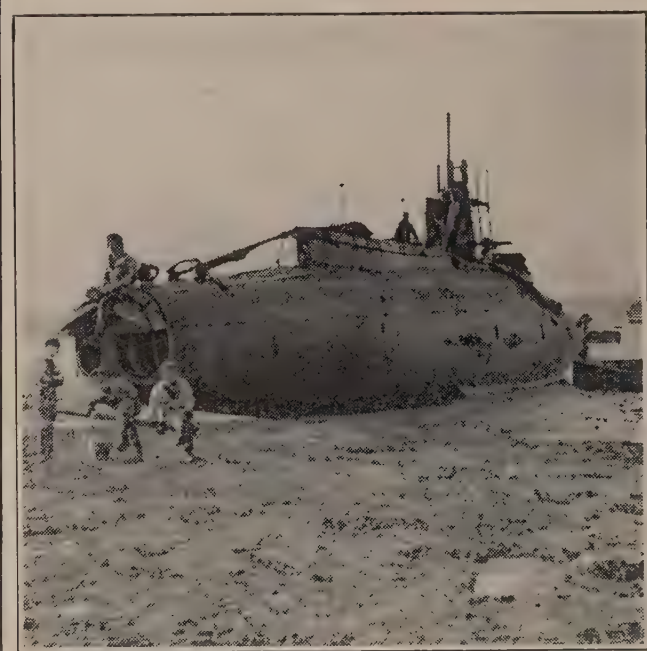
Raising the bows of a submarine alongside the parent ship for examination of the valves and the torpedo-tubes.



Officer and seaman examining the opened bows of their submarine with critical care, since their lives depend on its perfect soundness.

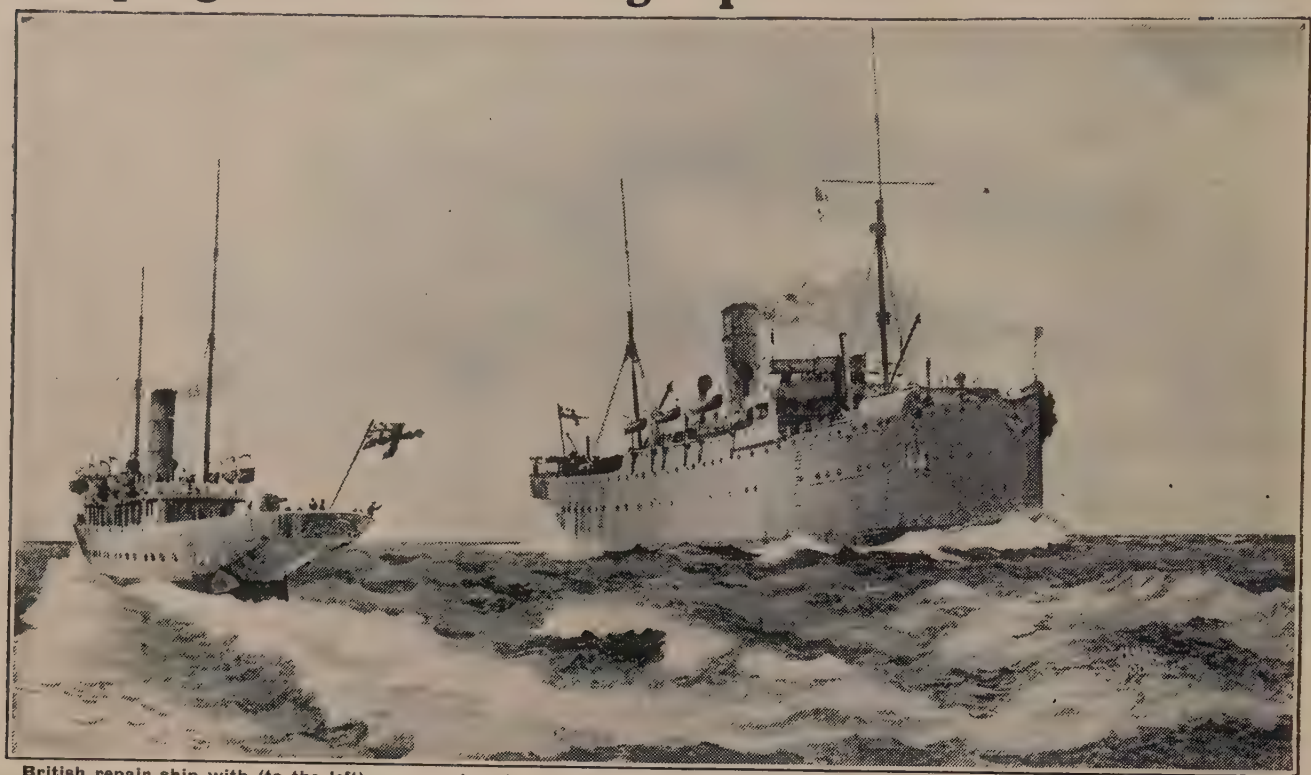


British submarine beached to be scraped and repainted with anti-fouling composition. The work is done between two high tides.



British submarine of another class beached for any necessary repairs that can be effected on the spot by her crew.

Keeping the British Flag Up & the U Boats Down



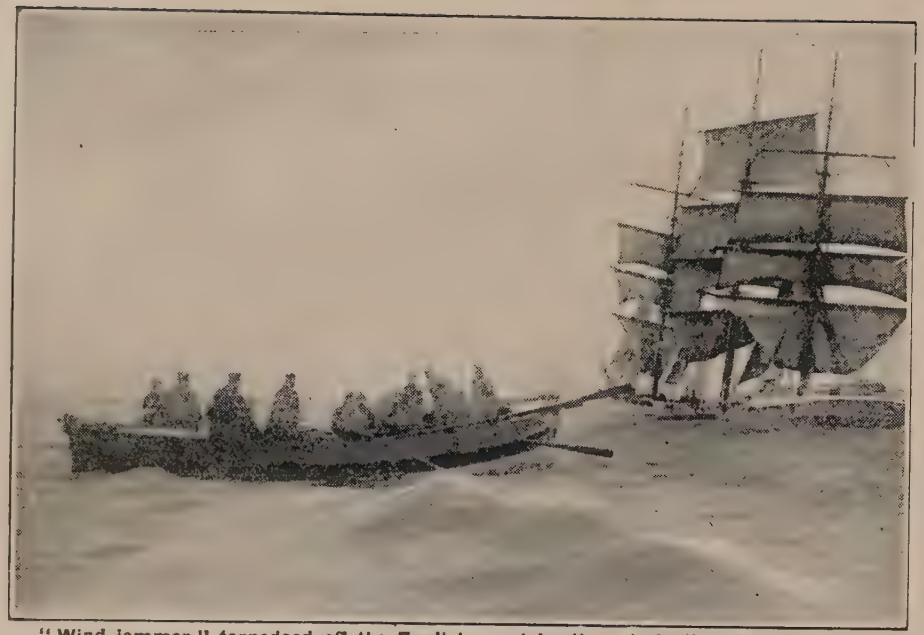
British repair ship with (to the left) an armed yacht. The men who thrashed about the sea in such a rolling workshop—ready to proceed to the assistance of any naval unit in trouble anywhere—were as much entitled to our gratitude as their combatant comrades.

Among a number of vivid accounts of exciting fights with U Boats made public was one of a British motor-launch which sighted an enemy periscope, and went for it full speed. The submarine promptly disappeared, but the launch dropped two depth charges, and after the first explosion a thirty-foot column of water was thrown into the air, bearing with it flat sheets of metal.

Hazards by Gun Fire and Facts by Heliograph

One of the most amazing of the innumerable minor incidents in a naval battle was the explosion of an enemy torpedo w.th n an ace of its objective. A lucky shot from a sister ship hit the projectile dest ned for a British battleship which had lost its control.

With wireless, the heliograph, and flags the vast areas of the ocean are conquered, and rarely a ship, out of the thousands that make for British sea supremacy, loses touch with her sisters. With an improved type of heliograph, such as that seen in this illustration, it is possible to send a message miles over the ocean.



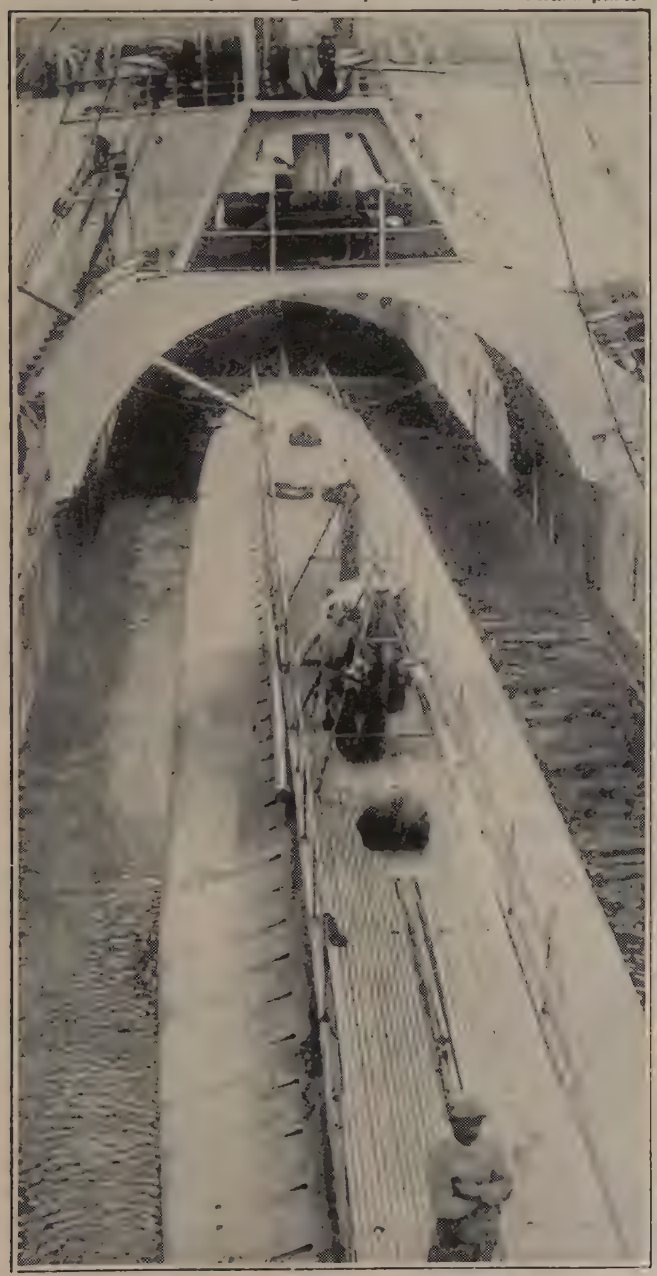
"Wind-jammer" torpedoed off the English coast by the criminally indiscriminating U-boat pirates. To the left a boat has pulled off with some of the crew. In the photograph to the right the men in a lifeboat, which arrived to the aid of those left to their fate by the modern marine monsters, watched the ship as she settled down gradually beneath the water.

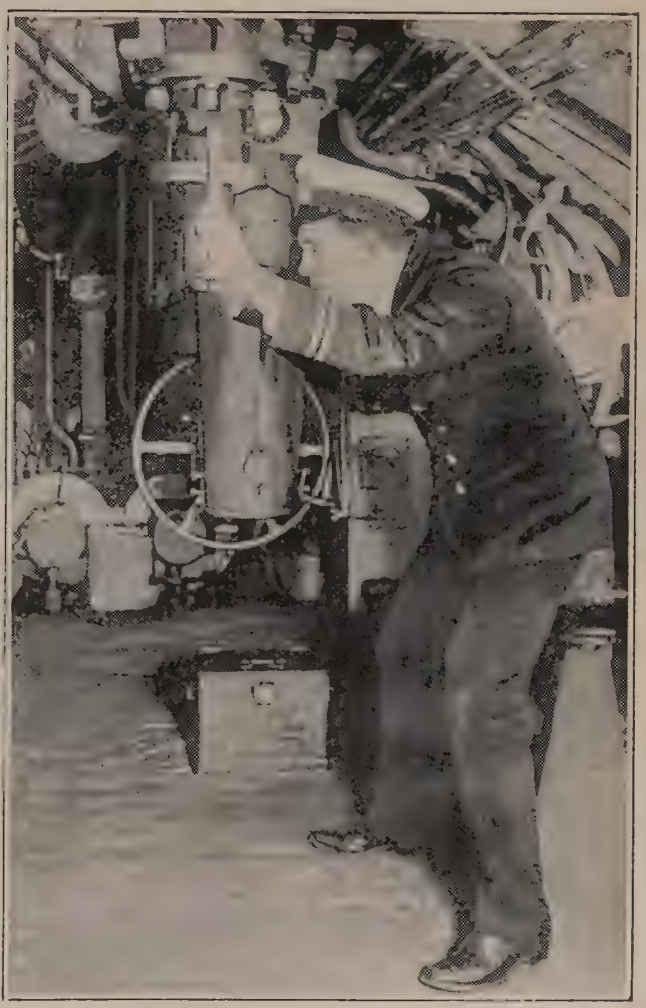
CAMERA RECORDS OF PRUSSIAN PIRACY.—This very striking series of photographs shows, in rapidly succeeding stages, the fate of a sailing ship sunk by a submarine off the English coast. Left: The vessel is seen as she sank from the view of those who a few minutes before had trodden her decks. Right: A boatload of the saved crew. [Photos by J. F. Mortimer

Young Seacraft in the Pouch of the Kangaroo

The French submarine-carrier Kangaroo, torpedoed and sunk in the Bay of Funchal, showing the "pouch" in her forward part.

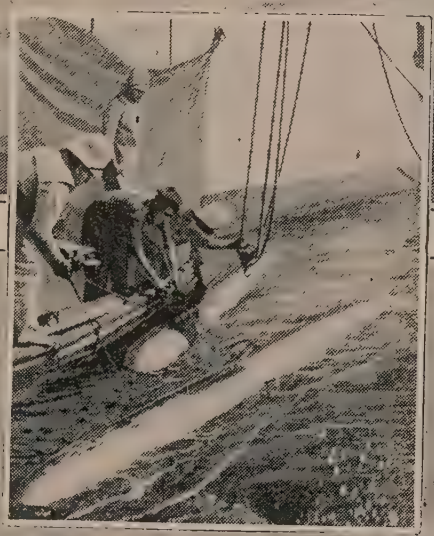
View of the interior of a submarine. The living space forward is cramped owing to the quantity of machinery. (Official photograph.)



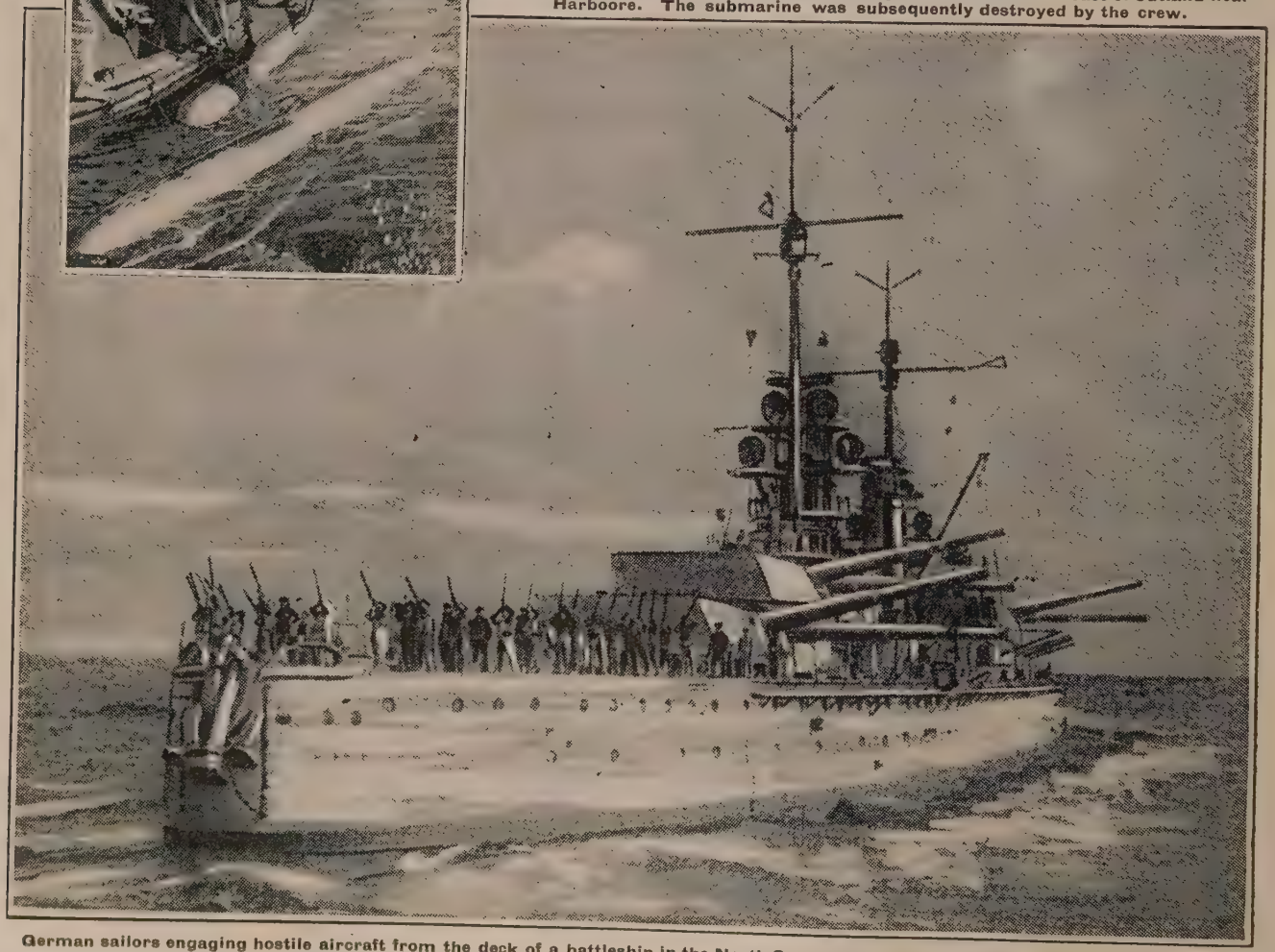


A submarine in position on board the French submarine-carrier Kangaroo. The fore part of this vessel was detachable, giving access to a sort of dock in which the submarine was carried as a young kangaroo is carried in its mother's pouch. Right: Inside a submarine, looking through the periscope. (Official photograph.)

Pirate Craft Wrecked by Gale Off Jutland



One pirate craft the less. U20, which ran aground on the west coast of Jutland near Harboore. The submarine was subsequently destroyed by the crew.



German sailors engaging hostile aircraft from the deck of a battleship in the North Sea. Inset: French sailors salving torpedoes after practice work in the Mediterranean.

BRITISH FOOD SHIPS UNDER NAVAL AND AERIAL ESCORT. FROM A WATER-COLOUR BY C. M. PADDAY.

To face page 3472

Iron Walls & Iron Will that Guarded Our Island

Battleships of the British Grand Fleet lying at anchor at a certain base with steam up. Day in and day out the Grand Fleet waited like this, ready to engage the German High Sea Fleet should it emerge from its harbours to try conclusions for the mastery of the sea.

A British air patrol, shot down at sea, released a pigeon with a message calling for help. The message ran: "Machine turning over to port. Have jettisoned everything. Am on wing tip. Sea calm. Machine has seemingly steadied. Nothing in sight. Send small craft at once. My love to my mother. Tell her I am not worrying. If machine sinks I will swim to a buoy close by." R 9

Shattered but not Submerged by Sea Pirates

Vessel damaged in the North Sea by submarine being salved by British sailors. "Pumping out" before clearing the wreckage.

Not every torpedo that strikes an intended victim sends it to the bottom of the sea—though no thanks are due to the submarine pirates for that. How badly damaged a vessel may be and yet be kept afloat is to be seen in these graphic photographs of sailors setting about reducing the chaos caused by German "frightfulness" back to the British seaman's idea of orderliness.

'He Sinks into Thy Depths with Bubbling Groan'

In this picture Mr. Padday illustrates the story of a fight with a U boat, told by the British Admiralty. A seaplane observed a submarine manœuvring into position to torpedo a merchantman, and flew to the rescue. The submarine dived to avoid the seaplane, but the latter dropped three bombs on the spot where it disappeared. Five minutes later a huge upheaval was noticed where the bombs had been dropped, and an enormous bubble rising some distance above the surface remained for a minute or more above the place where "without a grave, unknell'd, uncoffin'd, and unknown," the pirate lay.

Scenes in the War Above and Under Water:

A variant of the black smoke screen emitted from destroyers' funnels is the "Bix" screen. A preparation of carbide contained in a perforated box is put into the water, whereupon dense white fumes are instantly generated. These keep to the surface of the sea and, travelling rapidly with the wind in a dead straight line, effectually screen any vessels desiring to elude observation by enemy warships.

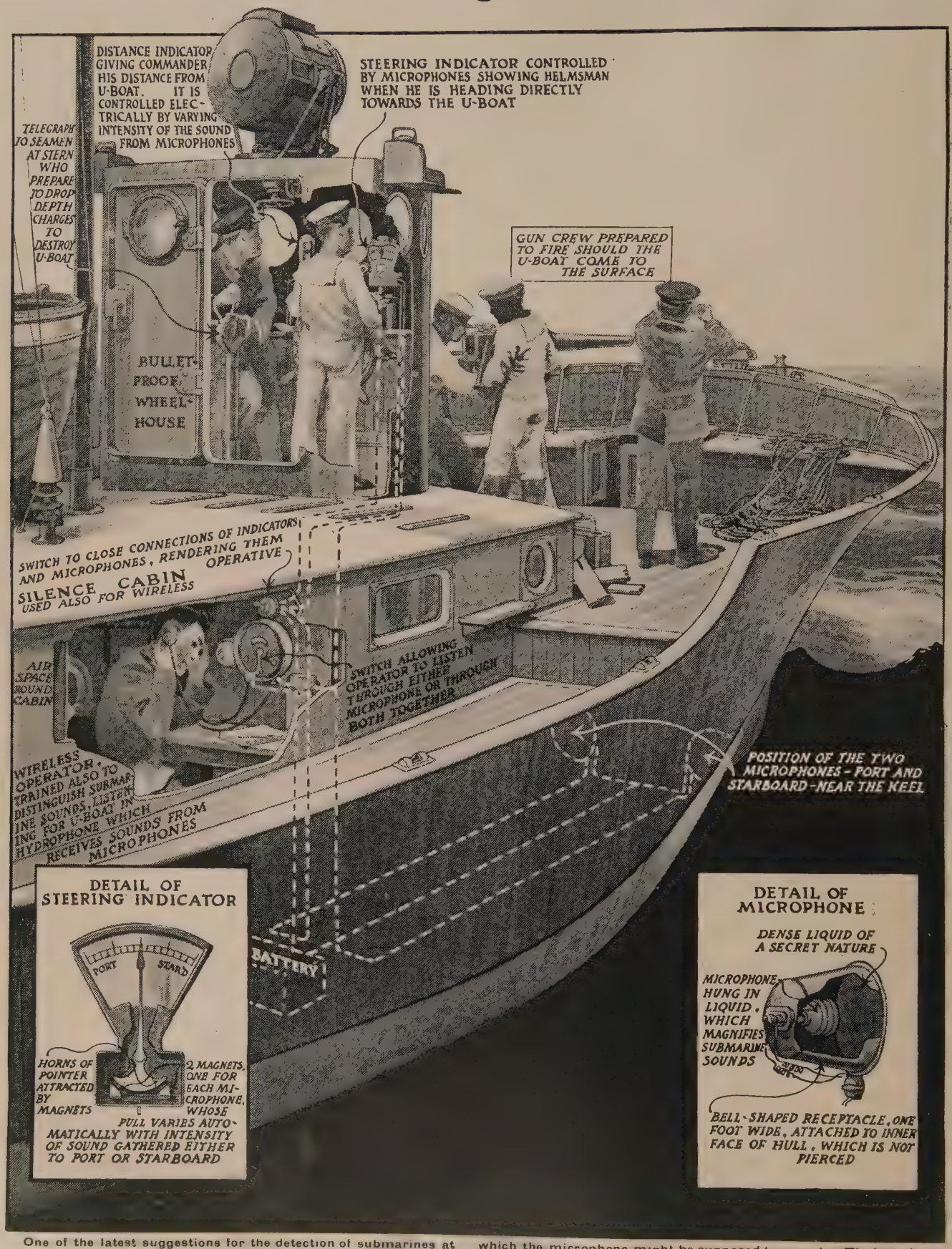
A U boat attacked a British unit, which opened fire and obtained repeated hits. Several Germans appeared waving hands in token of surrender. When the "Cease fire!" sounded, the submarine attempted to escape, whereupon fire was reopened and she was sunk.

Britons Strong to Save & Determined to Destroy

To the aid of a neutral in distress. A British patrol cruiser standing-by to take off the crew of a large neutral "wind-jammer" that has struck a mine, is on fire, and sinking by the head. The neutral vessel, it will be observed, is flying the chequered flag which is the international signal of distress.

Incoming destroyer (left) greeting a British submarine going out on patrol duty. Beyond is to be seen a line of battleships and cruisers. It was in 1917 that Germany started that "unrestricted" use of the U boat which was to starve Britain in six, nine, or twelve months. But the counter-methods of our Navy served to prove the falsity of German forecasts.

Science Aids in Detecting the Unseen Submarine



One of the latest suggestions for the detection of submarines at a distance is the application of the microphone, or sound magnifier, for the purpose, so that the sinister craft may be heard though unseen. This very interesting diagram shows the way in which the microphone might be supposed to operate. The lettering on it shows the way in which the sound on being received by the microphone is transmitted to indicators, which give both the distance and the direction of the hidden underwater craft.

Bubbles that Burst Where U Boats Met their Fate

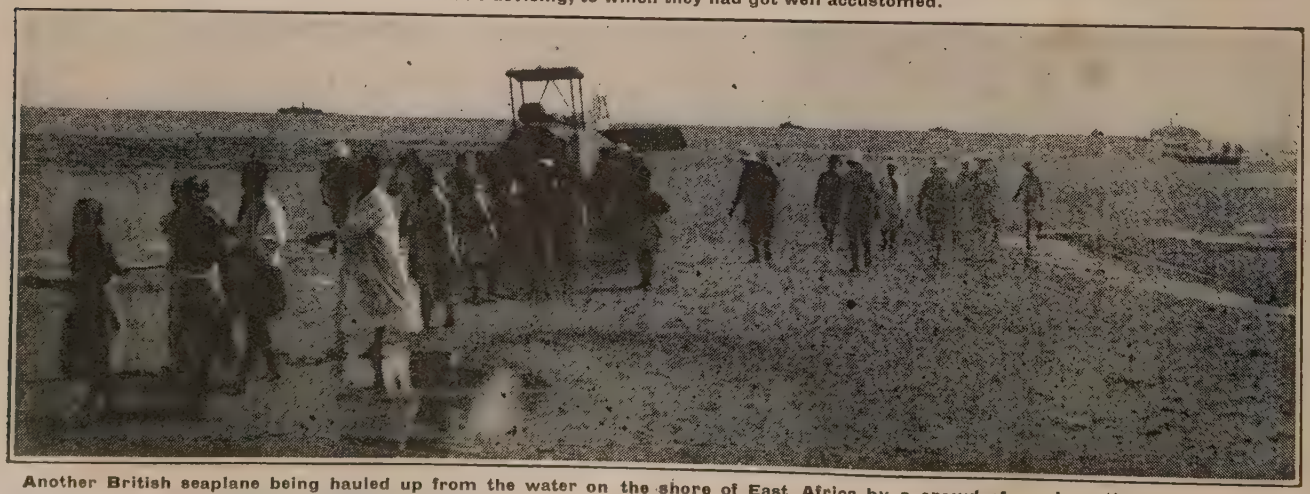
Lifting out one of the twin 14 in. guns on a British warship. The weighty weapon is seen swinging in mid-air as it has been raised by a powerful crane out of its position in the gun-turret.

A patrol boat caught sight of a U boat near a torpedoed ship, headed for it at full speed, and rammed it abaft the conning-tower, so that it rolled over and vanished. Immense air bubbles rose, and with them two Germans, one of whom was rescued.

Eyes of the Navy Search East African Coastline

Seaplane flying low over the rippled waters close to the coast of German East Africa. Our airmen performed good service on several occasions in East Africa since they discovered the Konigsberg in hiding up the Rufiji River.

Bringing a seaplane ashore on the East African coast. The darkies lend willing hands to the haulage of the wonderful creature of the white man's devising, to which they had got well accustomed.

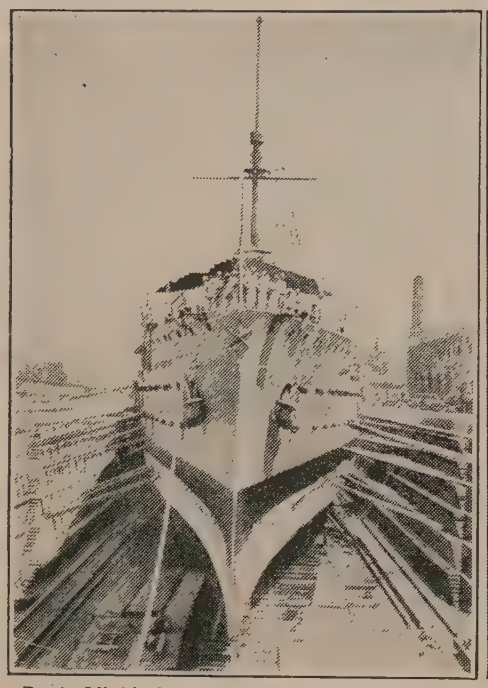


Another British seaplane being hauled up from the water on the shore of East Africa by a crowd of ready natives, who seemed eager to help our forces in the work of ejecting the Germans from their last colony.

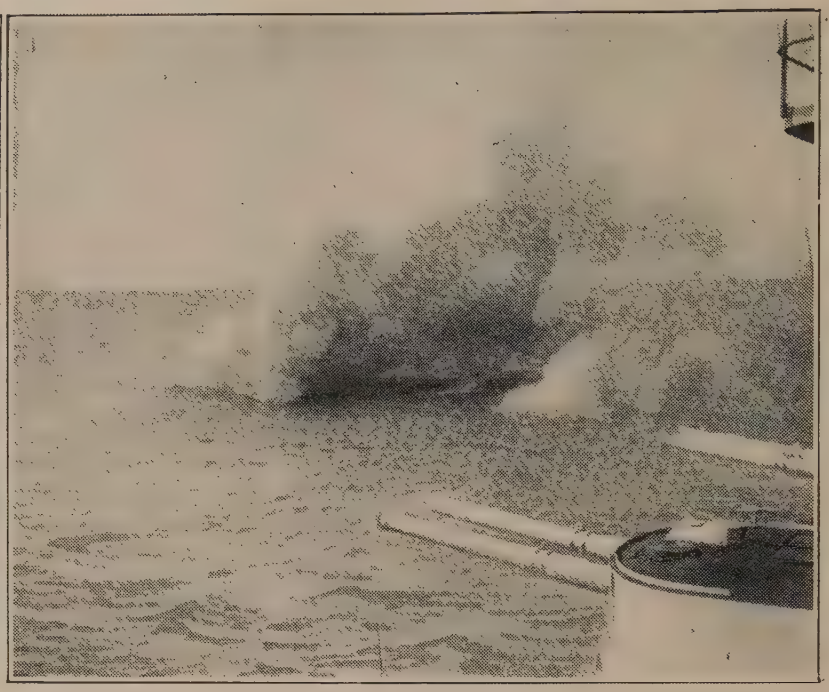
A Bolt from the Blue for the Lurking U Boat

Observation balloon dropping a bomb on a lurking U boat while guarding the vicinity of the approaches to a British port where many ships daily arrived with food supplies and other necessaries. The ships are brought-to while awaiting instructions to pass into harbour. The observation balloon is towed thither by a destroyer, and from a goodly height is able to trace the course of any enemy submarine hovering about, and, having spotted one, drops a bomb just ahead of its track, as shown in Mr. Padday's drawing.

Ships that Kept Watch and Ward in the Adriatic

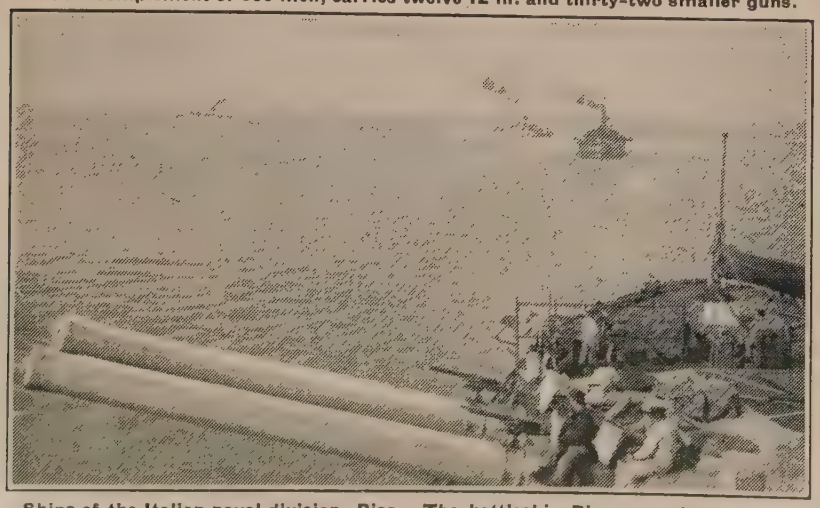


Dante Alighieri, one of the Dreadnoughts of the Italian Navy, in dry-dock. She was completed in 1912.



Italian battleship San Marco firing her 7·5 in. guns. She carries eight of these, in addition to four 10 in. and twenty smaller ones. Observe how the heavy smoke rolls on the surface of the water.

Italian Dreadnought Dante Alighieri. She is of 18,400 tons displacement, and, with a complement of 900 men, carries twelve 12 in. and thirty-two smaller guns.



Ships of the Italian naval division, Pisa. The battleship Pisa, completed at the beginning of 1909, is of 10,118 tons, and carries four 10 in. and eight 7·5 in. guns.

H.R.H. Prince Almone of Savoy at a naval battery.

Italy's Bluejackets Active in the Middle Sea

Light guns being taken ashore from an Italian warship by means of a raft towed alongside a picket-boat during landing operations at a Mediterranean island. In the Adriatic, also, the Italian Navy was as busily employed as the French and British Fleets.

Bringing an observation balloon to land near Venice. The boats with the tow-ropes were photographed from the descending naval balloon, and the stillness of the water enabled a striking impression to be obtained of the bow-waves formed by a moving vessel.

Cynical Abuse of the S O S Signal at Sea

A German raider stooped to the mean and criminal device of luring victims to him by sending out S O S wireless messages. When ships rushed up to the rescue, the seemingly neutral and burning merchantman opened fire on them from concealed guns.

"Got him!" Great liners carrying women and children seemed congenial and easy prey to German submarines, but more than once excited passengers saw the attempted murder prevented by vigilant T.B.D.'s getting a direct hit home upon the U boat.

Men of the Allied Navies in Their Lighter Mood

Exclusive and French Official Photographs

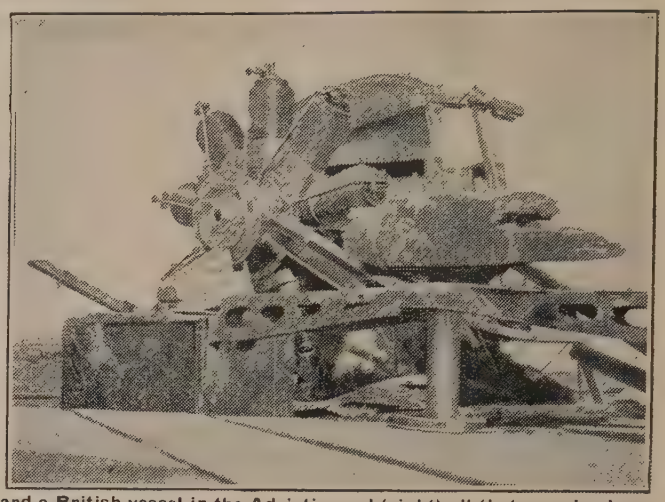
My lady's toilet. Getting Floss, the ship's canine pet, ready for her run ashore.

"John Bunny," a famous Grand Fleet comedian, who needs small aid from his make-up box to enable him to personate the world-famous big man of the "movies." Right: The engineer of a T.B.D. bobs up for a breath of fresh air during his arduous watch.

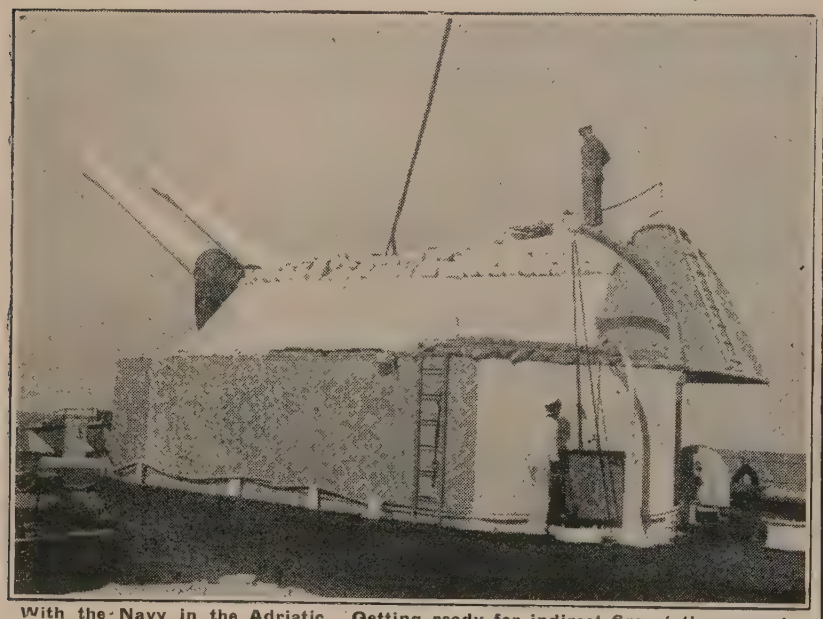
The mascot of a French battleship at the Piræus. Every ship's company there had its mascot, chosen according to its own particular fancy, and the friend of man was a general favourite. Right: French regimental mascot on guard beside its master.

Naval and Aircraft Activity in the Adriatic

British Official Photographs



Ready to take wing. "Baby," a Sopwith seaplane, carried on board a British vessel in the Adriatic, and (right) all that remained—the machinery and some fragments—of a seaplane after its final adventurous flight.



With the Navy in the Adriatic. Getting ready for indirect fire at the enemy's railway, and (right) look-out on board ship reporting through a telephone.

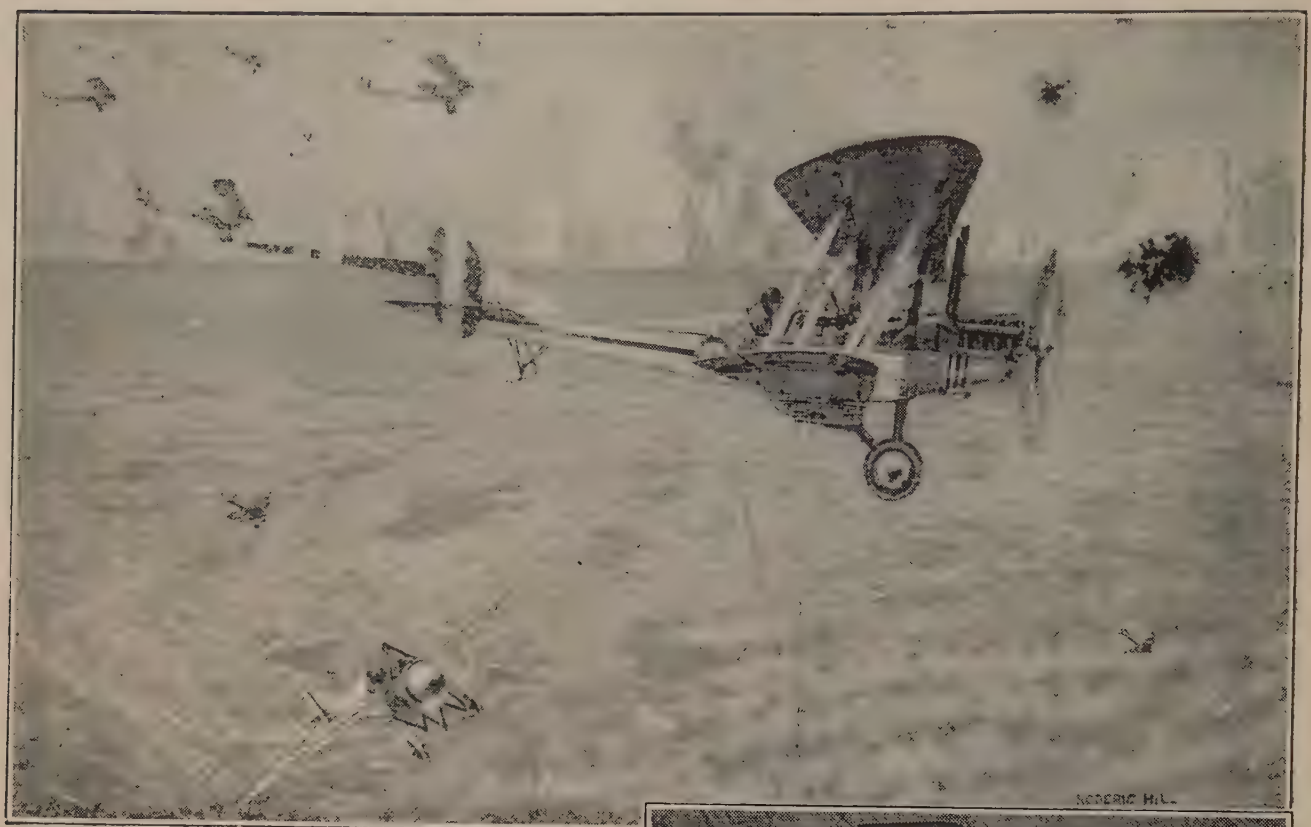
Monitor in action off Trieste. Attacked by an enemy seaplane, it has just fired an anti-aircraft gun, smoke from the breech of which is plainly visible. Right: Naval unit in the Adriatic cleared for action. The use of sandbags on board these vessels is worthy of note.

Sea Power—as it is Understood by Germany

Fired o · without warning, the Diomed was sunk west of the Scilly Isles. Boats were hurriedly launched, but one capsized, and many of the crew were drowned. The U-boat murderers shook their fists at the men they had wrecked—and left them to their fate.

Men of the Liverpool steamer Artist, torpedoed by a German submarine in a wintry gale. The crew were left by their Kultured assailants with cold-blooded brutality to die of exposure—which seven of them did before the boat was picked up.

Some Wonderful Exploits of British Airmen



British machines crossing the lines on their way to bomb the enemy positions—an everyday scene on the western front.

Two British naval airmen on the Balkan front attacked an enemy supply train, killing the driver. The stoker jumped out.

British contact patrol aeroplane attacking enemy reinforcements with machine-gun fire from a height of but a few hundred feet.

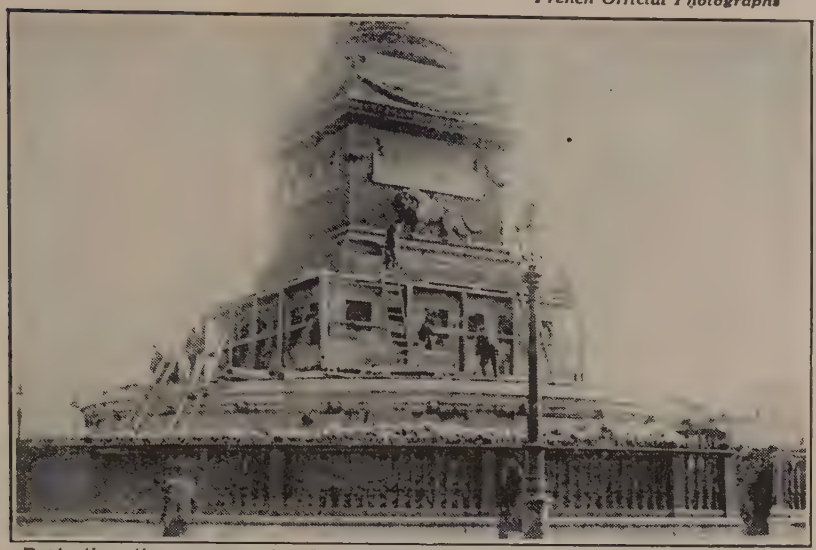
THE WEB INTO WHICH NIGHT-RAIDING GOTHAS FEARED TO FLY.

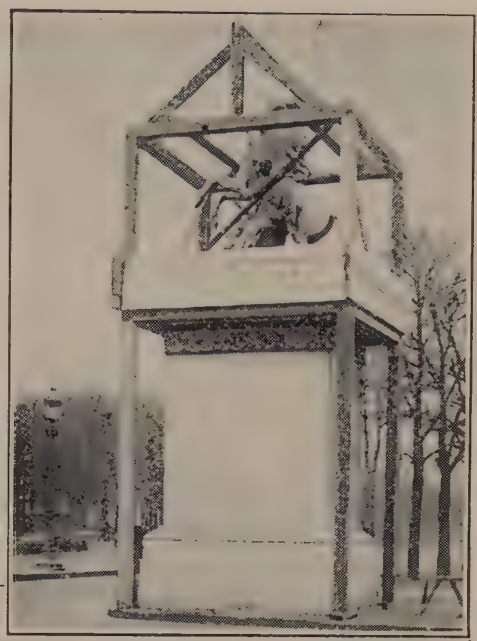
"Balloon apron," consisting of a series of steel wires depending from cross cables carried from the mooring-cables of captive observation balloons. This ingenious device, employed in the air defences of London, was much feared by the German airmen.

To face page 3488

Paris Precautions Against the Raiding Gothas

French Official Photographs





Protecting the monuments of Paris against the visits of the bomb-dropping Gothas. The 14th of July Column, and (inset) the Horse of Narly.

Another of the Paris monuments built in with timber and sandbags, and (right) the Rhone statue at Versailles, partially covered in with protecting sandbags.

One of the statues in the Tuileries Garden, with timber frame against which protecting sandbags were placed. Right: The bas-reliefs of the Arc de Triomphe shielded by sandbags placed on specially erected platforms.

59

Chart showing the exact localities in England and Scotland that suffered from hostile air raids and bombardments from December 16th, 1914, to June 17th, 1918.

Everyday Heroes of the R.A.F.

By HAMILTON FYFE

IT was the second day of the Battle of St. Quentin, September, 1918. In a sector near Bullecourt our troops were just holding their positions. They could not hold them against heavier attacks. What we wanted to know was whether the enemy was about to make his attack heavier. The only way to find out what he was doing was to send out an airman to see. Off he went—or, rather, off they went, pilot and observer—and came back very soon to say that about three thousand Germans were massed in a sunken road, evidently waiting to advance. It did not take our artillery long to get on to that sunken road. High explosive bursting in it, shrapnel bursting over it, made it an inferno.

Those Germans did not advance. They retired.

That illustrates one of the immensely valuable activities of the Royal Air Force. Our airmen all through the difficult days of the offensive brought in day by day regular and accurate information as to the enemy's formations. I have seen them flying in weather which seemed both too wet and gusty for flying, and too thick for any useful observation to be done. On such days they took chances by flying very low, and many times they came back with news which enabled our commanders to stave off fierce onslaughts which the Germans meant to be a surprise for us.

Front Line in the Air

In the battles round Merris and Bailleul the British air scouts kept our commanding generals fully informed about the enemy's concentrations. Often we broke up these concentrations, and prevented attacks from developing against our tired troops. The wind was high, and driving rain-storms blotted out every now and then the ground on which the straining eyes of the observers were fixed. Yet hour after hour they went up, and saved us from many a surprise which might have had baleful consequences in that time of touch-and-go.

They took part themselves in dispersing enemy forces gathered for attack. They flew low and dropped bombs. One officer came into a headquarters where I happened to be one morning, and announced that he had "let go" from a height of not more than a hundred feet on a party of Germans whose number he put at 400, and had made "a good hit." They also flew down and machine-gunned the enemy on the roads. Earlier in the battles we owed more than can be said to the airmen who harassed the Germans by these means on their way through the Somme country.

At one moment it is scarcely an exaggeration to say that the Air Force was holding our front line. Early in the last week of March, when our Third and Fifth Armies were so hardly pressed, the German reinforcements were flowing through Bapaume and Albert and along the good main road—good because we had kept it in order—which runs through those little towns.

Orders were given to the Air Force to attack them as vigorously as possible, with the object of checking their advance and gaining time for us.

By the energy with which they carried out this order, the flying men made that main road too dangerous for the Germans to use. First they dropped four tons of bombs on it while infantry were on the march. Then they swooped down to within less than a thousand feet of the ground, and used their machine-guns. There is no more terrifying experience than being machine-gunned from the air.

Harrying the Invader

Those Germans who were not hit ran for shelter, crouched in ditches by the roadside, glued themselves to the trees that shaded it. For the time being that road was made impossible for the enemy to use. The columns of relieving troops were sent round by small by-roads.

Transport columns could not travel anywhere but on the good roads. These our airmen continued to strafe. There were some terrible scenes on those days. Wounded horses screaming, others bolting as the reins fell from the hands of their lifeless drivers, waggons blocking the road, dead and dying men in heaps almost. Both by day and by night the long files of lorries, vans, and carts, which are the necessary accompaniment of armies, were harried from above. The difficulty of regularly feeding the German soldier was doubled.

I went one night to an aerodrome to see a bombing squadron start on one of these expeditions. One after another in the darkness the big machines, their engines roaring, rolled off their marks and slid into the air. It was all done so quickly, and so much as a matter of course, that one hardly thought of the errand on which all these young men were bound being dangerous.

At dinner they had been chatting and chaffing, just like any other young officers who might be going to spend the evening quietly in their mess. Then they had gone out, inserted themselves into their flying suits, climbed into their machines, all with such an air of habit, as mechanically as a motor-driver climbs into his car. They were not in the least excited or disturbed.

Flying Heroes

Yet every one of them was risking his life in the most perilous way—or, to speak more correctly, ways. There was not only the possibility of the machine coming to grief in the air; or the chance that a bad landing in the dark might turn it over and kill the pilot. There was the danger from the numberless "Archies" and machine-gun batteries which would try to bring the bombers down. One of them had been telling me how it felt to be followed by the searchlight, and to know that a quantity of tubes were spitting death at you.

It is not true that our airmen feel no apprehension when they are being shot at. Those who suggest this show their ignorance of man's nature and do the Air Force poor service

It is because they do feel it that they deserve, every one of them, the highest distinctions for valour. And all the more when one considers how effective their action is upon the enemy. We captured a young sergeant in May, well educated, and a candidate for a commission. He knew what he was writing about, and his diary, which he had kept up to the date of his capture, was the finest testimonial that British airmen could desire. Almost every day he records "Air raid. Bombed by aeroplanes. Took refuge in cellars." He mentioned the losses suffered, an ammunition store blown up. One could read how the spirit of the German troops was being lowered by the nightly visits.

Of the adventures that our pilots have had in the air there are enough to fill a book. The coolness and pluck which they show when their machines are damaged, and when it depends upon their nerve whether they can escape with their lives, are beyond all words of admiration. Take the case of a man whose machine was hit and set on fire. He dived from the height of 15,000 feet, at which he had been fighting, intending to land if he could get down quickly enough. But as he went he tried to put the fire out and, marvellous as it sounds, he succeeded.

Then, instead of landing, he went to the assistance of a comrade who was being hard pressed by several German flyers. His engine was giving trouble now, and his Lewis gun was jamming, but he drove the enemy off, and both got safely to earth, though the partially burned machine caught fire again and became a total wreck.

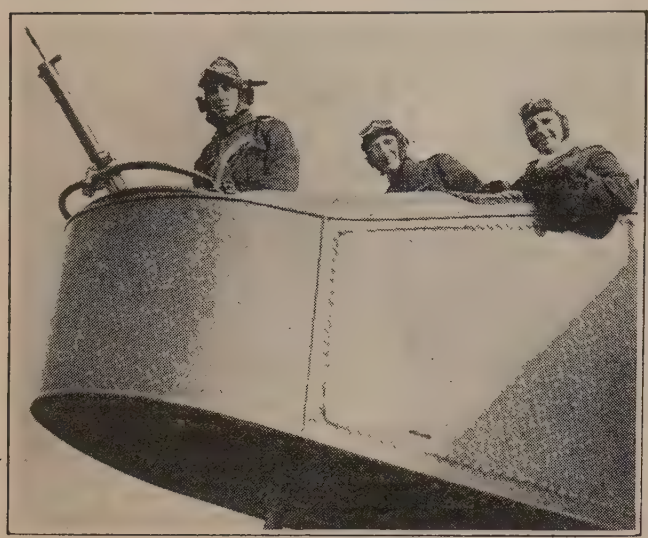
Chivalry of the Air

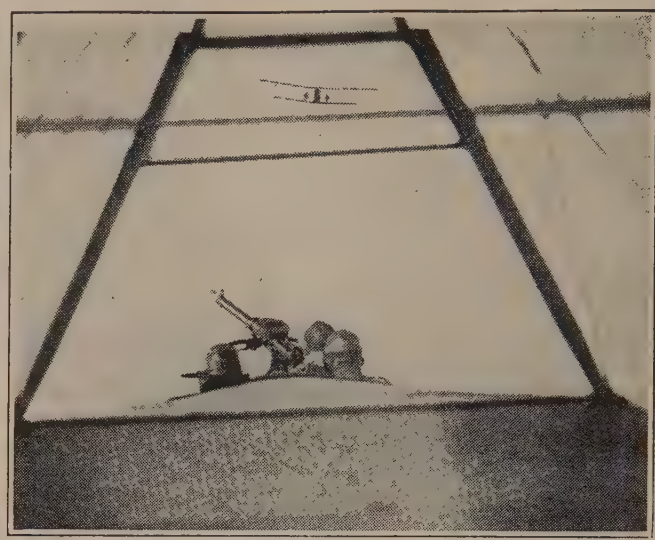
For some time few Germans came over our lines. I can remember weeks in which I saw none at all. An Air Force major determined to taunt them with their unreadiness to take up our challenges to fight. He flew over one of their aerodromes and dropped a parcel in which he had wrapped a pair of boots, with a note to the effect that they were for use on the ground, since the German airmen had ceased to fly. It would have been rather a heavy joke if that were all. But the real point of it came when the major flew back while his parcel was being examined and dropped a hefty bomb!

As a rule the Air Forces of all the warring nations show a good deal of chivalrous fellowship to one another. Thus the Australians, who cannot be charged with treating the enemy too gently, gave the crack German flyer Richthofen a military funeral, and put an inscription on his coffin calling him "a valiant and worthy foe," and other flying units sent wreaths for the grave. I went to this funeral, and thought it a very noble and generous manner of burying a brave enemy. I was sorry to see protests made by people in England. Such protests, I am sure, found no sympathy from the troops in the field.

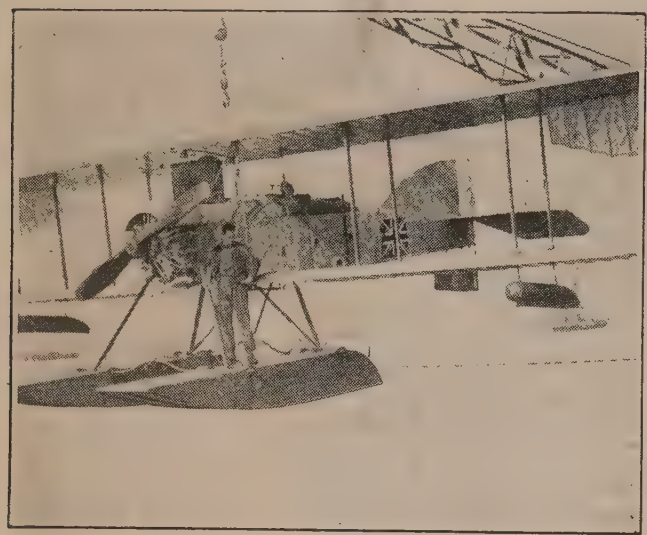
Those who sit in armchairs and foam at the mouth upon the slightest provocation would be surprised if they heard the language soldiers use about them. They spoke their minds on this occasion, as my ears can testify.

Up & Down : British & German Giants of the Air

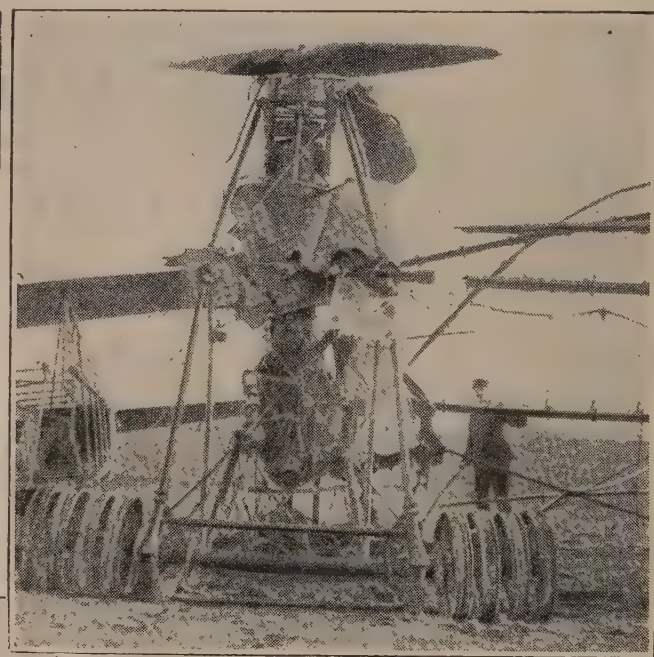




Forepart of a Handley Page aeroplane, manned by three men, and (right) a machine-gunner of a Handley Page in action, showing him and his companion as seen from the rear. The distant 'plane was caught by the camera as framed in the struts of the machine.

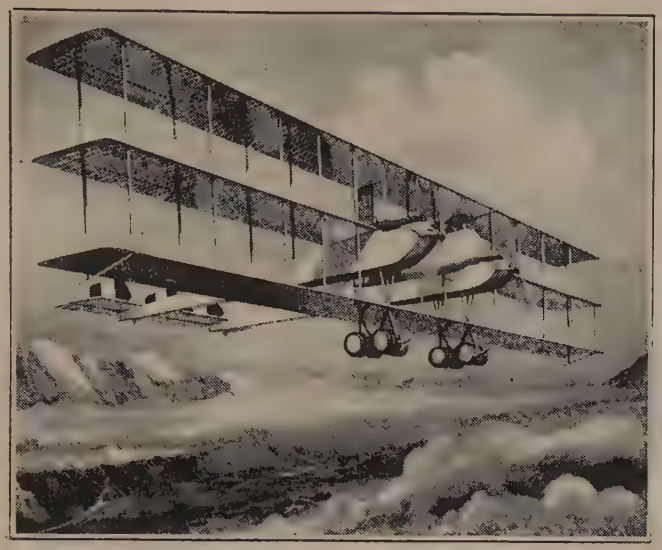


British aeroplane being lowered to the water by means of a crane from its parent ship off Salonika.

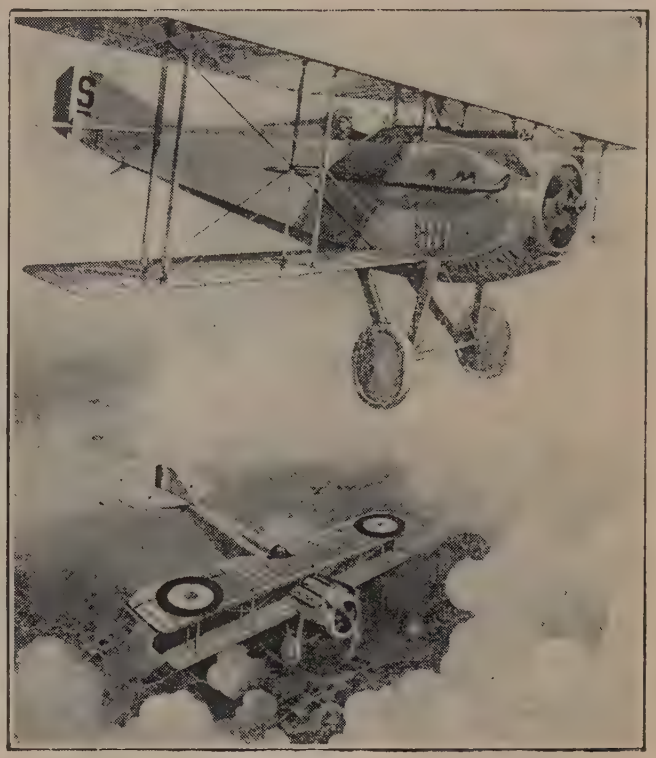


Giant German bombing biplane brought down in the French lines on June 2nd, 1918. Inset: One of its two forward screws. The span of this biplane's wings was 142 feet. Four Maybach engines of 260 h.p. operated four screws, two propulsive and two tractor.

War in the Air: Our Allies' Wonderful Machines



One of the giant Caproni triplanes which the Italians successfully employed in their raids on Austrian positions.

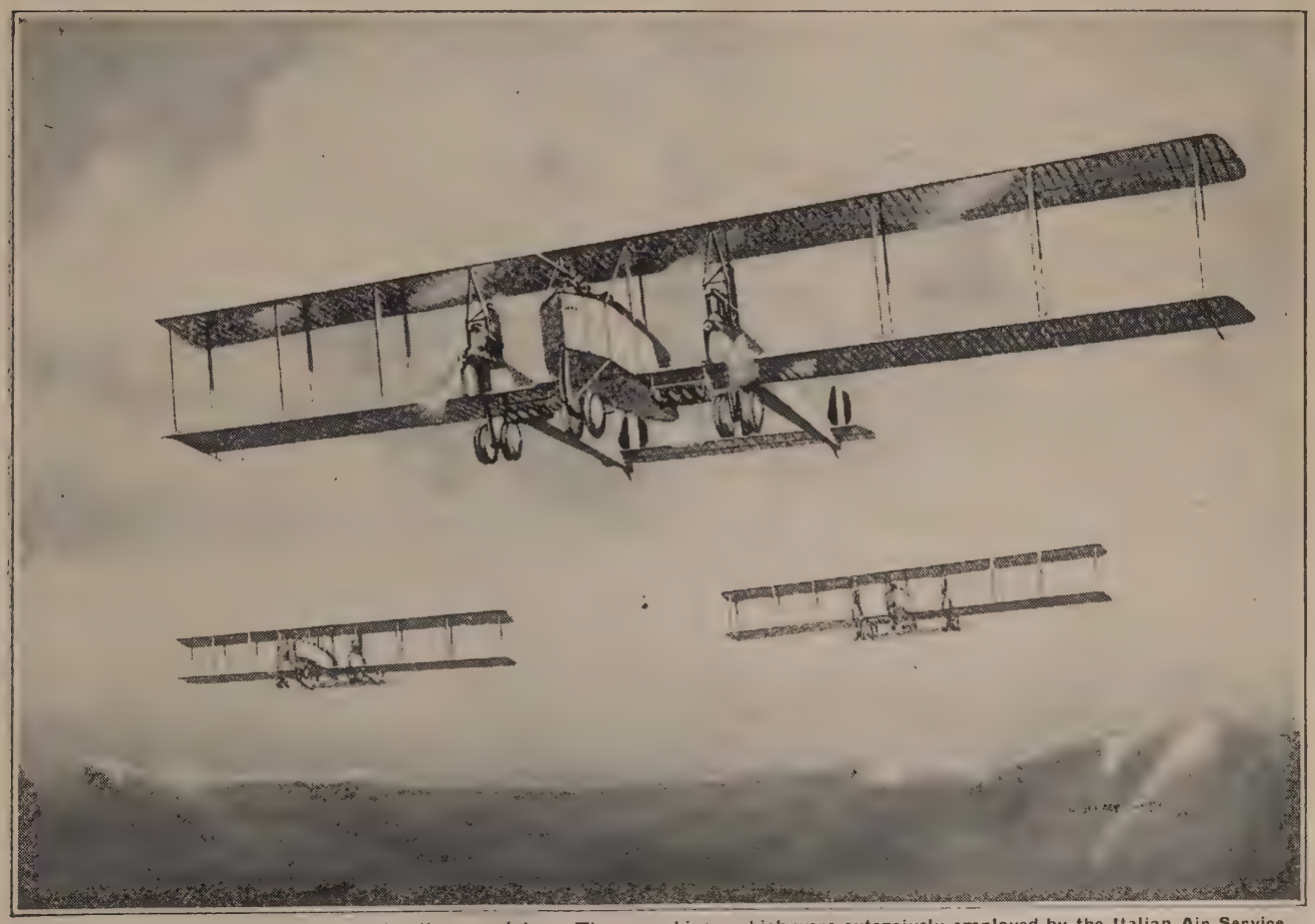


Famous French fighting single-seater biplane, the S.P.A.D., or "Spad," which the Germans imitated in their Albatros.

THE famous types of Italian and French aeroplanes shown in these pictures proved of great service—the small "Spad" as a fighting machine and the giant Capronis for their carrying capacity.

The Caproni triplane is worked by three 600 h.p. engines, has a speed of over eighty miles an hour, and carries a ton and a half of bombs.

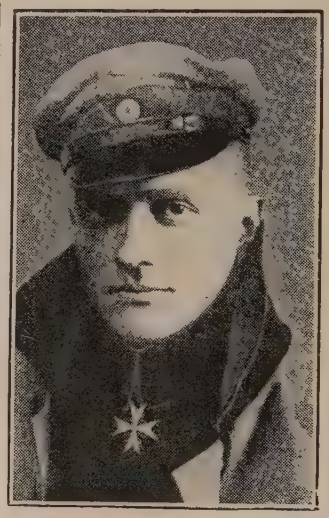
The Caproni biplane, which possesses great lifting power, carries two pilots, a gunner, and an observer, as well as a considerable load of bombs.

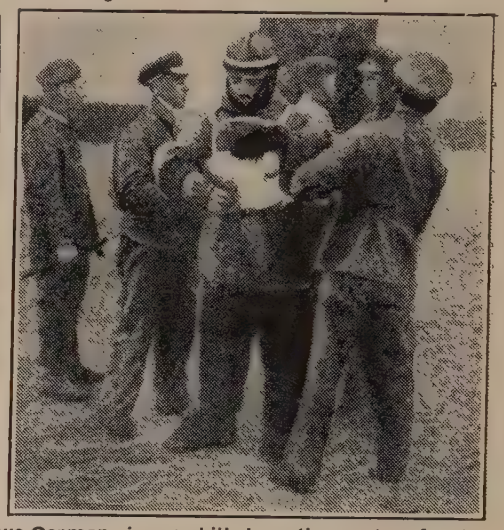


Caproni bomb-carrying biplanes crossing the mountains. These machines, which were extensively employed by the Italian Air Service, carried out successful raids on the Austrian naval base at Cattaro. They carry large loads of bombs.

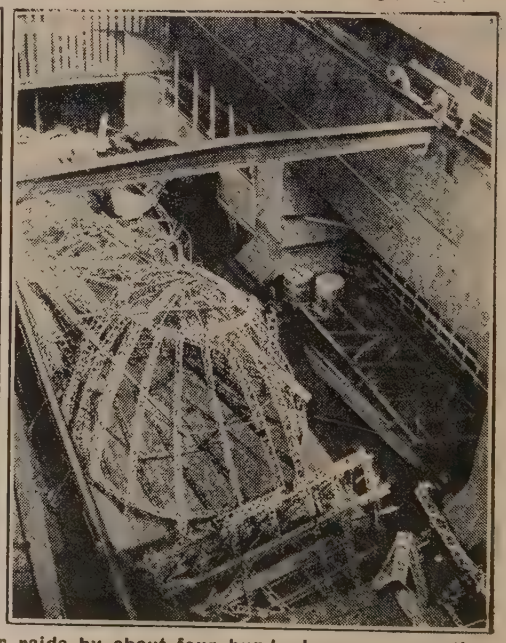
Concrete & Cave Retreats from the Air-Raiders

Bomb-proof shelter of concrete reinforced with steel girders which a resident at Hither Green had erected. In it his family and some neighbours, altogether about thirty persons, found shelter during the air raids. Right: In a suburban "bomb-proof."





Capt. Baron von Richtofen, famous German airman, killed on the western front, 1917, and (right) a Hun raider being dressed for his oversea flight.



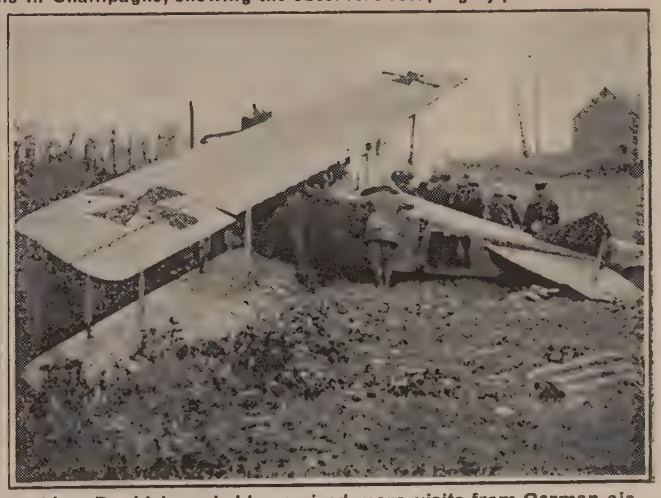
Chalk caves at Ramsgate, twenty feet below ground, utilised as shelters during air raids by about four hundred persons, mostly women and children. Soldiers conveyed the people to their "dug-out." Right: Remains of a Zeppelin in hold of a British ship. Inset above: Capt. Laureati and his mechanic, the Italians who made a non-stop flight of nearly seven hours from Turin to London.

Various Victims of Vagrant & Warring Airmen

British, Australian, and French Official Photographs

Burnt and broken skeleton framework of a German munition train that had been bombed by British airmen on the line near Laon. This photograph was found upon a German prisoner. Right: A British observation balloon on vigil above the melancholy ruins of Ypres.

A two days' old infant in a Dunkirk hospital, injured during an air raid, had the ribbon awarded to the wounded pinned to its clothes. Right: Realistic impression of an aeroplane attack upon balloons in Champagne, showing the observers escaping by parachute.



Facade of Dunkirk Cathedral, showing the damage suffered in air raids. Dunkirk probably received more visits from German air raiders than any other town. Right: A German aeroplane brought down during the fighting at Cambrai.

Truth: the Most Potent Poison to the Hun

Capt. W. H. Davis, M.C., chaplain to a Canadian battalion, awarded the Military Cross for heroism in attending to wounded. (Canadian.)

Sec.-Lt. H. C. Wookey, R.F.C., sentenced to penal servitude by the Germans for dropping leaflets.

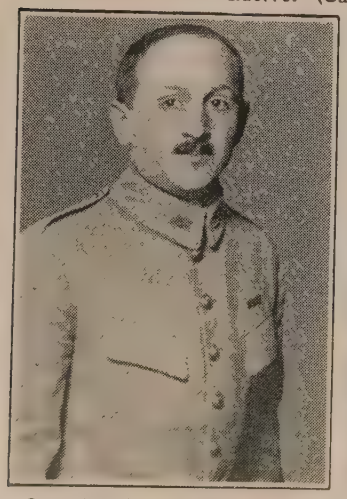
Lieut. E. Scholtz, R.F.C., who was also sentenced to ten years' penal servitude for the same offence.

General Orth, of the Belgian Army, decorating General Sir Arthur Currie, in command of the Canadians on the western front, with the Belgian Croix de Guerre. (Canadian official photograph.)

THE portraits on this page illustrate something of the significance of the familiar phrase as to the fortunes of war. The two young British officers shown, Sec.-Lieut. Wookey and Lieut. Scholtz, both of the Royal Flying Corps, having had the misfortune to fall into the enemy's hands, were sentenced to ten years' penal servitude, their "crime" being the dropping of leaflets over the German lines! Hun aviators might drop poisoned sweets and suchlike samples of Kultur—that was presumably an amiable weakness. To put their troops in the way of learning truth is the worst of crimes; for truth is a poison to militarism against which there is no antitoxin.

Two chaplains—the one French, the other Canadian—are shown, both of whom distinguished themselves by fine courage in carrying on their work in the field. Père Cabanel served with the Alpine Chasseurs of the Seventh French Army from the day of mobilisation—he is wearing the chevrons of two and a half years' service on his sleeve. Captain Davis, M.C., gained his distinction by his cool work in No Man's Land in the Passchendaele fighting, when he tended the wounded under heavy fire.

Captain Georges Weill, who spoke in London, was at one time member of the Reichstag for Metz, but joining the French Army on the outbreak of war devoted himself to the freeing of Alsace-Lorraine.

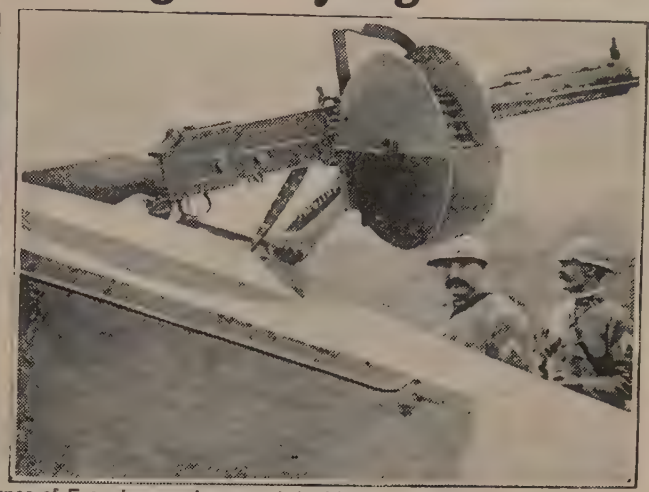


Capt. Weill, ex-member of the Reichstag for Metz, who joined the French Army.

General Puyperioux decorating Sergt. Lasserie, of the French Army, with the Croix de Guerre for great bravery in action. (French official photograph.)

Père Cabanel was a member of the French Mission to the United States.

Arms and Apparatus for Night-Flying Airmen



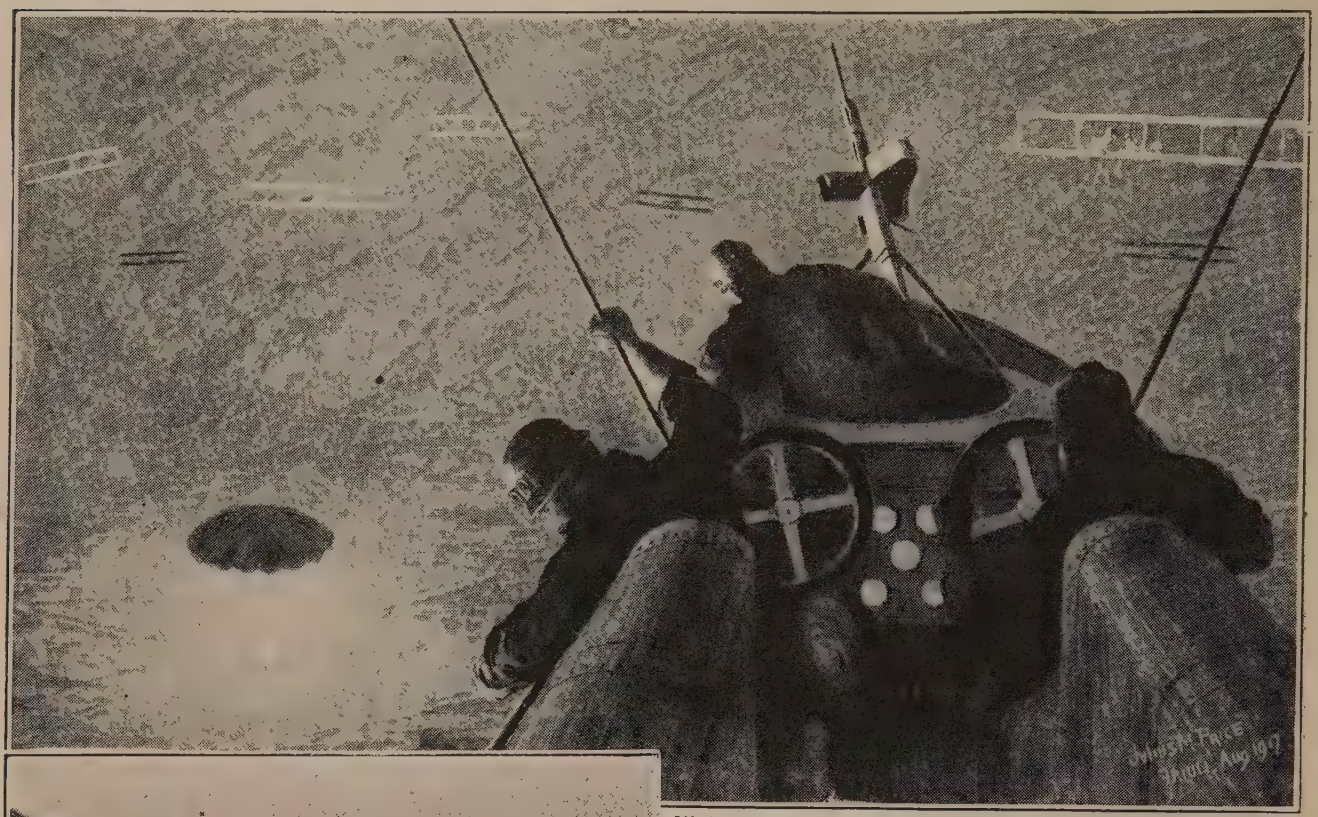
French official photograph showing the intricate engines of some types of French aeroplanes and, incidentally, some of the details of their high-speed machines. Right: Type of machine-gun used by German airmen in position on a captured German aeroplane.

Officer of an R.F.C. night-bombing squadron fixing the electrical foot-sole and glove-heating apparatus before going up. (British official photograph.)

British pilot and observer on the western front dressing for a night-bombing expedition over enemy territory. (British official photograph.)

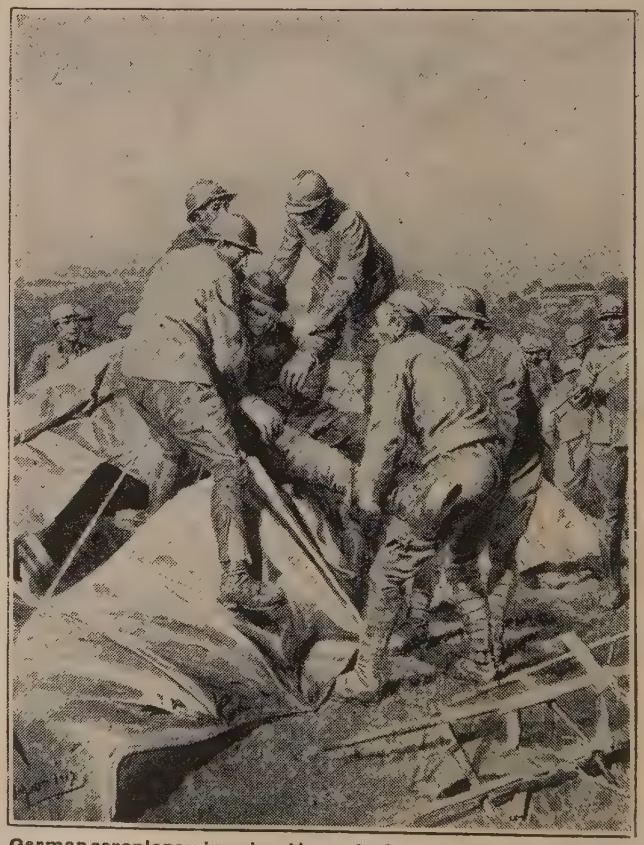
Three Italian Caproni machines in flight over an Italian town. In circle: Lieut. Dostler, one of Germany's crack airmen, who was said to have brought down twenty-six hostile machines. He was posted as "missing," and believed to be a prisoner in England.

Lights and Shades of the War in the Air



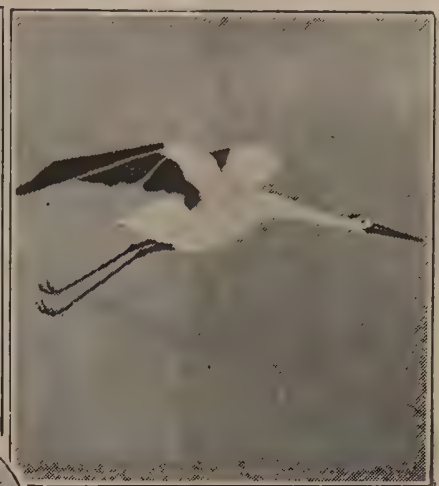
Night air raid on Pola by Italian aviators, when fourteen tons of explosives were dropped on the Austrian naval base and arsenal. With a brilliant parachute light (left of the picture) the airmen got clear views of their objectives and stupefied the enemy.

French air raid behind the enemy lines on the western front, where a German ammunition depot has been set on fire.



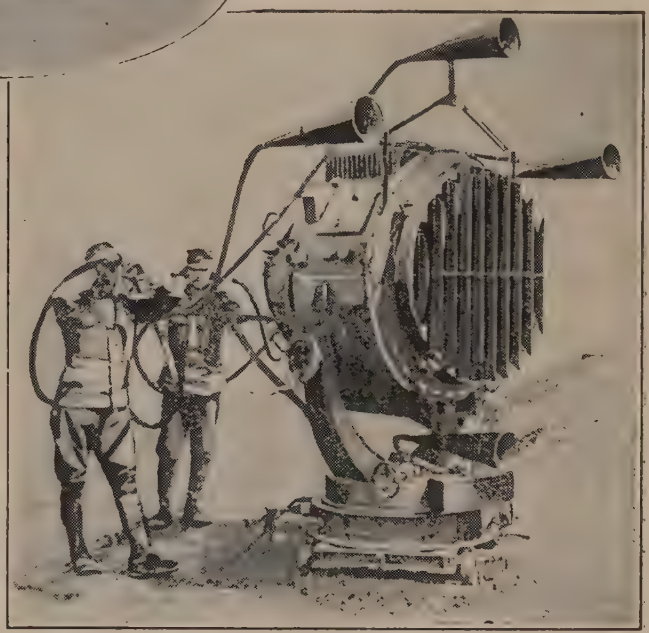
German aeroplane winged and brought down on the western front. French soldiers are removing the injured aviator from the debris.

Marks and Men of Mark in Five Rival Air Fleets

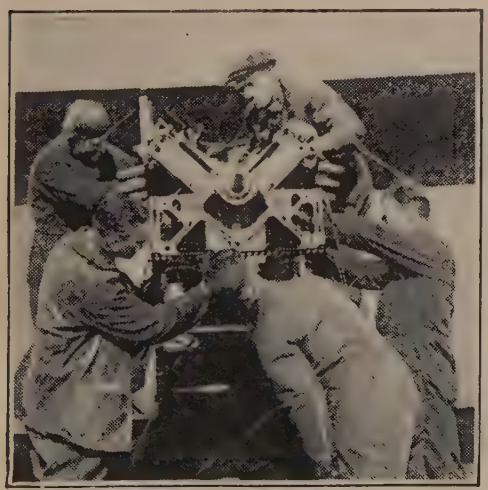


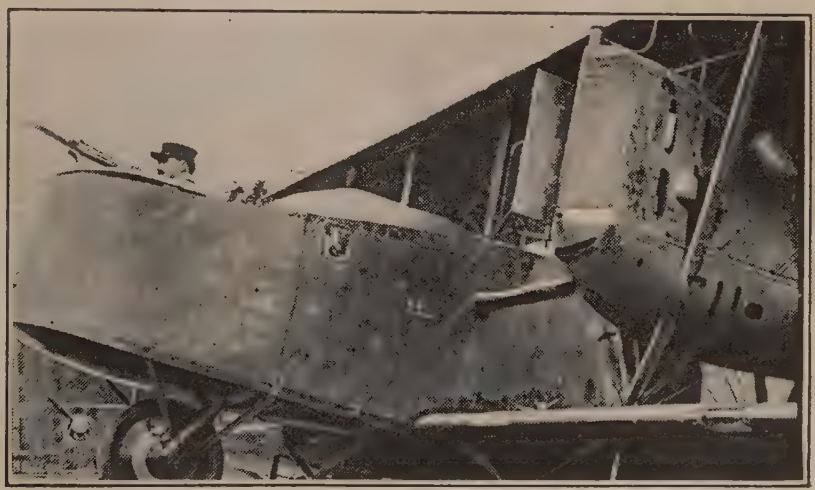
Badges of the four squadrons of the Storks group of fighting aeroplanes (Les Cigognes) of the French Air Service.

Even in such small matters as aeroplane marks the French express their native genius for art.



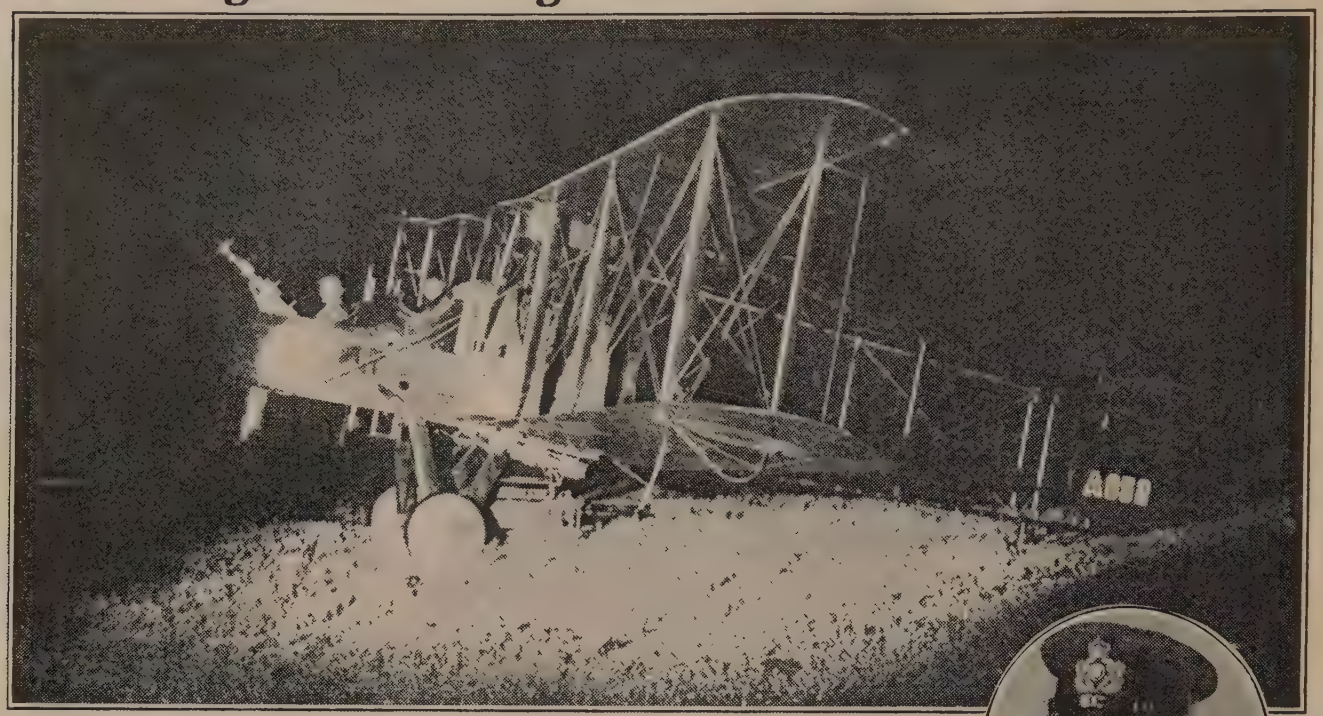
Lieut. W. Coppens, of the Belgian Air Service, who in three months brought down fifteen observation balloons and two aeroplanes. Right: Austrians using a searchlight fitted with sound detectors to discover whence aeroplanes are coming and their distance.





Count de Boliac (top figure), of the French Air Service, instructing cadets to assemble an aeroplane engine at Princetown Aviation School, U.S.A. Right: One of the 1918 model German Friedrichshafen bombing aeroplanes captured intact by the French.

Searchlight & Sidelights on Air Raids & Raiders



Striking photograph taken under a searchlight of a British bombing machine about to start on a night raid. In circle: Captain Strasser, leader of the Zeppelin detachment of the German Navy, who was destroyed with his airship and crew by British aircraft August 5th, 1918, off the British coast.

One night's rations for a single bombing squadron of the R.A.F. All these bombs were for dropping on enemy munition dumps, railway stations, and rolling-stock behind the German lines on the western front in one raid. Many bombing squadrons were incessantly at work.

World-wide Echoes of the War

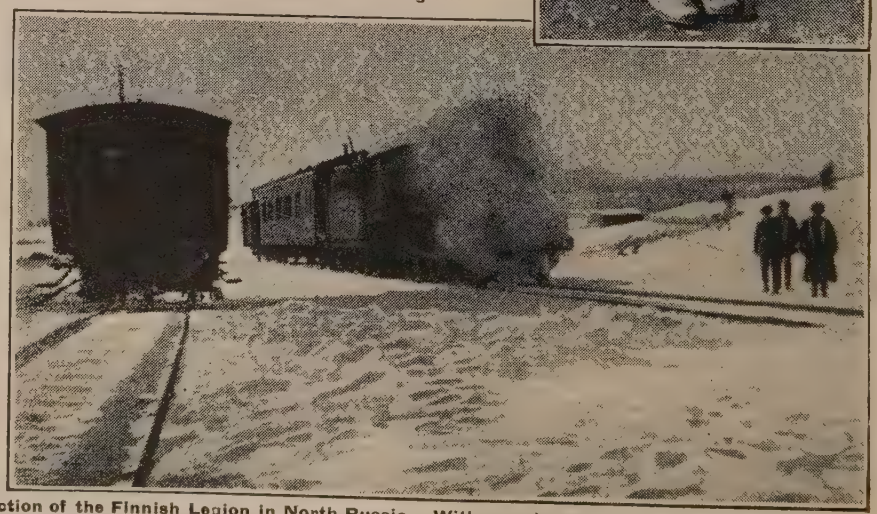
In these pages are included a number of highly interesting pictures which cannot be easily placed in any of the foregoing sections. Of historic significance are splendid illustrations of the British expeditions undertaken to counteract Bolshevist activity in Russia, at Archangel and along the Murman coast. The section also contains pictures showing Russia herself in the toils of the anarchist policy represented by Bolshevism.

Major-General Sir William Edmund Ironside, K.C.B., D.S.O., general officer commanding the forces at Archangel against the Bolshevists. General Ironside, a man of great energy and initiative who has travelled all over the world, had the gift of inspiring the confidence of all under his command. He stands 6 ft. 4 in. high, and served as an ox-waggon driver in the German Herrero Campaign.

Rallying Points of Activity Against Russian Anarchy

British troops man-handling a gun across snowy ground on the Murman coast. The gun was raised on wooden runners, as it would have been impossible to drag the wheels without getting them fixed in the snow.

Sleds of the reindeer-drawn transport used by the British forces on the Murman coast. Driver and reindeer enjoy a brief rest. Right: A Finnish Volunteer on sentry duty in the Murmansk region.



Brig.-Gen. M.N. Turner, C.B., C.M.G., at an inspection of the Finnish Legion in North Russia. With members of his Staff he was watching a company ski-ing down a distant slope. Right: Train leaving the Finnish Legion's headquarters in North Russia. By March, 1919, the Finns had cut the Petrograd Railway near Lake Ladoga, and were receiving support from the inhabitants, who had risen against the Bolshevists.

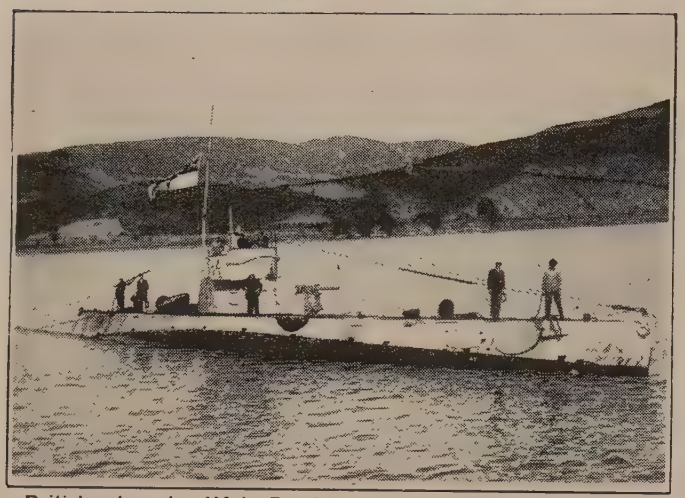
Bolshevist Regime in Russia: Lenin & His Satellites

Lev Borisovitch Kameneff (Rosenfeldt), President of the Moscow Soviet; (centre) Trotsky when a young man, and (right) Jacob Sverdloff, President of the Soviet Republic. (These photographs are from books of the "Okhrana," or secret police system, of Russia under the Tsardom.)

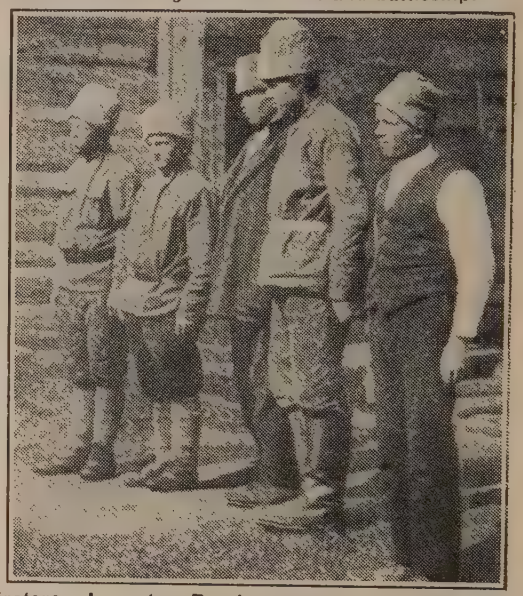
Ovzey Hershon Zinovieff (Apfelbaum), President of the Northern Commune, and virtual Dictator of Petrograd. Right: Karl Radek (Sobelson), Russian Assistant Commissary for Foreign Affairs, at a review of the Red Army. He is wearing a cloth cap and spectacles and smoking a pipe.

Lenin, virtually the Dictator of Russia. His real name is Vladimir Ilytch Ulianoff, and he has been described as the life and soul of the whole Bolshevist movement. He is an "hereditary noble," and one of the few genuine Russians among the Bolshevist leaders. Right: Lev Davidovitch Trotsky (Leiba Bronstein), who is Commissary for War. He has been sarcastically termed "the greatest Jewish general since Joshua."

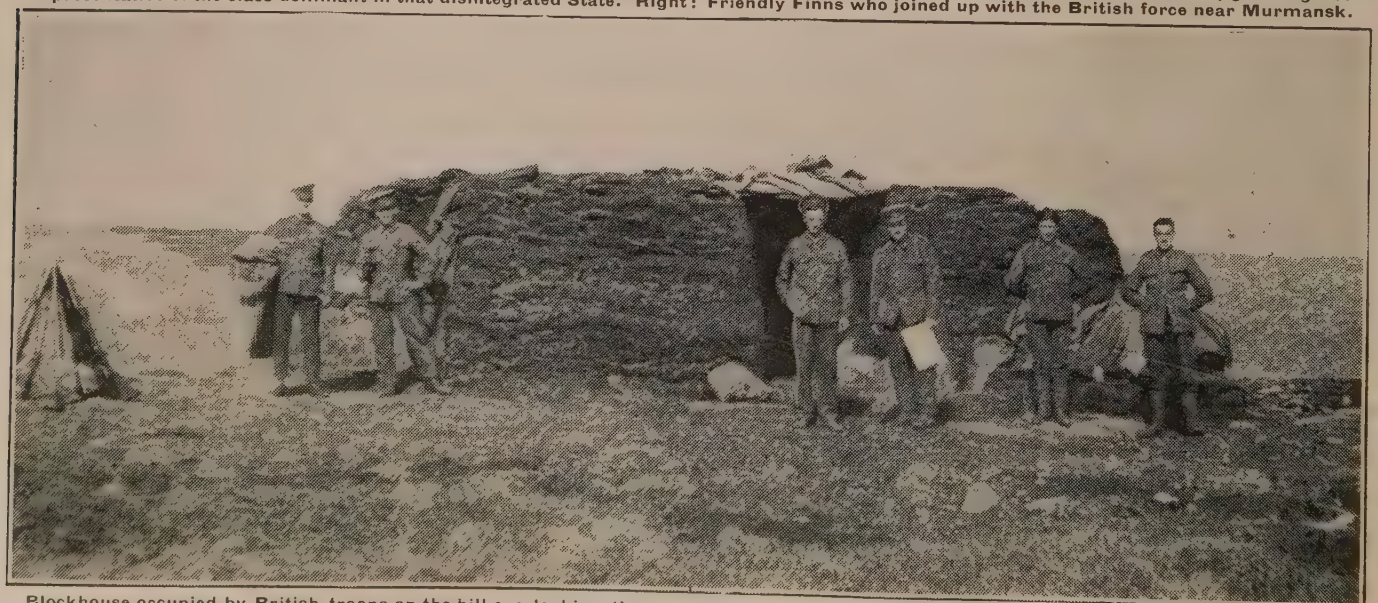
With Britain's Ordered Forces in Distracted Russia



British submarine H4 in Russian waters, and (right) H.M.S. Centaur, cruiser, firing a salvo off the Black Sea Coast. In the dismembered Empire of the Tsars, racked by Revolution, order reigned only in those regions where the British flag flew over fort and battleship.



British bluejackets aboard a battleship in Russian waters wearing gas-helmets and respirators. In centre: Russian peasants, grim figures representative of the class dominant in that disintegrated State. Right: Friendly Finns who joined up with the British force near Murmansk.



Blockhouse occupied by British troops on the hill overlooking the naval camp established near Murmansk in June, 1918. The blockhouse, which is constructed of turf and protected with sandbags, is one of a series in the scheme of defence of the Murman coast established by the British Expeditionary Force, to which a relief force was despatched in April, 1919.

Barring the Red Terror From the White North

Esthonian cadets drilling in readiness for meeting the advancing Bolshevists. One of them is wearing a German helmet. On January 4th, 1919, the situation in Esthonia was still precarious, the native troops lacking such organisation and arms as their invaders possessed.

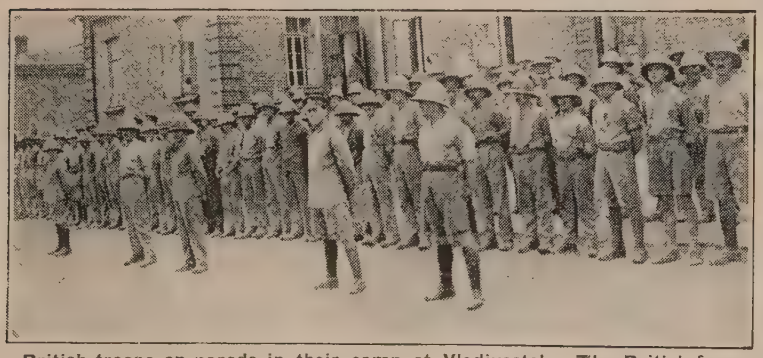
British Marines explaining the Madsen gun to Esthonians who—powerless, unaided, to cope successfully with the armed tyranny of the Bolshevists—welcomed the arrival of the British squadron in the Baltic as a guarantee of the security of their lives and property

Mating the Huns' Insidious Moves in Siberia

Czecho-Slovak, Japanese, and British sailors at Vladivostok, where the Allies combined to crush Teuton efforts to stir up disturbance in Siberia.

Czecho-Slovak guard of honour saluting the Union Jack at Vladivostok. A large number of Czechs reached the port to assist the Allies.

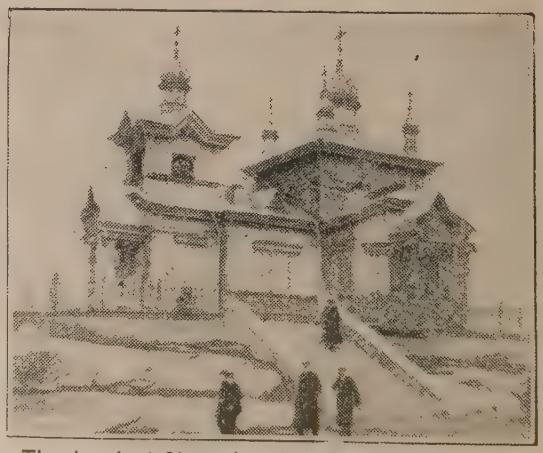
Russian ship leaving the Murman coast with refugees from the Terror.



British troops on parade in their camp at Vladivostok. The British force was reinforced by French, American, and Japanese troops.

The church at Kola, at the head of the Kola inlet, on the Murman coast.

German, Austrian, and Turkish prisoners of war in their concentration camp at Vladivostok, unable further to co-operate with the Bolshevists.



The church at Alexandrovsk, in Murman, which the Germans proposed to cede to Finland.

Allied Activity Against Bolshevist Anarchy

Band of the Royal Marines playing to Russian sailors and workmen somewhere on the North Russian front. In September, 1918, it was announced that British naval units and allied troops had carried out successful operations on the River Dwina, and that along the Murman front there had been several encounters between Karelians and hostile patrols, the former being uniformly successful, capturing prisoners and machine-guns.

Japanese sailors landing provisions at Vladivostok. General Knox, who arrived at that place in September, 1918, to command the British troops in Siberia, replied to a telegram of welcome from Moscow: "We have not come here to seize Russian territory or to interfere in any way with your internal politics. Our sole aim is to free your lands from the tyranny of the Prussian and his vile instrument Bolshevism."

Indomitable Gunners—Italian and British

When the collapse of some troops entailed a general retreat of the Italian Army, many heroic rearguard actions were fought. Near the spot where the Isonzo was crossed, an Italian gun team stood to the last, fighting round their gun until overwhelmed by numbers.

British field-artillery on the way to Poelcappelle crossing the Steenbeke, under heavy fire, by one of the many trestle bridges built for them over the intersecting waterways. Branches laid upon the roads gave some semblance of substance to the tracks submerged in mud.

Varied War Activities of the Devoted V.A.D.

Motor-drivers of a Voluntary Aid Detachment cleaning their cars and getting them into good running order at a depot in France.

Group of brave V.A.D. motor-drivers in France who were recipients of the Military Medal from the hands of General Plumer.

Members of the V.A.D. taking part in a ceremonial march in London, and (in circle) a merry crowd of V.A.D. motor-drivers in France claiming the petrol "rations" for their cars. The dog perched in the background seemed an interested spectator.

Britons Released by Revolutionary Berlin

Party of British civilian prisoners released from Ruhleben Camp, near Berlin. They were gathered together, with their few belongings in bags, bundles, or parcels, ready to set out for home, their bitter experience of German prison camp life at long last being at an end.

Some of the released Ruhleben prisoners with a truckload of their belongings, and (right) a party of them at Ruhleben Station.

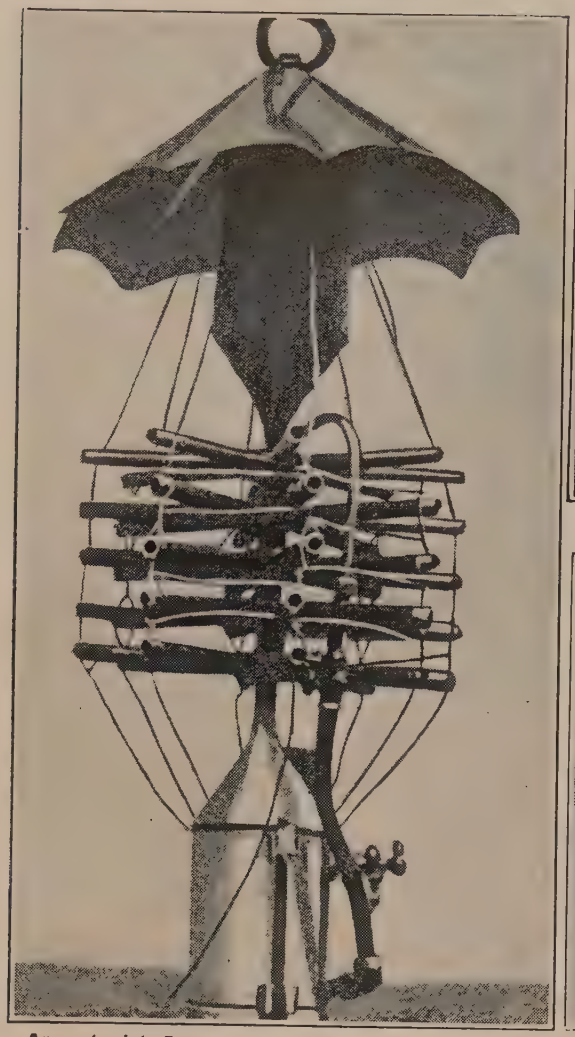
Liebknecht, leader of the "Spartacus" group of German Socialists, addressing a crowd in the Siegesalle, Berlin. Once regarded as the sanest leader among the Socialists, Liebknecht, together with Rosa Luxemburg, was murdered on January 15th, 1919.

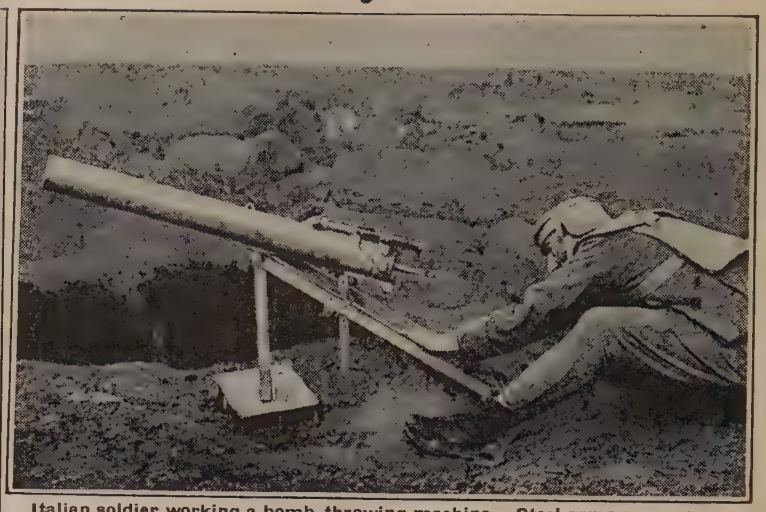
How Nature Hides and Heals the Wounds of War

Reedy lagoons, thronged with waterfowl, cover much of the area where the Belgians confronted the Germans. Belgian volunteers soaked themselves in oil baths, and spent hours in the water surveying and marking out subaqueous roads with posts.

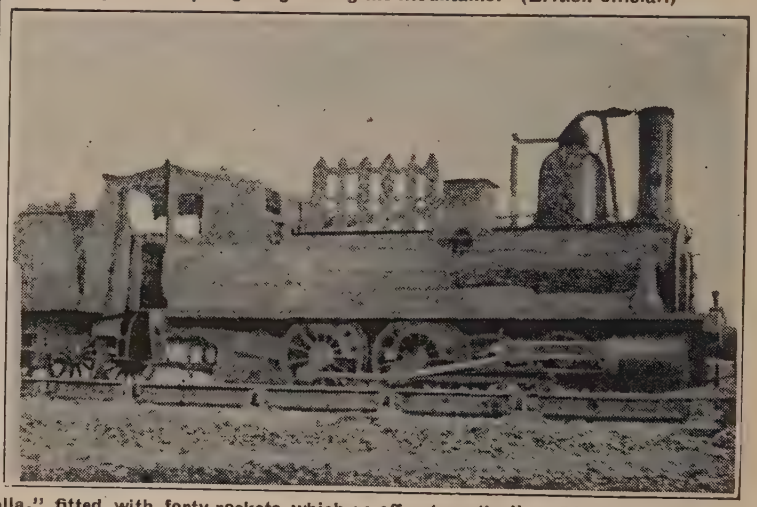
A deserted trench near Fricourt. In many a ruined corner of France the same beneficent artistry of Nature is seen roses blooming amid piles of debris, lilies wafting their delicious scent, and the ground blazing with buttercups, poppies, and bluest of cornflowers.

Eastern Students of Western Ways of Warfare





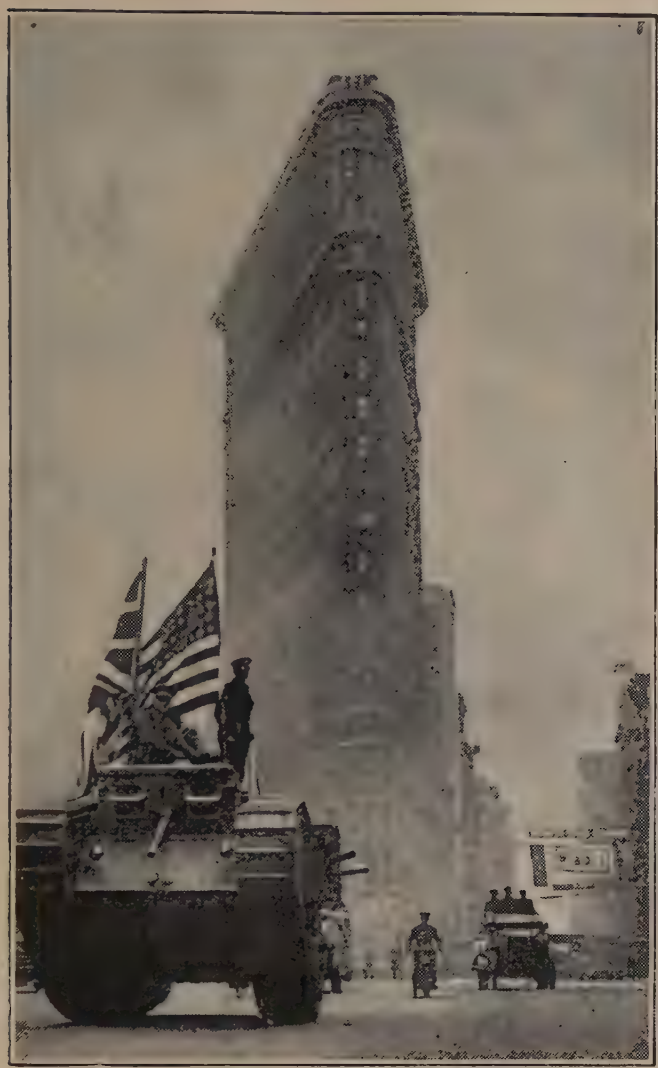
Italian soldier working a bomb-throwing machine. Steel armour was worn by the troops fighting among the mountains. (British official.)

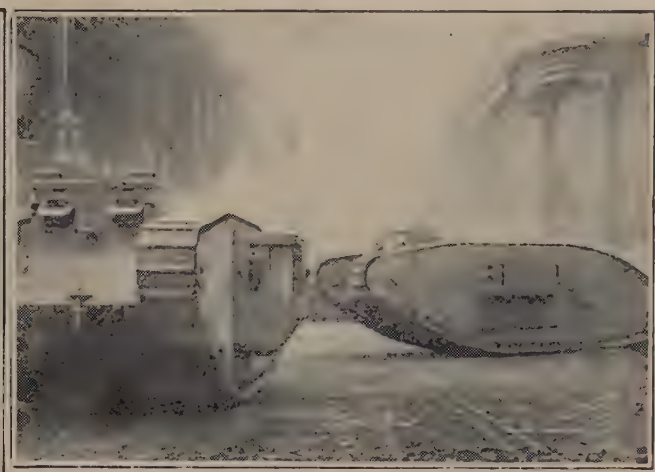


An up-to-date German "Leuchtschirm," or "light umbrella," fitted with forty rockets which go off automatically. Right: An engine used with the trains taking up supplies to the front troops, disguised according to the best theory and practice of camouflage.

French soldiers placing a 9.6 mortar in position on a new advanced point. (French official.) Right: Princes Wan and Piak, of the Siamese Royal Family (centre figures), who enlisted in the Swiss Army in order to benefit by European military instruction.

Trophies of War that Swelled Two City Triumphs





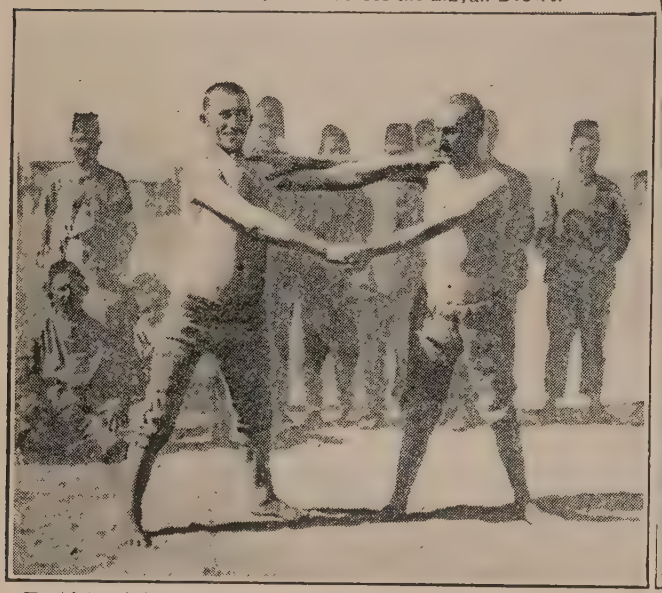
"Male and female 'tanks'" which were exhibited to Londoners in the Lord Mayor's Show and elicited enthusiastic applause.

A British "tank" which was sent from the battlefields of Europe to participate in the demonstration in New York in aid of the Liberty Loan. Right: This German aeroplane was among the war trophies carried in triumph through London in the Lord Mayor's procession.

The mine-layer UC5 was exhibited in New York as an object-lesson in piracy and as a stimulus to subscriptions to the Liberty Loan. These official photographs show the submarine being drawn through New York, and (right) being unloaded at 132nd Street, N.Y.

Under Changing Skies: East in West & West in East

A blockhouse near Beharia, one of a chain of similar posts built at intervals of twenty miles across the Libyan Desert.

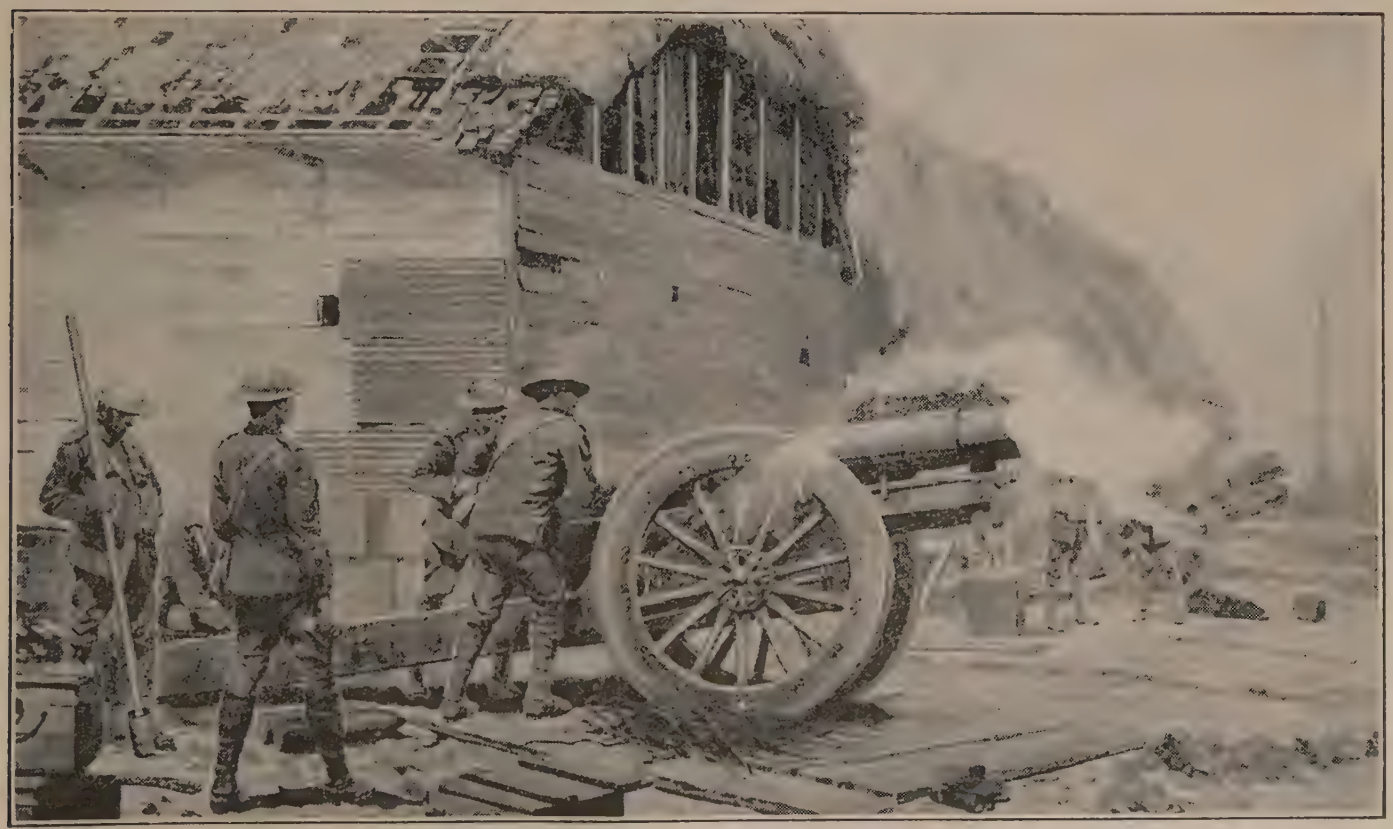


Turkish prisoners amusing themselves by wrestling. Right: Evidence of the good feeling existing between East and West where British power prevails. Native women smiling and safe between an English and an Indian soldier, near the grave of a Christian comrade.

Native labour battalions from many parts of the Empire did fine work on the western front. These official photographs show some natives from Manipur enjoying their rations, and (right) in their quarters, where one is receiving attention from a barber.

Gunners in Training & Guns Trained on the Hun

British, French, and Italian artillery officers at a school of instruction in Italy, preparing for concerted action against the renewed Hun offensive threatened in 1918. The picture of officers of three nations undergoing training in common affords a most suggestive idea of the closeness of the alliance between the civilised peoples that joined forces to repel the irruption of barbarism.

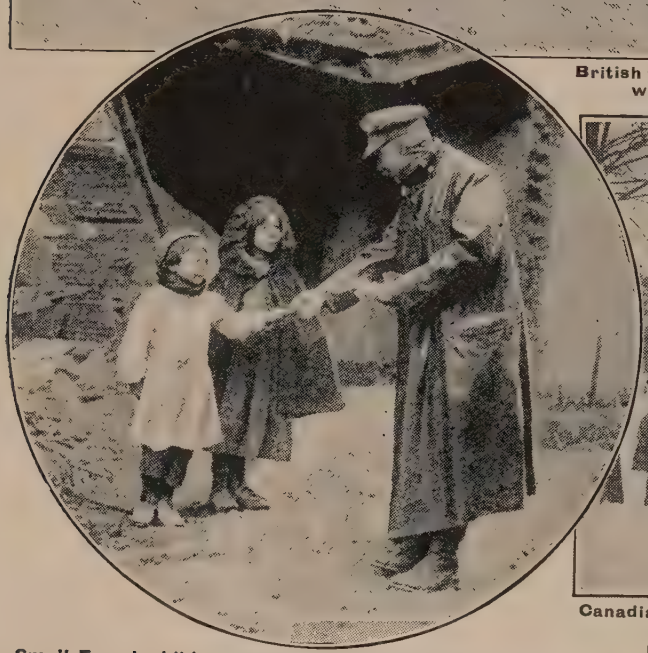


British guns in action near a farm on the western front during the magnificent stand made against the German offensive. Where retirement of parts of the British forces became necessary to keep the allied line intact, it was carried out under cover of such fierce rearguard action that the enemy was made to pay dearly for the ground which he gained.

Duty and Piety from Dieppe to the Piave

British and Canadian Official Photographs

British troops marching forward to the front in Italy. They were regarded with lively interest by a group of peasant women and children.



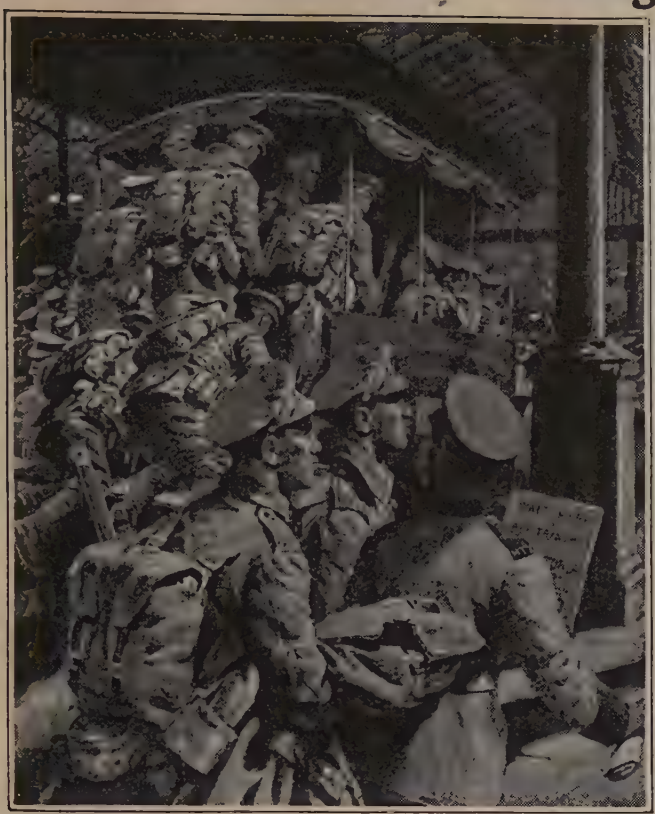
Small French children among the ruined buildings of Nesle gratefully receive a gift of chocolate from a British officer.

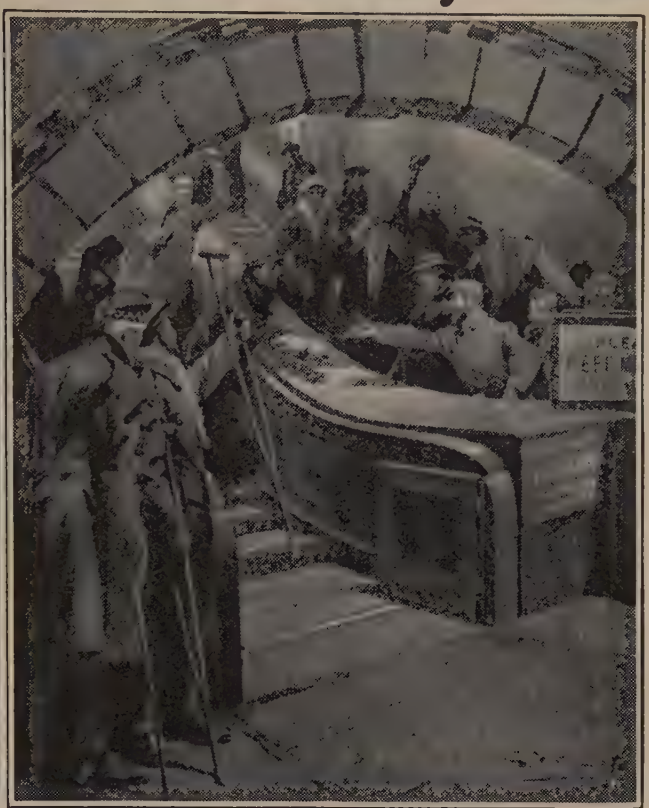
Canadian soldiers approaching St. George's Church—a tiny wooden edifice erected near their lines in France—to attend a service.

French girl who controlled the road traffic of the British Army at Arques, south of Dieppe. She was known as the Belle of Arques.

Canadian polling officer, during the 1917 election, interested in a German gas-cylinder while waiting for men to register their votes.

Warm Welcome Waiting at the Journey's End



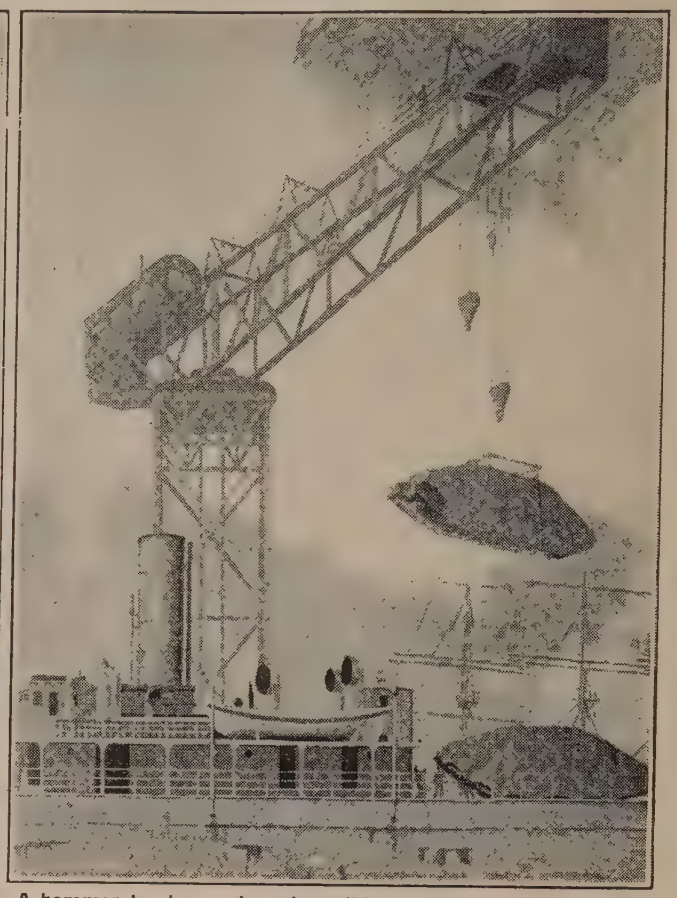


Returning to the front. Soldiers arriving at the railway termini were afforded free transport across London to their station of departure by the Motor Transport Volunteers. Right: On the moving stairs—a brief meeting with an old friend from France.

Where British soldiers were pleasantly billeted near the western front. In a farmhouse in the war zone in Northern France the men found themselves comfortably situated, and soon made friends with the hospitable people on whom they were billeted.

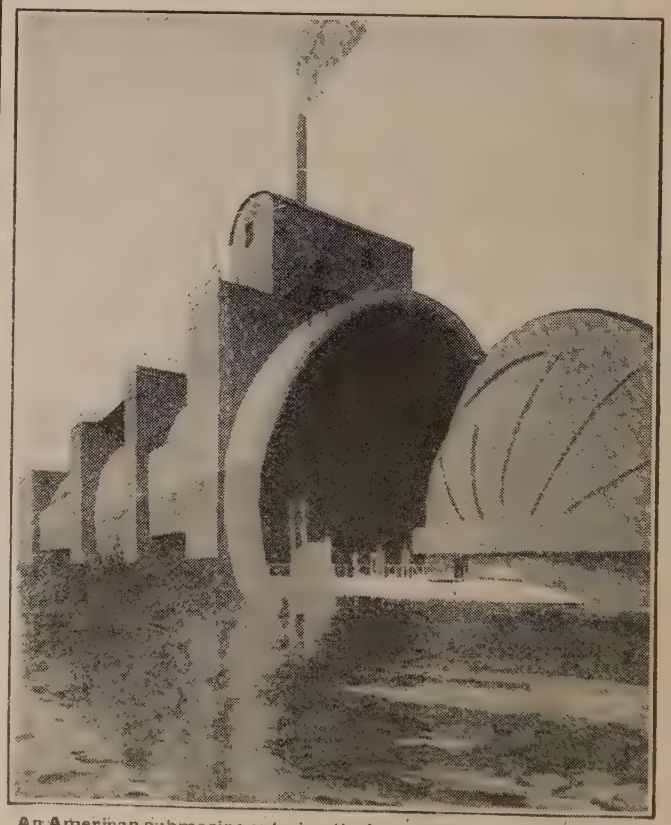
Men and Machines that Overcame All Obstacles

"Here's luck!" British private and French "simple soldier" clink cups in token of amity and mutual wishes for good fortune.



A hammer-head crane lowering a "tank" into the hold of a ship for conveyance to one of the battle fronts.

The "Teleferica," the wonderful aerial lines by which the Italians conveyed men and munitions from one mountain peak to another.



An American submarine entering the Laurenti dock to be subjected to pressure tests before being passed for deep-water service.

City of London Honours Leaders from Overseas

Fifty tons of coal brought from Cannock, in Staffordshire, to London by means of a paraffin motor-driven barge. Right: General Smuts and the Maharaja of Bikanir at the Guildhall, London, where they received the freedom of the City.

King Albert of Belgium and his two sons, Princes Leopold and Charles, walking on the shore of Flanders. (Belgian official.)

Heliographic, or sunlight, signalling on the wes ern front. The man with the telescope is reading the distant flashes. (British official.)

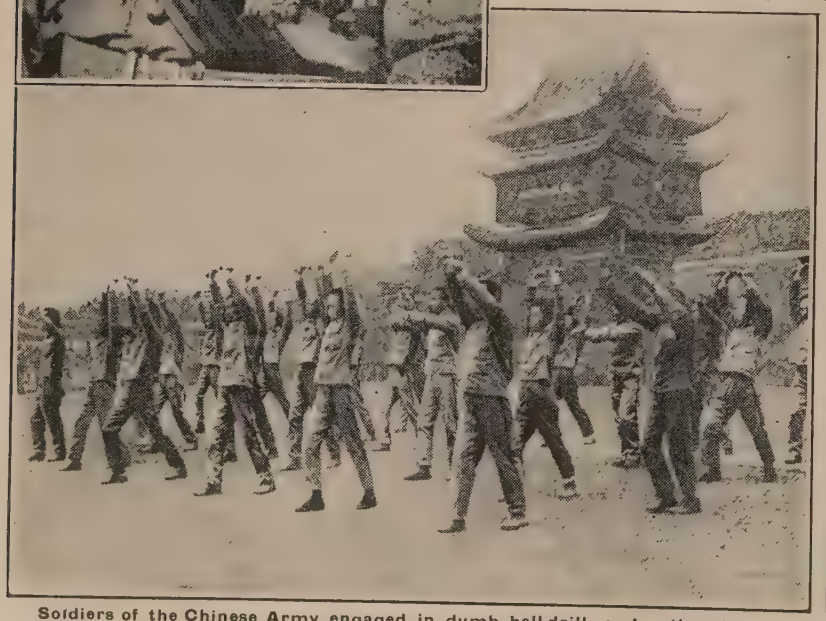
Indian Cavalry on the western front, where the spring of 1917 gave them welcome opportunity of action. (British official.)

German prisoners captured by the Canadians at Vimy Ridge marching through a French town. (Canadian official photograph.)

The Dragon-Flag Unfurled Against the Hun

Chinese cavalry engaged in scouting operations, and (right) Chinese bomb-throwers. On August 14th, 1917, the President of the Chinese Republic issued a mandate announcing the existence of a state of war between China and the two Central Powers.

Chinese soldiers in Peking during the crisis, and (left) Li Yuan Hung, ex-President of the Chinese Republic, who fled at the beginning of July, 1917.



Soldiers of the Chinese Army engaged in dumb-bell drill, and (right) making a pyramid during physical exercises. China's declaration of war against Germany and Austria on August 14th, 1917, had its origin in the resumption by Germany of her ruthless methods of submarine warfare On February 9th China threatened a rupture unless these methods were modified. Diplomatic relations were broken off on March 12th. Germany then stirred up political and dynastic trouble, but in China, as in the U.S.A., Teuton intrigue failed, and the Dragon-Flag was unfurled with the Stars and Stripes against the arch-enemy of civilisation.

British Prisoners in the Hands of the Huns

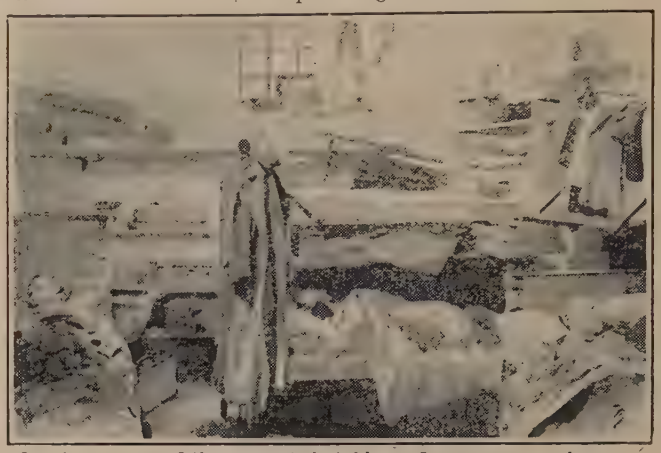
Group of British airmen who were prisoners at Osnabruck, in Germany. The centre figure had been so thoroughly obliterated by Teuton censorship that speculation as to who it might be was inevitable. Possibly it was Flight-Commander W. Leefe Robinson, V.C., the hero of Cuffley, who had been thus photographically "strafed," and who, it was stated, was a prisoner in hands of the Germans.

Somewhere behind the Hindenburg line. A party of British prisoners who had the misfortune to be captured during the fighting in the west. The Germans made some ludicrous claims as to the number of prisoners they had taken.

How Interned Britons Fared at Ruhleben

RUHLEBEN is a name that has come to have a very special significance. It was there, a few miles from Berlin, that at the outbreak of war the Germans formed an extensive internment camp for British civil prisoners. There some four thousand people were interned, and the conditions during the first twelve months were described as being absolutely horrible. When, in the late part of 1915, conditions improved somewhat, they did so largely owing to the systematic sending to the unfortunate prisoners of food supplies from home. Some of the prisoners who were released and reached this country at the beginning of February, 1917, described the one-time brutal officials as having become more than a little chastened in their behaviour. "In the early days of the war it was their habit to chivy the prisoners from pillar to post, and to make life unendurable for them. It was rather more than a policy of pin-pricks, it was a daily strafing in the most overbearing and arrogant spirit," but it was added that by the close of 1916 "all that had disappeared like the mists of the morning." The prisoners, despite the treatment to which they were subjected, managed to keep up their spirits and to devise ever-new interests and outlets for their cramped energies. They indulged in games, they started a camp magazine, organised theatricals, got up classes for the studying of various subjects, debating societies, lectures, and other means not only of whiling away the inevitable tedium of life in an internment camp, but also keeping themselves as much as possible from mental and physical suffering consequent upon the harsh treatment meted out by the unscrupulous ministers of barbarism masquerading as Kultur.

Sleeping quarters in one of the stables which formed a large part of the barracks in which the prisoners were housed.



Another corner of the converted stables. A manger may be seen beyond the head of the sleeping figure on the left in each view.

Glimpse of a Ruhleben interior. Left is a grocery store, where food for the mind in the form of books seems to have been purveyed along with pickles, condensed milk and other comestibles. Beyond the counter a prisoner is seen completing his toilet.

Last Glimpse of Britain in War Time

An interesting section is necessarily that devoted to depicting the wonderful scenes and incidents which went to make up the picture of Britain at home. Although the varied phases of activity here represented may not possess the intense interest of actual battle views, they nevertheless hold a definite, permanent interest for the reader of to-day and the student of the Great War in years to come.

OUT OF KHAKI.—Thankful to be free to wear mufti again, a demobilised soldier puts his uniform away.

Edith Cavell's Home-Coming to Rest in Life's Green:

Edith Cavell's coffin, drawn by British gunners and escorted by Belgian troops, at the Gare du Nord, Brussels, the doors of which were draped.

British sailors guarding the flower-covered coffin on H.M. destroyer Rowena during the passage from Ostend to Dover.

Bringing the body ashore at the Naval Pier, Dover, and (right) the procession passing along the Dover front. Rear-Admiral Dampier, commanding the Dover Patrol, and General Sir Colin Campbell, commanding at Dover, with their Staffs, met the body, which then was escorted by soldiers, sailors, nurses, and civic officials to the Admiralty Pier, there to rest for the night under military guard, May 14th, 1919.

Soul-Inspiring Scenes in Abbey, Street and Shrine

After a service in Westminster Abbey the coffin was borne through Parliament Square and along the Embankment to Liverpool Street.

Lowering the coffin into its flower-lined final resting-place in Life's Green, in the Close of Norwich Cathedral, May 15th, 1919.

Passing the Royal Exchange on the way to Liverpool Street. The coffin was conveyed on a gun-carriage with an escort of 100 Guardsmen marching with arms reversed. On the Union Jack that enfolded it was a single wreath sent by Queen Alexandra. Deep silence testified to the emotion of the vast crowds all along the route. Inset: Buglers sounding the "Last Post" over the grave in Life's Green.

London's Delirious Joy at the Coming of Peace

Young Londoners who cheered the news of the coming of peace from the summit of some of the war trophies in the Mall.

In the Strand: One of the "victory cars" that carried clustering crowds of riders about the densely thronged streets.

The Duke of Connaught, after visiting the King, chatting with a wounded Scots officer in the Park. Right: The crowd that gathered outside the Mansion House, and (in circle above) Sir Horace Brooks Marshall, the Lord Mayor, whose year of office auspiciously began with the termination of the war. It was on Lord Mayor's Show Day that the Kaiser's abdication was announced.

A taxi load, and (right) an Army lorry load in Whitehall of military and civilian demonstrators. When it was known that the armistice was signed and the fighting had ceased on that wonderful morning of November 11th, 1918, every street became thronged with rejoicing crowds, and all sorts of vehicles were cheerfully "commandeered."

Royal Welcome Home for Prisoners of War

"What are these ?" asked a British sailor prisoner of war at Hull on seeing two girls of the Land Army. He was at once introduced to them. Right: Some of the returned prisoners of war who had escaped from Germany across the frontier into Holland.

Arrival at Hull of one of the transports closely thronged with British prisoners of war from Germany on November 17th, 1918, and (right) a general view on board one of the vessels, showing part of the cheery crowd of repatriated soldiers and sailors.

Sir Stanley von Donop reading King George's message of welcome to the British prisoners of war on their arrival at Hull on Sunday, Nov. 17th, 1918, and (right) some of the returned men of the R.N.D. who had been interned in Holland since Antwerp fell in Oct., 1914.

Women from Far & Near United in War Work

Women workers in the limestone quarries near Buxton, Derbyshire, bringing lime from a kiln after it has been fired, and (right) loading up trucks. Many of the women engaged in this valuable work were wives and sisters of men serving in the Army.

Women workers of Australia handling the complicated machinery which takes the wheat from the ear, sorts it, puts it in bags, and sews them up ready for shipment to Britain.

American women arriving at an English port on their way to take up their duties as nurses with the United States forces in France. Inset: A cook of Queen Mary's Army Auxiliary Corps in France preparing dinner for the troops.

Royal Recognition of Teeming Tyneside Toil

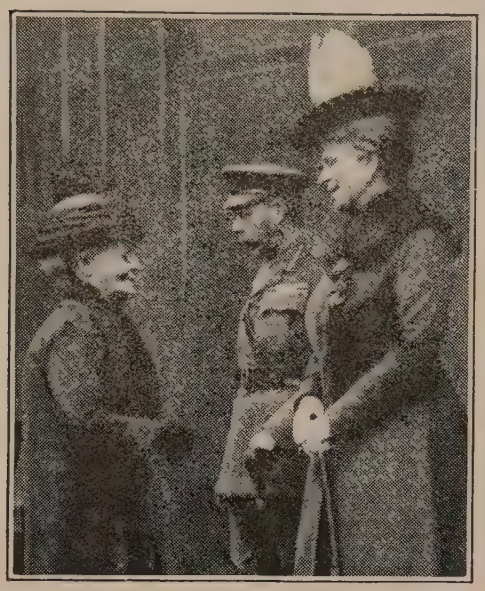
Widow of the late Captain Roy Dunford, Northumberland Fus., receiving D.S.O. from King.

The Duke of Connaught watching women workers handling shells as they arrive in the stencilling shed at munition works where thousands of hands are employed.

Commander Tabuteau explaining armament matters to the King in one of the great Tyneside yards, where the Royal visit aroused enormous enthusiasm.

Widow and son of the late Sergt. George Jacobs, R.A.M.C., receiving his D.C.M. from the King at the open-air investiture at Newcastle, June, 1917. Right: The Royal party watching the repair of the hull of a torpedoed ship. Inset above: John Cassidy, rivet-catcher, catching the King's attention by his stature—3 ft. 6 in.—had a cheery chat with his Majesty.

Royal Progress Through the Industrial North:



Queen Mary at Manchester talking to Mrs. McDermott, to whom the King handed the Military Medal awarded to her son. Right: Women workers who greeted the King and Queen.

In Liverpool the Queen stopped her motor-car at a day nursery for children of munition workers, and gave much pleasure to the tiny occupants, who regarded her with amusingly varied expressions of interest. In circle: A cheery greeting from girls doing national service on the railway.

Girls volunteering for national work on the land were given some essentials of outfit and a month's practical training in farm work. Nine of them are shown here at the moment of arrival at Tregavethan Manor Farm, Cornwall, and (right) starting off to work.

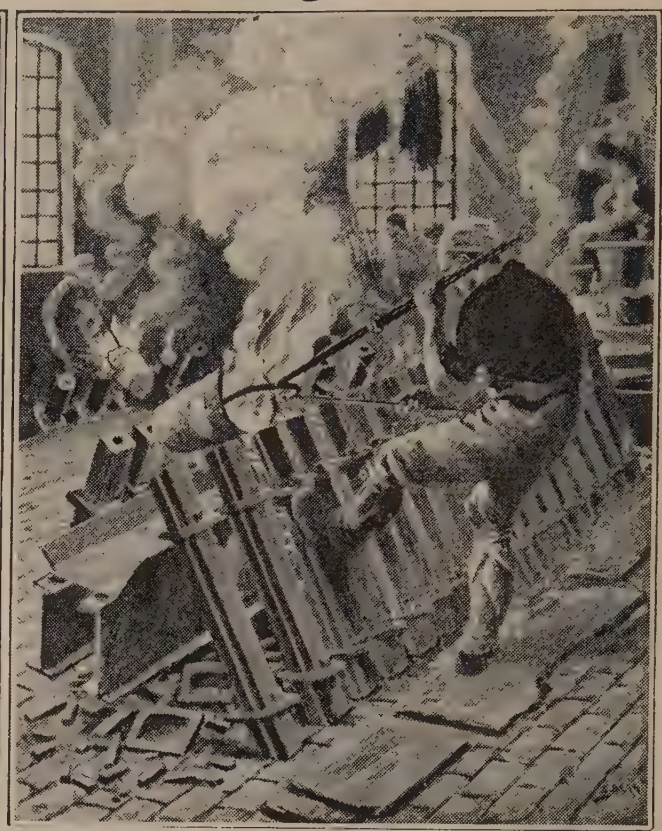
Interesting Incidents in Loyal Lancashire

Their Majesties' tour through the North, May, 1917, was much more than a complimentary inspection of people and places—their evident interest in all they saw cemented loyalty everywhere. At Manchester they were cheered wildly by the children, and (right) at Fazakerley Hospital, Liverpool, they gave great pleasure to the wounded soldiers by chatting freely with them.

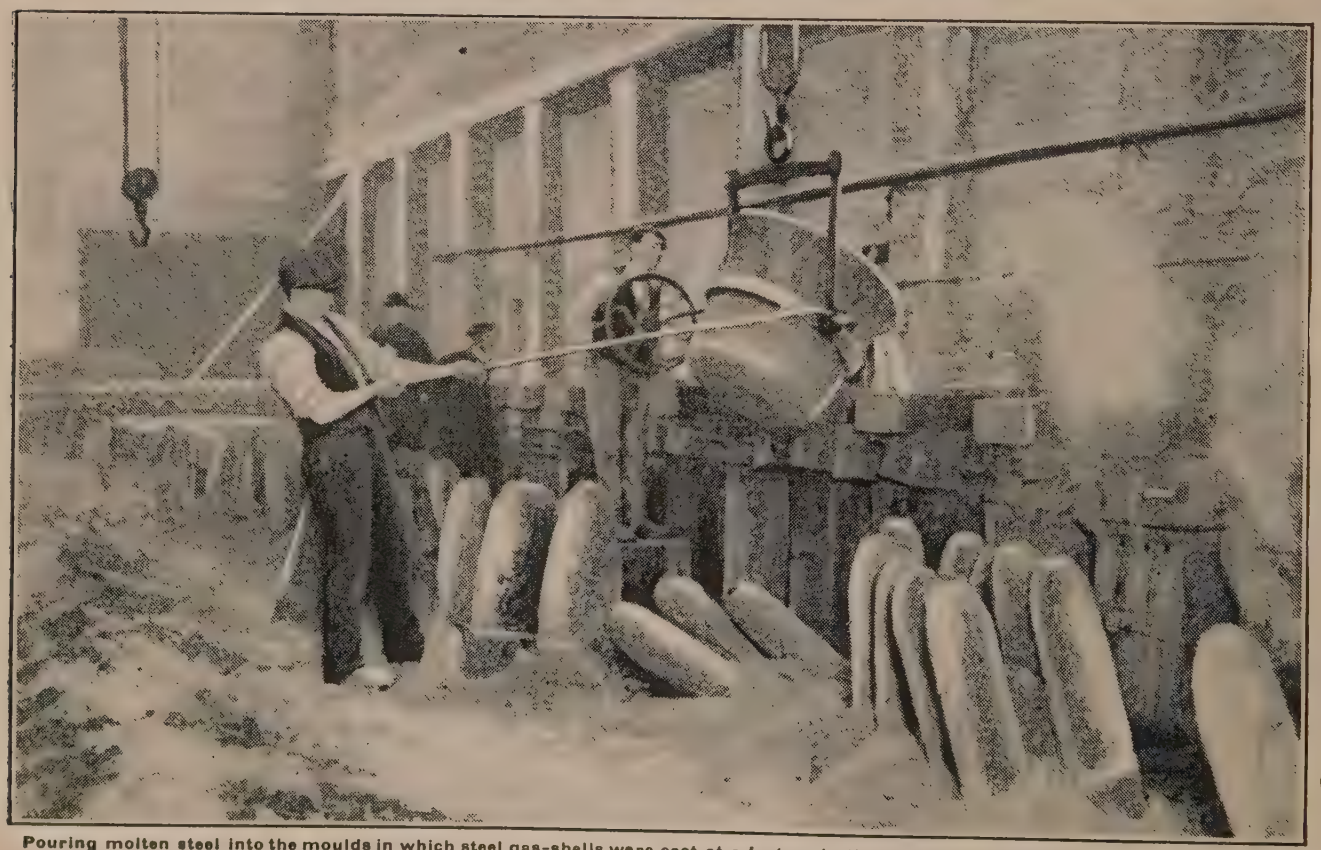
They spent some time in Cammell Laird's shipbuilding yard at Birkenhead, where several of the workmen were presented to them. With these they conversed, giving close attention to some and the reward of their genuine amusement (right) to others. Centre: At Liverpool they visited munition works, and one girl was made happy by the King stopping at her bench and asking her questions about her work.

At the Town Hall, Manchester, the King presented medals to wounded soldiers, and (right) in another place a chain-works claimed and filled their Majesties' attention. Throughout the tour the enthusiasm of the operatives was remarkable, and war work generally was undoubtedly "speeded up" by the Royal "personal touch."

England's Great Effort in Making Munitions

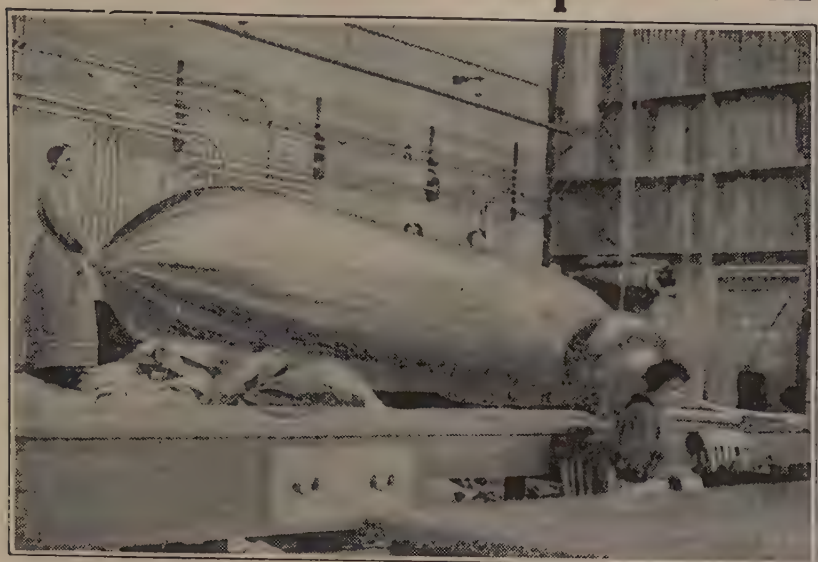


Annealing copper driving-bands at the Birmingham National Shell Factory, established by the Board of Management of the Birmingham and District Munitions Committee. Right: Running down brass scrap to free it from foreign matter at Messrs. Elkington's Works, one of four hundred firms in the district which were devoting their whole energy to the production of war material.



Pouring molten steel into the moulds in which steel gas-shells were cast at a factory in the North-West of England. In pre-war days this particular factory was fitted with machinery for cotton-spinning, but it was entirely transformed and the existing machinery adapted for the making of shells, hand grenades, and other munitions of war.

Builders of the Ships for the Fleet that Flies



In the skin shop: Making experiments with the gold-beaters' skin employed for the lining of rigid airships.

A girl at the stamping machine in the civilian engineering shop making aero-engine parts.

Female propeller-workers testing the propellers on a specially designed apparatus in the inspection-room to ascertain whether the balance is true.

Women employed in airship construction sewing envelopes in the fabric shop of a Royal Naval Airship station, to the purring of numberless sewing machines. Right: An acetylene worker in the wire-rigging shop wearing goggles to protect the eyes from the intense white light and heat.

Ministering Women Whom Men Held in Honour

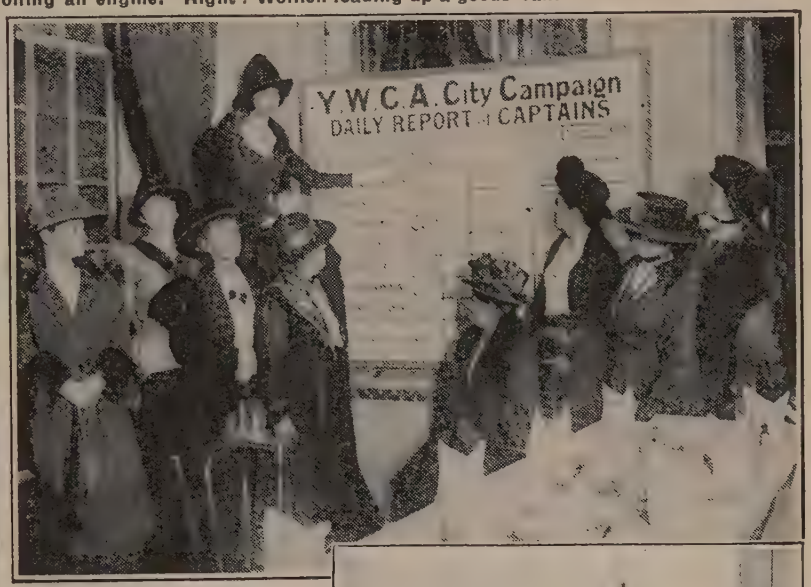
Lady Haig visiting wounded soldiers at the Cardigan House Club, Richmond. Right: Sir Ian Hamilton inspecting nurses at Walthamstow when opening a memorial at Church Hill to Walthamstow men killed in the war.

Miss Toupe Lowther, niece of the Speaker of the House of Commons, being decorated with the Croix de Guerre for service with her ambulance section, which was attached to a famous French division.

Wives of American soldiers and sailors waiting in the Grand Central Palace, New York, where a bureau was opened to supply them with help and news of their menfolk oversea. Inset: Statue of Edith Cavell at Norwich, unveiled by Queen Alexandra, October 12th, 1918.

Vignettes of Women's Varied War Work

Women workers employed in the machine shops of the Erie Railroad, in Jersey City. Left: One of the workers is seen cleaning and, in the middle, another is oiling an engine. Right: Women loading up a goods van.



Coal for the fifth floor. Women delivering coal at a Paris flat. Right: The Duchess of Marlborough at a "Team Luncheon" during the City Campaign for the Y.W.C.A. War-Time Appeal; she is marking the scores reached by the different teams.

Baroness de T'Serclaes (right) and Miss Chisholm attending to a wounded soldier in the "Cellar House of Pervyse," behind the Belgian lines, where they had carried on their work since Nov., 1914. Right: Portuguese fisher girls carrying shells aboard ship at Lisbon.

Women's War Energy Expressed in Many Manners

Company of the U.S. Women's Motor Corps who journeyed from New York to take part in the Montreal Fair in aid of French war sufferers. Right: General Plumer decorating British nurses for their heroism at a bombed hospital behind the western front.

French girls at a big British western front boot repair depot, where 30,000 pairs of our soldiers' boots were renovated weekly.

College girls gathering in the English flax harvest; and (inset above) allocation of quarters to some of the new arrivals at one of the flax camps. About three thousand girls and women from the universities and colleges all over the kingdom devoted part of their vacation to harvesting the flax.

HOW THE BRITISH NAVY, MAINSTAY OF THE ALLIED ARMIES, CELEBRATED THE SIGNING OF THE ARMISTICE, NOVEMBER 11, 1918

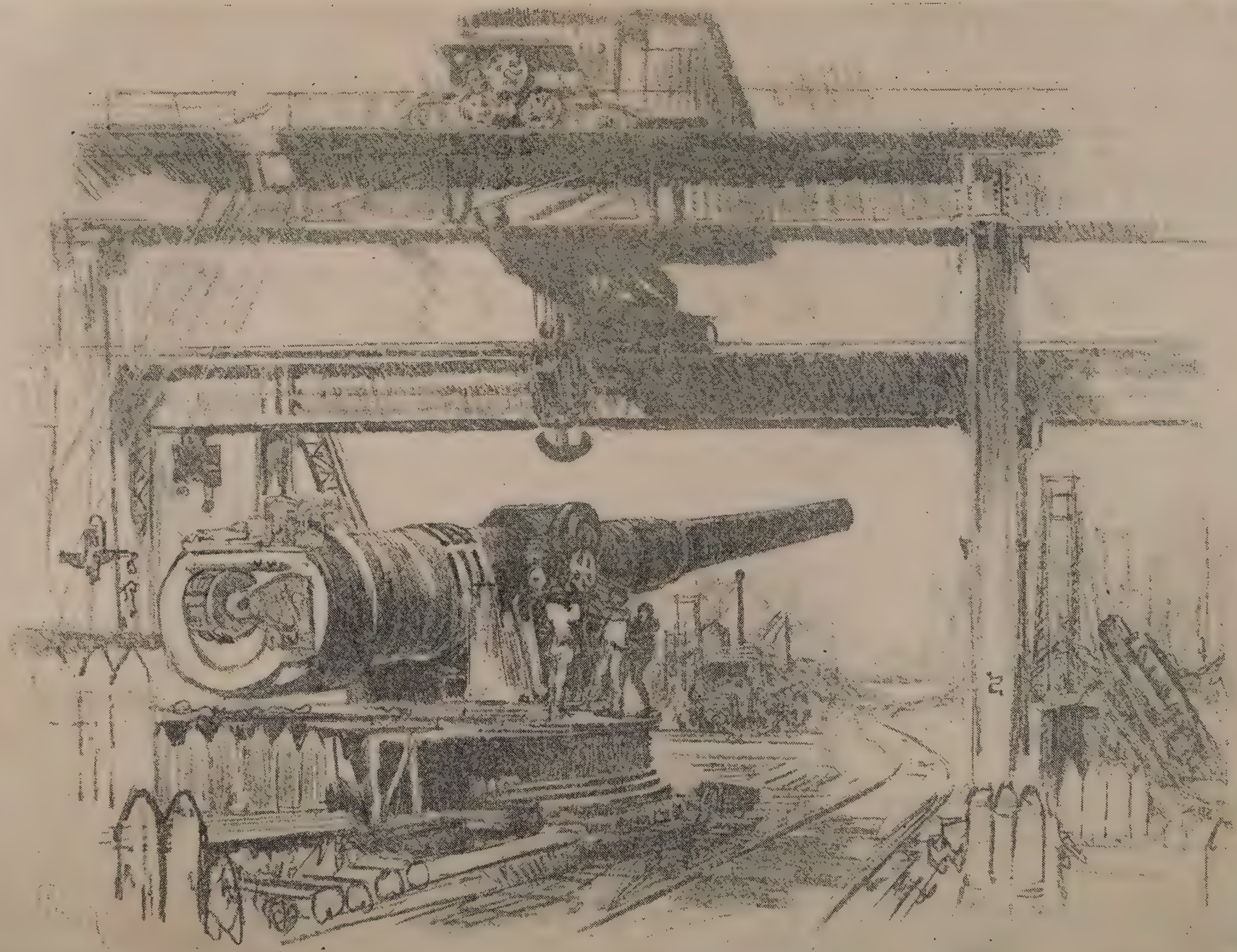
To face page 3539

Work of Women in Salvaging Waste of War

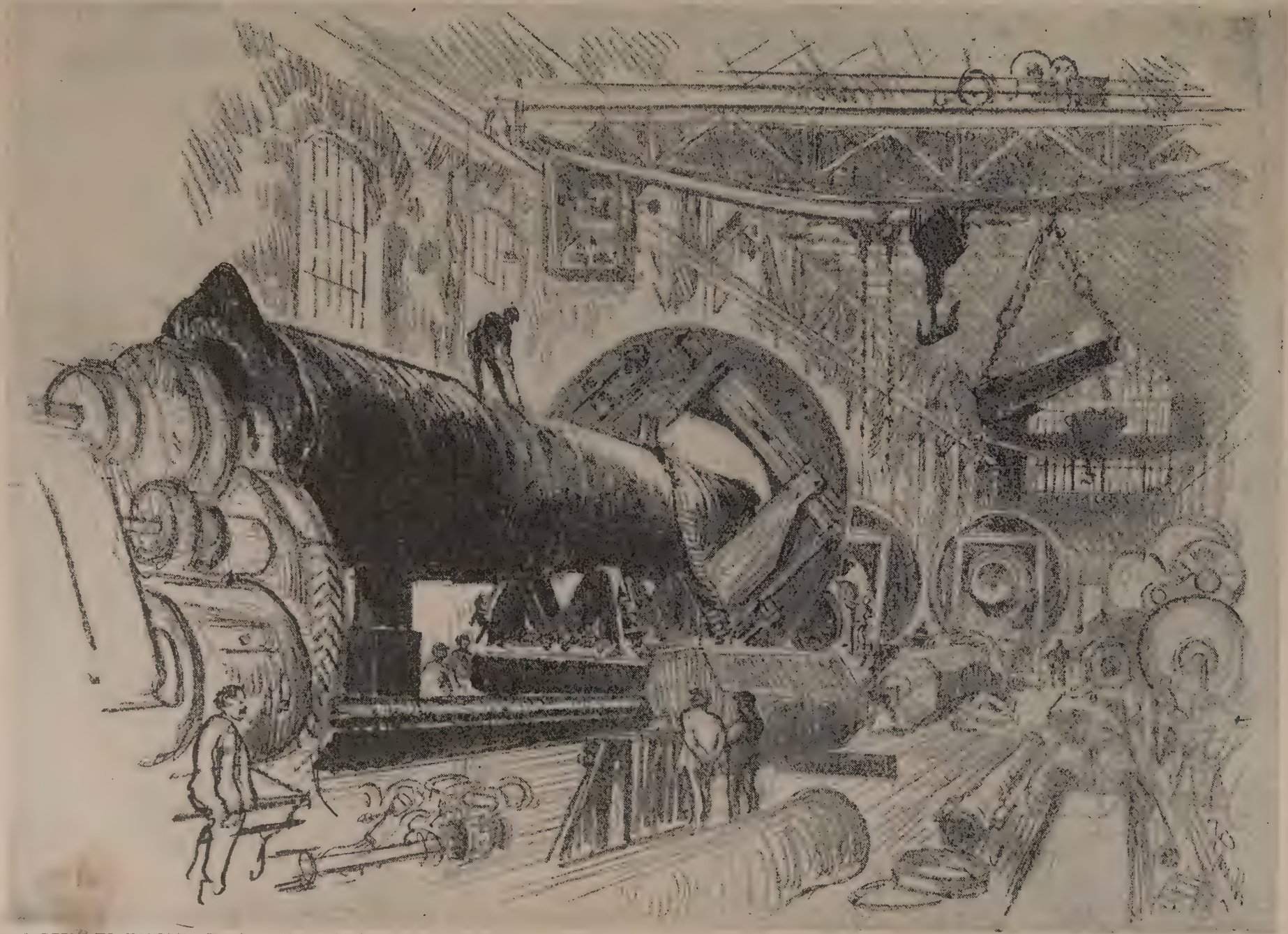
Women foresters clearing the bark off some of the straightest trees they have felled for telegraph poles. Left: Women unloading a barge.

Dump of shell-cases at a great salvage depot, where women and girls dealt with materials brought back from the battle-fronts.

Loading railway trucks with sorted out material at the great salvage depot, and (right) general view of a corner of the depot where the materials were sorted and repacked for distribution to manufacturing centres, where they were again utilised in the making of munitions. In circle: Carrying weighty cases.



ALMOST READY FOR ACTIVE SERVICE.—Testing a big gun. One of Mr. Joseph Pennell's wonderfully graphic transcripts from the huge war workshops of Great Britain, of which another example is given on the opposite page. Some scores of Government factories and 4,585 controlled establishments worked 24 hours a day 365 days in the year.



A REPLY TO KRUPP'S.—Turning a big gun in a British ordnance factory. Another of Mr. Pennell's impressions of work in the huge arsenals that turned out mammoth guns, trench howitzers, and machine-guns innumerable for the destruction of Prussian militarism. The gifted artist made these drawings under the direct auspices of the Ministry of Munitions.

Our Soldiers' Christmas Links with Little Folks

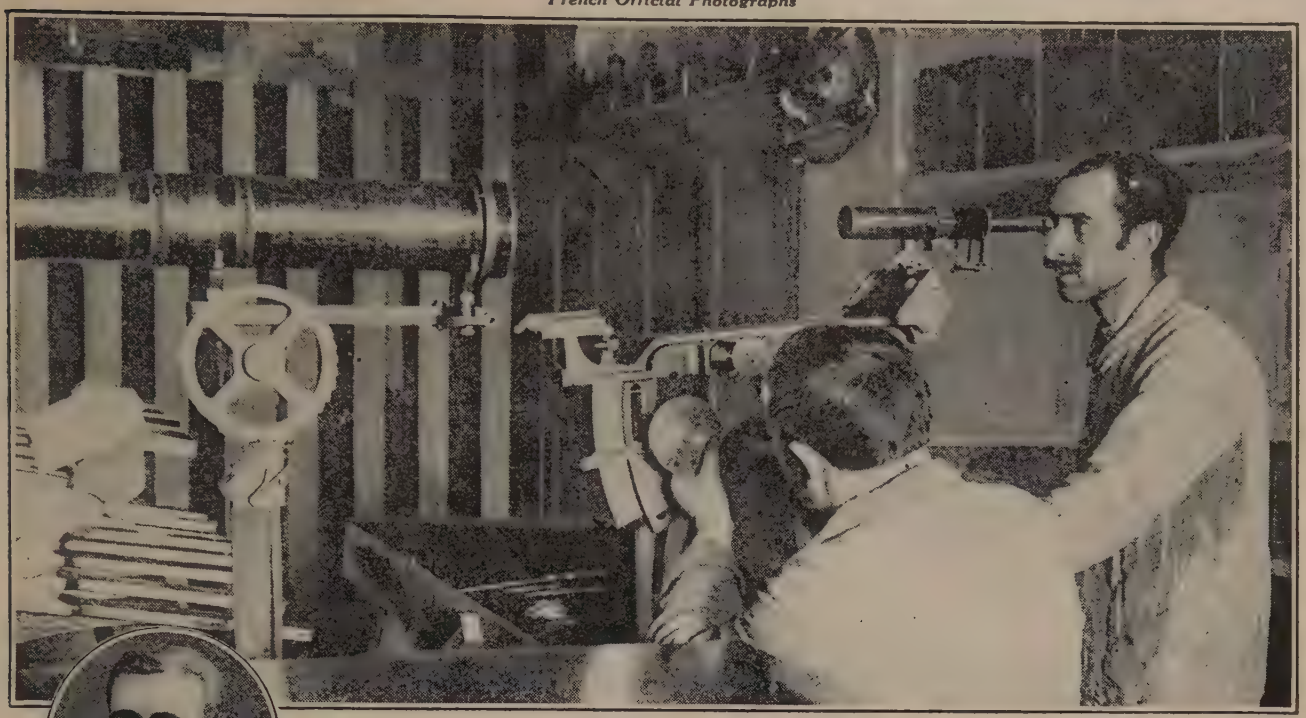
"What are you fighting for ?" asks Mr. Feeblewit. "For this!" replies the sturdy British soldier, knowing that on the issue depended the fate of the future represented by the young.

Finishing touches. A British soldier who found delight in spending off-time in his dug-out at the front in carving wooden animals for the baby at home in "Blighty."

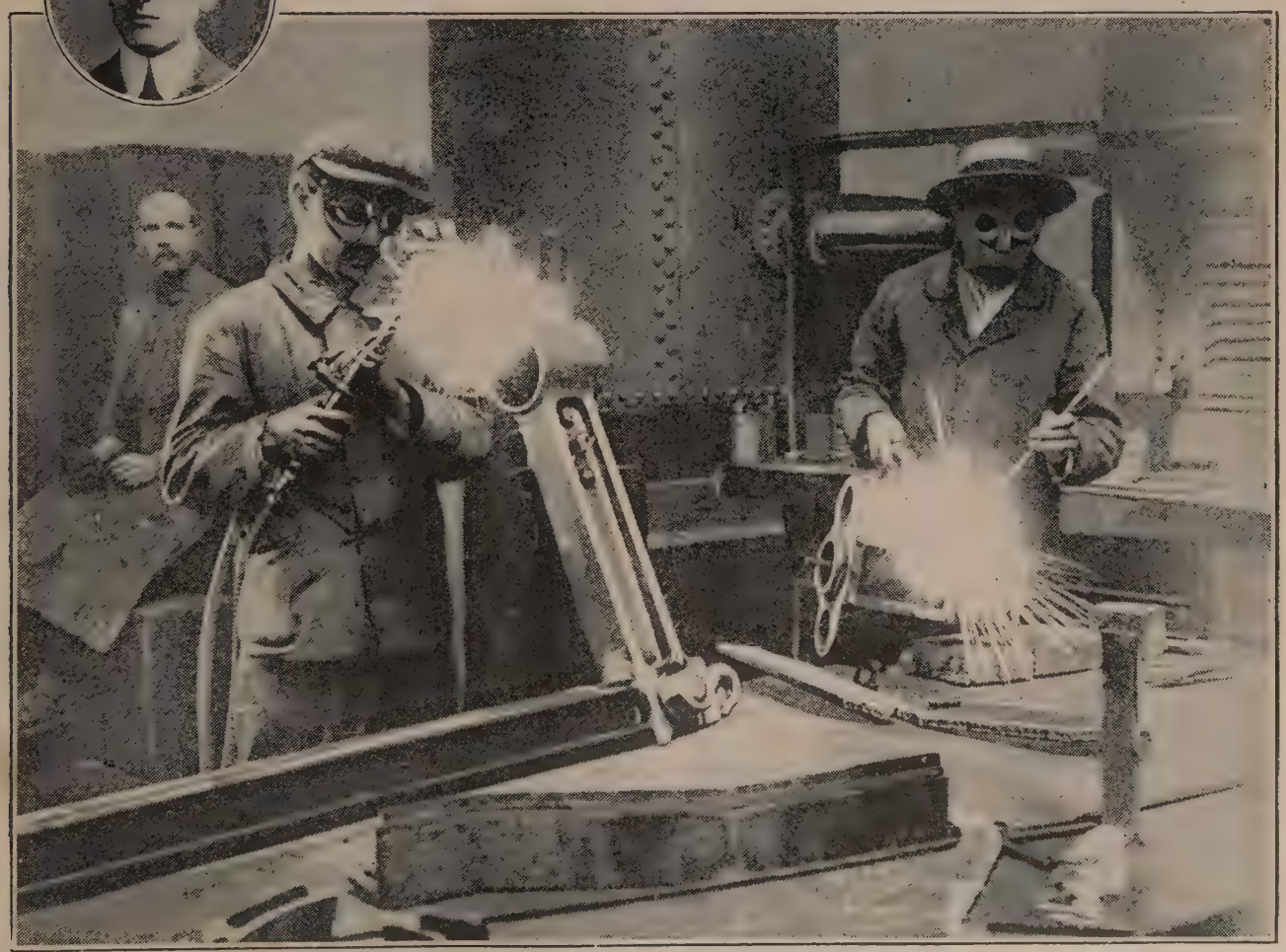
Home for Christmas from the Grand Fleet. A sailor who has had the good luck to obtain "Christmas leave" is met by his delighted youngsters on his homeward way through the village.

Skill and Heroism Helped to Win the War

French Official Photographs



Graduating instruments for the observation of aeroplanes. Inset: Andrea Angel, M.A., B.Sc., the heroic chemist who sacrificed his life while fighting the fire in London munition factory disaster, Jan. 19, 1917.



Munition workers in a French factory welding gun parts by heat process. The process generates intense light and heat from which sparks are thrown off, with the result that the workers have to wear special goggles to protect their sight from injury.

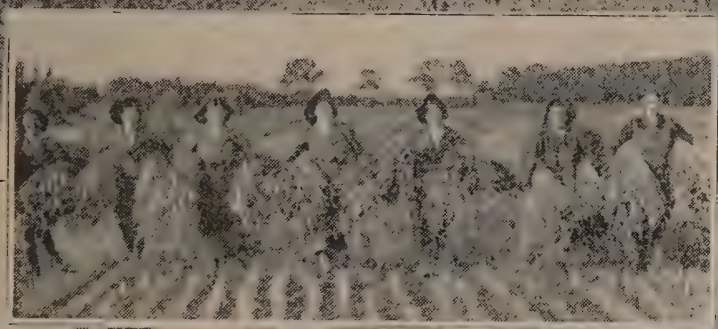
Empire Soldiers in Mimic Warfare at Aldershot

The King, Queen, and Duke of Connaught inspected a division of Canadians in training at Aldershot. From a hill-top they witnessed a sham attack with all the effects of a real battle—mines exploding and a barrage fire preceding the infantry advance.

In another part of the field the Canadian Royal Engineers gave an exhibition of pontoon bridge building, work in which both French and British regiments displayed such amazing skill and celerity on the first day of the Third Battle of Ypres.

Their Majesties watched the explosion of a huge mine in the valley at their feet. Even in the peaceful setting of the lovely Hampshire country, amid heather and trees unravaged by actual war, the effect of the tremendous upheaval was most awe-inspiring.

The Golden Harvest in Fields Immune from War



Gathering the harvest. An incidental duty of soldiers in training. Inset: Girl workers bringing in sheaves.

Women at work in the cornfields. Pupils who were studying farming at Colston Bassett, under the auspices of the Nottingham Education Committee. A large number of women showed great aptitude in farm work in the absence of men called to the Colours.

New Troops in Training in the Old Homeland

Battalion leaving a country town in England for a route march. Inset: Bayonet practice to acquire skill with the weapon which the enemy chiefly dreads.

Battalion returning to its quarters in England after a route march. There were few places where this spectacle had not become familiar, a thousand healthy lads swinging along the peaceful roads gathering power of endurance for the awful fatigues of active service.

Golden Deeds of Heroism

As in previous volumes, a section is included here devoted to recording the undying heroism of British soldiers, sailors, and airmen in their respective spheres. In the following pages are given the portraits of heroes whose gallant deeds won for them the various badges of honour, and in this gallery will be found representatives of many units and ranks.

NEWS OF BATTLE FROM THE FIRING-LINE.—Arrival at a company headquarters on the western front of a "runner" with a message. Invaluable was the work done by the runners entrusted with messages from the firing-line, and many heroic deeds have been recorded of men who, though mortally wounded, have yet "got through," and have only collapsed on their task being achieved.

Heroes & Heroines Honoured for War Services

SKIPPER T. CRISP, V.C., D.S.C., R.N.R., of the smack Nelson, was awarded the Victoria Cross posthumously for having fought an enemy submarine to the last. Mortally wounded, he ordered the confidential books to be thrown overboard, and his last words, "I'm done; throw me overboard," were spoken to his son, who was at the tiller, acting as second hand. To this gallant son, whose portrait also appears below, the D.C.M. was awarded.

Miss Ella Trout, a Devonshire girl, while fishing off Start Point, saw a steamer being attacked, and although a heavy sea was running, she rowed out against the storm in a small boat to the wreck and "saved life endangered by hostile action."

Sapper E. T. Averill, R.E., was awarded the Military Medal for laying a telephone wire and, after it was cut, bringing back a message by hand. He was also presented with a parchment certificate for gallant conduct and devotion to duty.

Nurse Daisy Coles, V.A.D., well known in Edinburgh as a golf and hockey player, and Miss Nellie Spindler, formerly a nurse at Leeds Infirmary, were both killed in France by German air bombardment of the hospitals where they were nursing the wounded.

Second-Lieutenant Hugh Colvin, Cheshire Regiment, was awarded the V.C. for entering a dug-out alone and capturing fourteen prisoners. He cleared other dug-outs, and captured a machine-gun and fifty prisoners.

Private A. Fairweather, Cambridgeshire Regiment, killed in action, was awarded the Military Medal for conspicuous bravery during the capture of Schwaben Redoubt, and was again recommended in the Battle of St. Julien.

Driver W. G. Huggett, of the British Red Cross Motor Ambulance Convoy with the French Army at Verdun, was awarded the Croix de Guerre for courage, coolness, and devotion to duty while evacuating wounded along roads under constant heavy bombardment.

Private Walter Kerr, Cheshire Regiment, joined the Army in 1914 and fought in Gallipoli, where he was wounded. He went to France in 1916, and was awarded the Military Medal for gallantry at Westhoek Ridge in 1917.

Bombardier H. J. King, R.F.A., went to France with the original British Expeditionary Force, and was in all the heavy fighting from Mons to the Aisne. He was awarded the D.C.M. for great gallantry in saving a gun under heavy fire at Audencourt, August 26th, 1914, and thus was one of the first winners of the decoration in the Great War.

Sec.-Lieut. M. S. S. MOORE, V.C., Hampshire Regt.

Skipper T. CRISP, V.C., D.S.C., R.N.R. Killed.

Mr. T. CRISP, D.C.M., R.N.R.

Capt. GORDON CAMPBELL, V.C., D.S.O. (two bars), R.N.

Sec.-Lt. HUGH COLVIN, V.C., Cheshire Regt.

Capt. REYNOLDS, V.C., M.C., Royal Scots.

Sergt. J. OCKENDEN, V.C., Royal Dublin Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lieut. F. BIRKS, V.C., Australian Imp. Force. Killed.

Sergt. A. J. KNIGHT, V.C., London Regt.

Maj. O. M. LEARMOUTH, V.C., Canadian Inf. Killed.

Miss ELLA TROUT. Saved life off Start Point, Devonshire.

Pte. A. FAIRWEATHER, M.M., Cambridgeshire Regt. Killed.

Sapper E. T. AVERILL, M.M., R.E.

Miss DAISY COLES, V.A.D. Killed while nursing abroad.

Miss NELLIE SPINDLER, Killed while nursing abroad.

Driver W. G. HUGGETT, M.A. Convoy. Croix de Guerre.

Pte. W. KERR, M.M., Cheshire Regt.

Bombdr. H. J. KING, D.C.M., R.F.A.

Decorated for Deeds of Great Heroism

Sec.-Lt. J. S. DUNVILLE, V.C.,
Late Dragoons. For heroism in charge of wire-demolishing, when he was mortally wounded.

Sec.-Lt. J. M. CRAIG, V.C.,
Royal Scots Fus. For conspicuous bravery in leading a rescue-party.

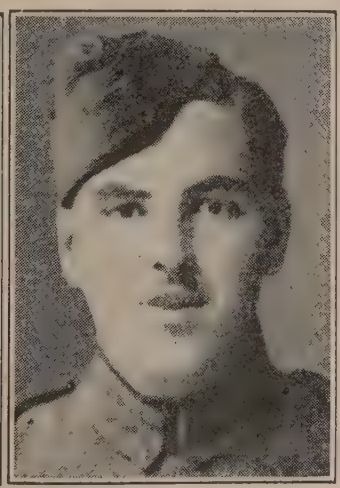
Capt. R. C. GRIEVE, V.C.,
Aust. Inf. Single-handed put out of action two enemy machine-guns holding up an advance.

Sec.-Lt. F. B. WEARNE, V.C.,
Essex Regt. By his daring threw back a heavy counter-attack in which he was fatally wounded.

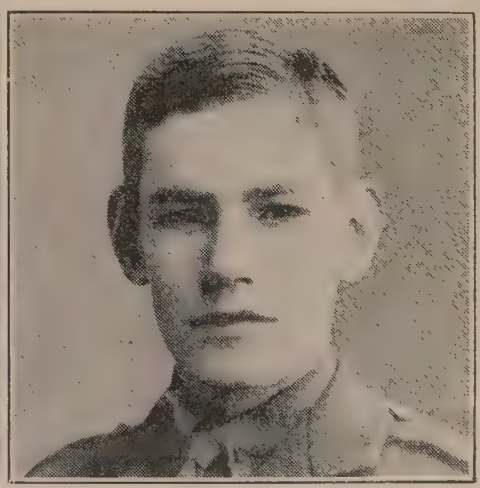
Sub-Lt. R. LECKIE, D.S.C.,
R.N.A.S. For destroying Zeppelin L22 off the East Coast May 14, 1917.

Sec.-Lieut. F. YOUENS, V.C.,
Durham L.I. Saved many lives, but lost his own picking up and throwing away enemy bombs.

Pte. W. RATCLIFFE, V.C.,
S. Lancs Regt. Single-handed rushed an enemy machine-gun and brought it into action.



Sergt. S. ASHBY, M.M.,
R.F.C. For conspicuous gallantry in the destruction of Zeppelin 48.



Sec.-Lt. T. H. B. MAUFE, V.C.,
R.G.A. Unaided repaired telephone wire and extinguished fire in an ammunition dump.

Valour Crowned With the Victoria Cross

CAPTAIN (ACTING LIEUTENANT-COLONEL) JAMES FORBES-ROBERTSON, V.C., D.S.O., M.C., Border Regiment, by quick judgment, resource, untiring energy, and magnificent example on four separate occasions, saved the line from breaking and averted a situation which might have had serious and far-reaching consequences. He had two horses shot under him, and was thrown five times, but continued fighting on foot, fearlessly exposing himself under heavy fire while collecting parties and organising and encouraging the men.

Major (Acting Lieutenant-Colonel) Oliver Cyril Spencer Watson, V.C., D.S.O. (Reserve of Officers), late King's Own Yorkshire Light Infantry, organised and led his men under intense rifle and machine-gun fire. Outnumbered, he ordered his men to retire, facing almost certain death by so doing. He "held his life as nothing," and was killed while covering the withdrawal.

Acting Lieutenant-Colonel William Herbert Anderson, V.C., Highland Light Infantry, displayed most conspicuous bravery in gallantly leading a counter-attack, capturing twelve machine-guns and seventy prisoners, and restoring a line endangered by the enemy's assaults. "He died fighting within the enemy's lines, setting a magnificent example to all who were privileged to serve under him."

Lieutenant Alan Jerrard, V.C., R.A.F. (formerly South Staffordshire Regiment), when on an offensive patrol with two other officers, attacked five enemy aeroplanes and shot one down in flames, following it down within a hundred feet of the ground. He then attacked an enemy aerodrome from a height of only fifty feet, and single-handed engaged nineteen machines.

Second-Lieutenant John Crawfurd Buchan, V.C., Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders, insisted on remaining with his men, although he had been wounded early in the day. When practically surrounded, he collected his men to fight the way back to the support line. Called upon to surrender by the enemy who were rushing on him, he replied, "To hell with surrender!" shot the foremost man and, repelling the advance, got back to the support line where he held out till dusk. Troops being unexpectedly withdrawn on the left flank, Lieutenant Buchan was cut off and was last seen holding out against overwhelming odds.

Private Jack Thomas Counter, V.C., King's Liverpool Regiment, displayed most conspicuous gallantry and devotion to duty. He obtained vital information as to the numbers and position of the enemy, who had effected a lodgment in our front line. He went out under terrific fire, after seeing five runners killed in the attempt, and subsequently carried five messages across the open under heavy artillery barrage. His "extraordinary courage in facing almost certain death because he knew that it was vital that the message should be carried, produced a most excellent impression on his young and untried companions."

Actg. Lt.-Col. J. S. COLLINGS-WELLS, late Bedford Regt.

Temp. Lt.-Col. C. BUSHELL, R.W. Surrey Regt.

Capt. J. FORBES-ROBERTSON, Border Regt.

Actg. Lt-Col. F. C. ROBERTS, Worcester Regt.

Actg. Lt.-Col. O. C. S. WATSON, late K.O.Y.L.I.

Actg. Capt. R. F. J. HAYWARD, late Wilts Regt.

Capt. A. M. TOYE, Middlesex Regt.

Major W. H. ANDERSON, Highland Light Infantry.

Actg. Capt. T. T. PRYCE, Grenadier Guards.

Lieut. A. JERRARD, R.A.F.

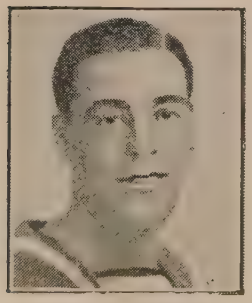
Sec.-Lt. B. M. CASSIDY, late Lancs Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lt. J. C. BUCHAN, A. & S. Highlanders.

Sergt. H. JACKSON, East Yorks Regt.

Sergt. T. E. KENDLE, D.C.L.I.

Pte. J. T. COUNTER, King's Liverpool Regt.


Seaman J. H. CARLESS, R.N.

Pte. H. G. COLUMBINE, late M.G.C.

Pte. R. G. MASTERS, A.S.C.

Pte. J. CUNNINGHAM, E. Yorks Regt.

Pte. HAROLD WHITFIELD, K.O. Shropshire L.I.

Portraits by Speaight, Elliott & Fry, Gale & Polden, Walter Barnett, and Bassano.

Crosses and Medals Conferred for High Courage

DRIVER ROBERT IRVING, D.C.M., Tank Corps, of Langholm, Dumfriesshire, has been awarded the Belgian Croix de Guerre for distinguished services in driving his Tank in the Belgian theatre of war. He was awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal for the gallant manner in which he drove his Tank at Cambrai.

Sergeant A. W. James was awarded the D.C.M. for bravery in the field in Belgium. The photograph reproduced on this page shows him being decorated by a brigadier-general of the Royal Artillery on the deck of the Tank Recruit in Union Square, New York, the gallant sergeant being the first British soldier to be thus decorated in America.

Company-Sergeant-Major C. A. Watson, of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry, has a proud record of military service, having been awarded the Military Cross, the Distinguished Conduct Medal, the Military Medal, and the Mons Star. He has been wounded on three separate occasions.

Private T. Thornley, Cheshire Regiment, was awarded the Military Medal for carrying and dressing wounded under very heavy shell and machine-gun fire for twenty-four hours without a break. The medal was presented to the gallant soldier by General Pitt Campbell, in the hospital where the recipient was recovering from the effects of amputation of both arms. Private Thornley, who in civil life was Assistant Superintendent for the Wesleyan and General Assurance Society, Crewe, is shown in the photograph on this page collecting letters from bed patients in a Northern military hospital. His tie is fashioned into a kind of pocket into which the letters are inserted, and this truly brave man has the pleasure of knowing that, despite his severe affliction, he is able to make himself useful to his comrades.

The Rev. Edward Victor Tanner, M.C., was awarded his cross for great gallantry and devotion to duty. When an aid-post was heavily shelled during an attack, and received two direct hits, his coolness and cheerfulness greatly helped to avert a panic. Later, he passed through a heavy barrage to bring in a wounded man.

The Rev. George Cecil Danvers earned the Military Cross by gallantly caring for the wounded, collecting and burying dead, and organising stretcher-parties under heavy fire. When bearers were not available owing to heavy casualties, he went forward through a heavy barrage to dress a man's wounds, thereby saving his life.

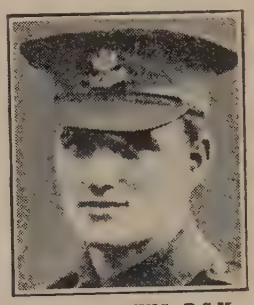
The Rev. George Armitage Chase, C.F., son of the Bishop of Ely, was awarded the Military Cross for conspicuous gallantry and devotion in repeatedly exposing himself to heavy shell fire in order to bring in wounded. His example and cheerfulness had a most steadying effect on the men.

Lce.-Cpl. J. THOMAS, V.C., North Staffs Regt.

Sergt. C. BARRON, V.C., Canadian Infantry.

Pte. J. CARRELL, V.C., Australian Imperial Force.

Sergt. J. McAULAY, V.C., Scots Guards.

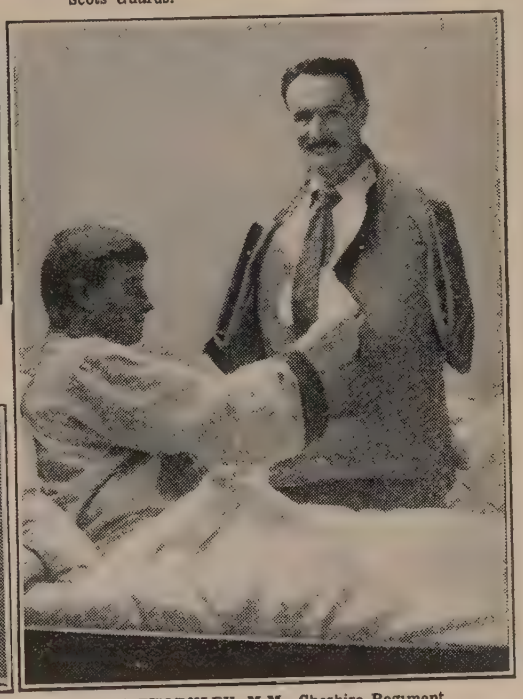


Driver R. IRVING, D.C.M., Tank Corps.

Sergt. A. W. JAMES, D.C.M. Canadian Artillery. (Being decorated in New York.)

Maj. Hon. R. M. P. PRESTON, D.S.O. and Bar, R.F.A.

C.-S.-M. C. A. WATSON, M.C., D.C.M., M.M., D.C.L.I.



Pte. T. THORNLEY, M.M., Cheshire Regiment. (Acting as ward postman.)

C.-S.-M. W. F. DACHTLER, D.C.M. London Regt.

Rev. E. V. TANNER, M.C., C.F.

Rev. G. C. DANVERS, M.C., C.F.

Rev. G. A. CHASE, M.C., C.F.

Sergt. A. H. WEBB, M.M., South Staffs Regiment.

Honour for Heroes Who Maintained the Tradition

PRIVATE JAMES DUFFY, Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, of Letterkenny, was awarded the Victoria Cross for most conspicuous bravery displayed while his company was holding a very exposed position. Private Duffy (a stretcher-bearer) and another stretcher-bearer went out to bring in a seriously wounded comrade; when the other stretcher-bearer was wounded he returned to get another man; when again going forward the relief stretcher-bearer was killed. Private Duffy then went forward alone, and under heavy fire succeeded in getting both wounded men under cover and attended to their injuries. His gallantry undoubtedly saved both men's lives, and he showed throughout an utter disregard of danger under very heavy fire.

L.-Dafadar Gobind Singh, V.C., Indian Cavalry, was awarded the Victoria Cross for most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in thrice volunteering to carry messages between the regiment and Brigade Headquarters, a distance of a mile and a half over open ground which was under the observation and heavy fire of the enemy. He succeeded each time in delivering his message, although on each occasion his horse was shot and he was compelled to finish his journey on foot.

Sister Mabel Jennings, A.R.R.C., T.F.N.S., was awarded the Military Medal for coolness and gallantry displayed in the performance of her duties when a casualty clearing-station was heavily shelled.

Lieutenant Kilroy Harris, D.S.O., M.C. and two bars, R.N.V.R., F.R.G.S., of New South Wales, a company commander in the Drake Battalion of the Royal Naval Division, is a well-known writer and traveller. He has made many notable overland journeys, his expeditions including an eight hundred mile ride on horseback from Sydney to Brisbane, a seventeen hundred mile cattle-driving trip, a two thousand mile drive in a one-horse sulky from Sydney to Adelaide and back, and another drive of more than two thousand miles from Sydney to Broken Hill and back. When elected to the Royal Geographical Society in 1912 he was only twenty-three years of age, and was the youngest Fellow of the Society.

Lieutenant-Commander Charles Fox was captain of H.M.S. Mary Rose. The destroyer was convoying merchantmen when, on October 17th, 1917, flashes of gun fire were sighted astern. Fox turned to investigate, and presently sighting three German light cruisers, closed to within a mile, under heavy fire; turning to bring his torpedo-tubes to bear, his ship was disabled by a salvo bursting in the engine-room. The captain came down from the bridge and cheered his men, working the only gun left in action, with repeated cries of "We're not done yet!" At last, unable to fire another shot, he destroyed his papers, ordered his crew to the boats, gave the gunner the order to sink the ship, and went down with her with the colours flying.

Capt. R. GEE, V.C., M.C., Royal Fusiliers.

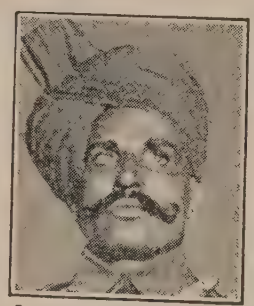
HONOURING THE MEMORY OF THE LATE MAJ.-GEN. O. G. GUNNING.
General Hill presenting the Insignia of the C.M.G. and D.S.O. to General Gunning's son.

Sergt. C. E. SPACKMAN, V.C., Border Regt.

Pte. J. DUFFY, V.C., Royal Inniskilling Fus.

Capt. O. C. BRYSON, R.F.C., Albert Medal.

Rev. B. WRIGHT, M.C., C.F.



L.-Dafadar GOBIND SINGH, V.C., Indian Cavalry.

Sister MABEL JENNINGS, M.M., A.R.R.C., T.F.N.S.

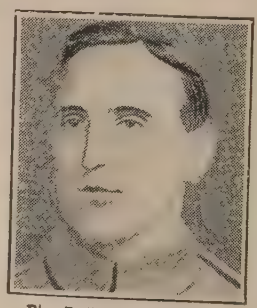
Cpl. C. W. TRAIN, V.C., London Regt.

P. O. PITCHER, V.C., D.S.M., R.N.

Lieut. E. B. HARRIES, M.C., Welsh Regt.

Cpl. FRANKLIN, D.C.M., R.A.M.C.

Lt.-Cmdr. C. FOX, R.N.



Pte. J. CURRAN, D.C.M., M.M., Royal Scots.

Lt. K. HARRIS, D.S.O., M.C., R.N.V.R.

Decorated for Conspicuous Courage & Devotion

SERGEANT JOHN McAULAY, V.C., D.C.M., Scots Guards, assumed command of his company when all the officers were casualties, and held and consolidated the position gained. Aided by two men only, he repelled with machine-guns a strong counter-attack, causing heavy casualties. He also carried his mortally wounded commander a long distance to a place of safety, being twice knocked down by concussion of bursting shells, and killing two of the enemy who tried to stop him on the way. Throughout the day this very gallant man displayed the highest courage, tactical skill, and coolness under exceptionally trying circumstances.

Commander Francis H. L. Lewin, R.N., has been awarded the Stanhope Gold Medal by the Royal Humane Society for a gallant action. One of H.M. ships struck a mine and sank in a few minutes. A trawler steamed over the spot, but when lowering her boat it was destroyed and broke adrift. Soon afterwards Commander Lewin drifted alongside with two men clinging to him, and calling to the trawler's crew to save the men first, he supported the second while the first was being got aboard. Eventually all three were rescued, greatly exhausted by thirty minutes' immersion in a heavy sea, in weather so cold that the trawler's deck was covered with ice.

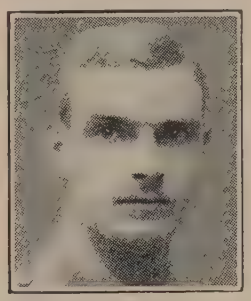
Major (Acting Lieutenant-Colonel) John Sherwood-Kelly, V.C., C.M.G., D.S.O., of the Norfolk Regiment, commanding a battalion of the Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, was awarded the Victoria Cross for conspicuous bravery and fearless leading. A party of men of another unit, detailed to cover the passage of a canal by his battalion, was held up on the near side of the canal by heavy fire directed on the bridge. He ordered covering fire and led his leading company across, and then reconnoitred the high ground held by the enemy. The left flank of his battalion was held up by wire while advancing against this high ground, so he crossed to that flank and led a Lewis-gun section into a position whence it could cover the advance of the battalion. It was mainly due to his gallantry that they were enabled to capture and hold the position.

Captain Walter Napleton Stone, V.C., Royal Fusiliers, posthumously awarded the cross, was in command of a company holding an advanced sap and trench near Bourlon Wood. On November 30th, 1917, a powerful enemy attack developed very rapidly, and Captain Stone sent three platoons back to the main line and himself remained with the rearguard to cover their retreat. The rearguard was seen fighting to the last with bomb, bullet, and bayonet, and there was no survivor. Captain Stone stood on the parapet with the telephone, under tremendous bombardment, observing the enemy, and his invaluable information and self-sacrifice with the rearguard saved the situation at the cost of his life.

Major G. R. PEARKES, V.C., M.C., Canadian Mtd. Rifles.

Capt. W. N. STONE, V.C., Royal Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lt. J. S. EMERSON, V.C., Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers.


Capt. J. F. RUSSELL, V.C., M.C., R.A.M.C., att. R.W. Fus.

Lt.-Col. J. SHERWOOD-KELLY, V.C., C.M.G., D.S.O., Norfolk R.

Rifleman A. E. SHEPHERD, V.C., K.R.R.C.

Lieut. S. T. D. WALLACE, V.C., R.F.A.

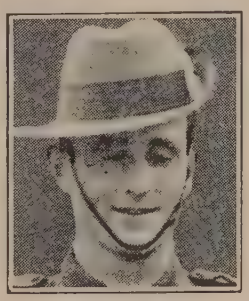
Sergt. J. McAULAY, V.C., D.C.M., Scots Guards.

Pte. C. J. KINROSS, V.C., Canadian Infantry.

Sergt. C. E. GOURLEY, V.C., M.M., R.F.A.

Capt. C. P. J. O'KELLY, V.C., M.C., Canadian Infantry.

Capt. A. M. LASCELLES, V.C., Durham L.I.


Sergt. J. DWYER, V.C., Australian M.G.C.

Pte. W. MILLS, V.C., Manchester Regt.

Lce.-Cpl. R. McBEATH, V.C., Seaforth Highlanders.

Rev. B. P. CLAYTON, M.C., C.F.

Capt. C. A. LAWRENCE, M.C., Bedfordshire Regt.

Comdr. F. H. L. LEWIN, R.N., Stanhope Gold Medal.

Rev. R. FRENCH, M.C., C.F.

Lce.-Cpl. B. GRIFFIN, D.C.M., Royal Fusiliers.

Valiant Men Rewarded With the Victoria Cross

LIEUTENANT JOHN BRILLANT, M.C., late Quebec Regiment, was awarded the Victoria Cross for the absolute fearlessness and extraordinary ability with which during two days, he led his company in an advance of twelve miles. Twice he rushed machine-guns holding up his men, personally killing seven of the enemy, and being chiefly instrumental in securing sixteen machine-guns and one hundred and fifty prisoners. Already wounded twice, he was leading a rush attack on a field-gun firing point-blank on his men when he was wounded a third time, and fell unconscious from exhaustion and loss of blood.

Corporal David Hunter, V.C., of Kingseat, Dunfermline, enlisted in the Highland Cyclist Battalion on the outbreak of war, and subsequently transferred to the Highland Light Infantry. He was awarded the Victoria Cross for the extraordinary heroism with which, with but six comrades, he beat off an encircling host of Germans for forty-eight hours at Mœuvres.

Sergeant Thomas James Harris, V.C., M.M., late Royal West Kent Regiment, was posthumously awarded the Victoria Cross for great courage and initiative during an advance of his battalion. Hostile machine-guns, hidden in crops and shell-holes, were impeding the advance, and Sergeant Harris led his section against one of these, capturing it and killing seven of the enemy. Twice he attacked two enemy machines single-handed, capturing the first and killing the crew, but losing his own life when attacking the second.

Private (Piper) James Richardson, V.C., late Manitoba Regiment, in the Battle of the Somme in 1916, obtained leave to play his company "over the top." Held up by very strong wire and under intense fire, the formation faltered, whereupon Piper Richardson strode up and down outside the wires playing his pipes with the greatest coolness. The effect was instantaneous. Inspired by his splendid example, the company rushed the wire and captured its objective. While taking back a wounded comrade and some prisoners, Richardson remembered that he had left his pipes behind, and went back for them. The Victoria Cross was awarded posthumously to the hero in October, 1918.

Lance-Sergeant Edward Smith, V.C., D.C.M., Lancashire Fusiliers, a Maryport lad, only nineteen years of age, personally took a machine-gun post, rushing the garrison with rifle and bayonet. In his rush he shot and killed at least six of the enemy. Later, another platoon requiring assistance, he took command of the situation and captured the objective. This gallant lad had only been ten months at the front, but in that short period had been promoted sergeant and won the D.C.M. and the V.C.

Capt. E. MYLES, V.C., D.S.O., Worcester Regt.

Lt. J. BRILLANT, V.C., M.C., late Quebec Regt.

Cpl. D. HUNTER, V.C., H.L.I.

Cpl. F. G. COPPINS, V.C., Manitoba Regt.

Lt. H. AUTEN, V.C., D.S.C., R.N.R.

Sgt. T. J. HARRIS, V.C., M.M., late R.W. Kent Regt.

Piper J. RICHARDSON, V.C., late Manitoba Regt.

Actg.-Sgt. H. J. COLLEY, V.C., M.M., late Lancs Fus.

Sec.-Lt. J. YOUELL, V.C., Northumberland Fusiliers.

Capt. J. E. WAIT, V.C., M.C., late Manitoba Regt.

Sgt. J. MEIKLE, V.C., M.M., late Seaforth Highlanders.

Sec.-Lt. A. McLEOD, V.C., R.A.F.

Art. Engr. B. S. JOHNSON, D.S.M., R.N.

Sgt. E. B. SMITH, V.C., D.C.M., Lancs Fus.

Actg.-Capt. H. KELLY, V.C., West Riding Regt.

Heroes Honoured for Valour and Devotion

SERGT. EDWARD COOPER, K.R.R.C., of Stockton, rushed a blockhouse and compelled forty-five Germans to surrender, with seven machine-guns.

Sergeant (Acting C.Q.M.S.) William Grimbaldeston, K.O.S.B., of Stockton, attacked a blockhouse and captured thirty-six prisoners, six machine-guns, and a trench-mortar.

Sergeant (Acting C.S.M.) John Skinner, K.O.S.B., of Pollokshields, cleared three blockhouses, taking sixty prisoners, three machine-guns, and two trench-mortars.

Lieutenant John Reginald Graham, Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders, attached M.G.C., though twice wounded, kept his guns in action till they were all disabled. Then, again wounded, he brought a Lewis gun into action until ammunition failed, when he retired, with a fourth wound. His valour held up a strong counter-attack.

Corporal (Lance-Sergt.) Tom Fletcher Mayson, Royal Lancaster Regiment, of Silecourt, Cumberland, put two enemy machine-guns out of action, killing and wounding thirteen men of the teams, and then held an isolated post till ordered to withdraw.

Sergeant Ivor Rees, South Wales Borderers, of Llanelly, rushed a machine-gun, bombed the concrete emplacement, and captured thirty prisoners and an undamaged machine-gun.

Private Arnold Loosemore, West Riding Regiment, of Sheffield, single-handed dragged his Lewis gun through partially cut wire, and himself killed twenty of the enemy. His gun was then blown up by a bomb, and he was rushed by three Germans, whom he shot with his revolver. Later he shot several snipers, and then, returning to his former position, brought a wounded comrade in under heavy fire.

Corporal Fred Phillips, late K.S.L.I., won the Military Medal for mending telephone wires under fire at Ypres in the summer of 1916. He died of pneumonia in a military hospital at Shrewsbury in January, 1917.

Temporary Lieutenant (now Captain) Frederic Scott, Leicestershire Regiment, was awarded the Military Cross for conspicuous gallantry during an attack. Badly shaken by a bursting shell, he collected thirty men and dug himself in in an advanced position, which he held for a day and a night under heavy fire. He was wounded, but refused attention until he had withdrawn his party.

Lance-Corporal F. W. Medley, R.A.M.C., was awarded the D.C.M. and promoted sergeant for great devotion to duty and courage at Zillebeke on June 7th, 1917, when, with power of organisation and resource beyond all praise, he rendered invaluable assistance in evacuating the wounded under heavy shell fire.

Sergt. EDWARD COOPER, V.C., K.R.R.C.

Sgt. W. H. GRIMBALDESTON, V.C., K.O.S.B.

Sergt. J. SKINNER, V.C., K.O.S.B.

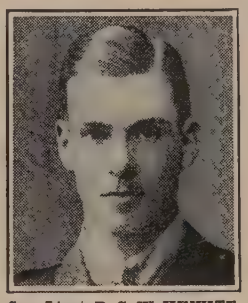
Lt. JOHN R. GRAHAM, V.C., A. & S. Highrs., att. M.G.C.

Cpl. TOM MAYSON, V.C., Royal Lancaster Regt.

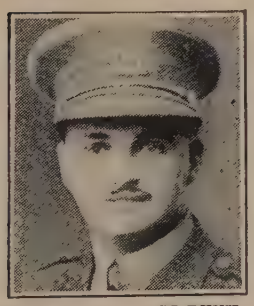
Sergt. IVOR REES, V.C., South Wales Borderers.

Pte. ARNOLD LOOSEMORE, V.C., West Riding Regt.

Lce.-Cpl. W. V. COOPER, D.C.M., Irish Guards.


Sec.-Lieut. D. G. W. HEWITT, V.C., late Hampshire Regt.

Pte. WILFRID EDWARDS, V.C., K.O.Y.L.I.


Tem. Lt.-Cl. B. BEST-DUNKLEY, V.C., late Lancs. Fus.

Sergt. ALEX. EDWARDS, V.C., Seaforth Highrs.

Capt. A. C. HANCOCK, R.A.M.C., Triple Military Cross.

Pte. G. McINTOSH, V.C., Gordon Highlanders.

Pte. THOMAS BARRATT, V.C., late South Staffs. Regt.

Cpl. FRED PHILLIPS, M.M., late K.S.L.I.

Lieut. FRED. SCOTT, M.C., Leicestershire Regt.

Lce.-Cpl. F. W. MEDLEY, D.C.M., R.A.M.C.

Lieut. W. M. STREIFF, M.C., R.E.

Capt. C. J. D. BROWNE, M.C., R.G.A.

Honoured as the Bravest Amongst the Brave

PRIVATE MICHAEL O'ROURKE, V.C., Canadian Infantry, for three days and nights worked unceasingly as a stretcher-bearer, bringing in wounded from an area subjected to severe shelling and machine-gun fire, dressing them and getting them food and water. "He showed throughout an absolute disregard for his own safety, going wherever there were wounded to succour, and his magnificent courage and devotion in continuing his rescue work, in spite of exhaustion and the incessant heavy enemy fire of every de cription, inspired all ranks and undoubtedly saved many lives."

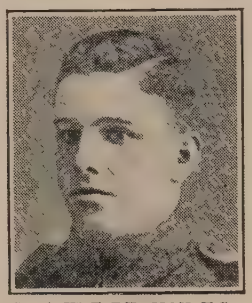
Sergeant William Francis Burman, V.C., Rifle Brigade, when the advance of his company in an attack was held up by a machine-gun firing at point-blank range, ran forward alone, killed the gunner, and carried the gun to his company's objective, where he used it with great effect, thus assuring the success of the advance. Later he charged forty Germans who were enfilading a neighbouring battalion, killed six of them, and captured thirty-one others.

Lance-Corporal Harold Mugford, V.C., Machine-Gun Corps, got his gun into a very forward position, where he dealt effectively with the enemy massing for a counter-attack. Though badly wounded, he occupied and secured a further new position, and remained with his gun, setting an example of most conspicuous courage.

Dr. Elsie Inglis, Commissioner of the London Units of the Scottish Women's Hospitals, of which she was the originator, died at Newcastle-on-Tyne, November 26th, 1917, immediately after bringing her unit in safety back from Archangel. Daughter of John Forbes David Inglis, I.C.S., Chief Commissioner at Lucknow, she was educated in Paris and Edinburgh, where she received her medical training. She went to Serbia in April, 1915, and rendered devoted service during the typhus scourge. She was taken prisoner with her staff at Krushevatz, and after suffering much hardship was released and sent home. Later she went to Dobruja, and accompanied the Rumanian retreat with the Southern Slav Division, with which she remained until her return from Russia. The Crown Prince of Serbia conferred upon her the Order of the White Eagle. She was the only woman who has received this honour.

Sister Dorothy A. Laughton, M.M., Territorial Force Nursing Service, is a daughter of the late Sir John Laughton, and had been nursing in France for three years. She was in charge of a casualty clearing-station which was severely bombed by the Germans, and for her great courage and devotion was awarded the Military Medal, which was conferred upon her by the King in person. Sister Dorothy Laughton had previously been mentioned in despatches.

Sergt. J. MOLYNEUX, V.C., Royal Fusiliers.


Sergt. W. F. BURMAN, V.C., Rifle Brigade.

Pte. CHARLES MELVIN, V.C., R. Highrs. (Black Watch).

L.-Col. H. MUGFORD, V.C., Machine Gun Corps.

Pte. F. G. DUNCOX, V.C., Worcestershire Regt.

Dr. ELSIE INGLIS, Scottish Women's Hospitals.

Left to right: Pte. M. J. O'ROURKE, V.C., Canadian Infantry; Sergt. J. OCKENDEN, V.C., Royal Dublin Fusiliers; Pte. W. H. BUTLER, V.C., West Yorkshire Regt.; Cpl. E. A. EGERTON, V.C., Sherwood Foresters.

Sister DOROTHY LAUGHTON, M.M., T.F. Nursing Service.

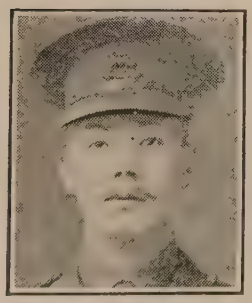
L.-Cpl. W. H. HEWITT, V.C., South African Infantry.

Sergt. JOSEPH LISTER, V.C., Lancashire Fusiliers.

Pte. ALBERT HALTON, V.C., K.O.R. Lancashire Regt.

Pte. ARTHUR HUTT, V.C., Royal Warwickshire Regt.

Cpl. FILIP KONOWAL, V.C., Canadian Infantry.


Capt. J. W. HART, M.C. and Bar, R.W. Surrey Regt.

Coy.-S.-M. ROBERT HANNA, V.C., Vancouver Regt.

Cpl. E. SHOTTER, M.M. and Bar, R.G.A. Killed.

Cpl. R. FOWLER, D.C.M., Border Regt.

Capt. J. F. McG. SLOAN, M.C. and Bar, R.A.M.C.

Decorated for Deeds of Gallantry and Devotion

TEMPORARY CAPTAIN PHILIP FLETCHER FULLARD, D.S.O., M.C. (and Bar), son of the late Mr. T. F. Fullard, of Hatfield, joined the Inns of Court O.T.C. in 1915. He joined the Royal Flying Corps, and after acting for some time as instructor, went to France in April, 1917. In six months' flying he brought down forty-two enemy aeroplanes and three balloons, his record for a single day being four aeroplanes.

Captain James Thomas Byford McCudden, M.C., was born in 1895, son of the late Mr. W. H. McCudden, warrant officer in the Royal Engineers. He went to France with the original British Expeditionary Force as an air mechanic, and having had some experience in the air, was pressed into service at Mons as an observer, and was one of the small reconnaissance party that gave information of the enemy's movements which led to the historic fighting retreat. Officially promoted observer, he won the Military Medal and the Croix de Guerre in the first year of the war as a non-commissioned officer. Since becoming pilot in charge of a single-seater scout, he brought down thirty-seven enemy machines.

Acting-Corporal John Collins, Royal Welsh Fusiliers, was awarded the Victoria Cross for a magnificent exhibition of initiative and fearlessness. When his battalion, after deployment, was lying out in the open and suffering many casualties, he repeatedly went out and brought wounded back. Later, he made himself conspicuous in rallying his command, led the final assault over uncut wire in the face of heavy fire at close range, bayoneted fifteen of the enemy, and with a Lewis gun pressed on beyond the objective and covered the consolidation of the position, although himself isolated and under fire.

Company-Sergeant-Major Frank Dickinson, Manchester Regiment, was awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal for great gallantry on the western front during October, 1917. With a Lewis gunner he had taken a "pill-box," when the enemy, seeing that there were only the two of them there, demanded their surrender. Dickinson shot two of them with a rifle, and with his comrade remained out for forty-four hours until relief came.

Corporal Leo Phillipson, Machine Gun Corps, awarded the Military Medal for gallantry and devotion at Messines Ridge, enlisted in the Highland Light Infantry in August, 1914, and after service in Gallipoli, where he was wounded, transferred to the Machine Gun Corps, and served in France.

Temp. Capt. P. F. FULLARD, D.S.O., M.C. and Bar, R.F.C.

Fl.-Lt. JOHN ALCOCK, D.S.C., R.N.A.S.

Actg.-Cpl. J. HAMILTON, V.C., Highland Light Inf.

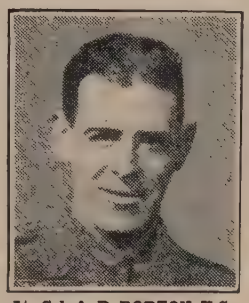
Capt. B. McCUDDEN, M.C., R.F.C.

Capt. H. F. B. SHARP, M.C. and Bar, R.F.A.

Cpl. W. CLAMP, V.C., York Regt. Killed.

Actg.-Cpl. JOHN COLLINS, V.C., Royal Welsh Fus.

Sergt. F. GREAVES, V.C., Sherwood Foresters.


Lt.-Col. A. D. BORTON, V.C., D.S.O., London Regt.

Major A. M. LAFONE, V.C., Yeomanry. Killed.

Lt.-Col. F. HALL, D.S.O., R.F.A., M.P.

Capt. WEDGWOOD BENN, D.S.O., Croix de Guerre, M.P.

Capt. E. SMITH, M.C., Durham Light Inf.

Capt. R. A. DENCH, M.C. and Bar, Leinster Regt.

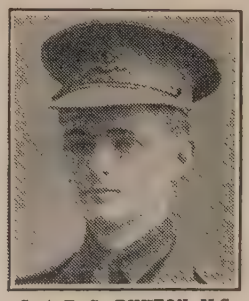
C.-S.-M. F. DICKINSON, D.C.M., Manchester Regt.

Sergt.-Major G. TOLLY, D.C.M. and Bar, W. Yks. Rgt.

Cpl. L. PHILLIPSON, M.M., M.G.C.

Sergt. G. S. DOIG, M.M., D.C.M., Black Watch.

Capt. G. C. A. COX, M.C., Leicester Regt.


Capt. B. G. BUXTON, M.C. and Bar, W. Riding Regt.

Portraits by Lafayette, Chancellor, and Bassano.

Decorations Won by Daring and Devotion to Duty

Seaman W. WILLIAMS, V.C., Royal Naval Reserve. Selected by his comrades of one of H.M. ships to receive the V.C.

Lce.-Cpl. J. WELCH, V.C., Royal Berkshire Regt. Armed with empty revolver, captured four prisoners.

Maj. T. W. McDOWELL, V.C., Canadian Inf. Captured 2 machine-guns, 2 officers, & 75 men, and held position gained.

C.S.M. E. BROOKS, V.C., Oxford & Bucks L.I. Alone captured a machine-gun and turned it on the enemy.

Brig.-Gen. F. LUMSDEN, V.C., D.S.O. (two bars). In face of severe fire successfully brought in six enemy field-guns.

Cpl. G. J. HOWELL, V.C., M.M., Australian Inf. Single-handed attacked out-flanking enemy with bombs & bayonet.

Cpl. E. FOSTER, V.C., East Surrey Regt. Re-captured a lost Lewis gun and two enemy machine-guns.

Sergt. J. W. WHITTLE, V.C., D.C.M., Australian Inf. Alone bombed and captured an enfilading machine-gun.

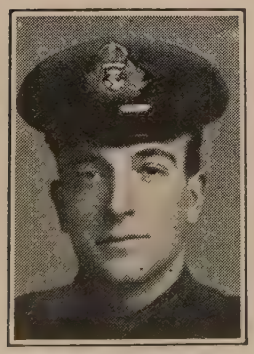
Sgt. C. G. EDMUNDSON, M.M., King's (Liverpool Regt.). Rewarded for distinguished work during the Battle of Arras.

Pte. J. READITT, V.C., South Lancashire Regt. Acted on own initiative, enabling battalion to maintain its position.

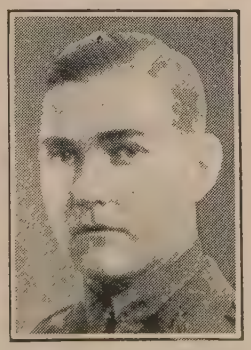
Pte. T. DRESSER, V.C., Yorkshire Regt. Twice wounded on the way, succeeded in getting message to front line.

Pte. F. BREAR, M.M., King's Own (Royal Lancaster Regt.). Killed in action, after two years of service.

Sergt. C. W. CARTLIDGE, D.C.M., M.M., Yorkshire Regt. Though wounded, successfully led a raiding operation.



Lt.-Cdr. W. STERNDALE BENNETT, D.S.O., R.N.V.R. Bar to D.S.O. for conspicuous gallantry and devotion.



Capt. R. H. M. S. SAUNDBY, M.C., Royal Warwicks and R.F.C. Decorated for attacking and destroying an airship.

Sgt. A. E. BLACKER, D.C.M., Gordon Highlanders. Promoted to Sergeant and awarded the D.C.M. on the field.

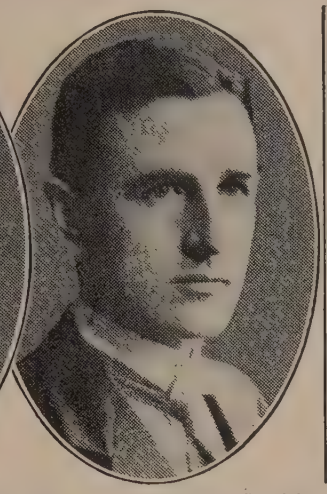
Lce.-Cpl. J. TODMAN, M.M., Royal Sussex Regt. Complimented by the General and awarded the M.M.

Capt. P. B. CUDDON, M.C., Hampshire Regt. For repeated conspicuous gallantry and devotion to duty.

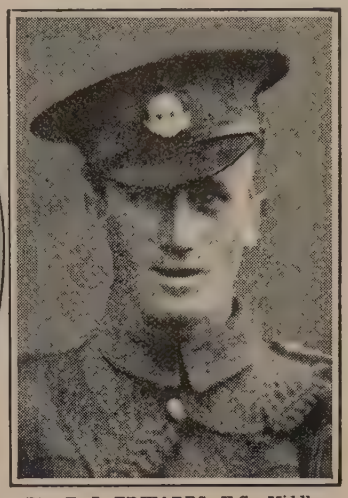
Heroes of the Season Awarded the Coveted Cross

Temp.-Sec.-Lt. T. E. ADLAM, V.C., Bedfordshire Regt. Twice wounded, led successful attacks on a village which had to be carried at all costs, and enabled the operations to develop.

Sergt. R. DOWNIE, V.C., R. Dublin Fus. All his officers being casualties, he reorganised the checked attack, and shouting "Come on, the Dubs!" rushed an important position.



Sergt. J. Y. TURNBULL, V.C., Highland L.I. Killed. This "very gallant soldier" took and almost single-handed maintained a position in face of continuous counter-attacks.



Pte. F. J. EDWARDS, V.C., Middlesex Regt. Dashed out alone and bombed out a machine-gun that held up the advance, thus staying confusion and saving a dangerous situation.

Capt. W. M. WACE, M.C., Bedfordshire Regt. An attack being stayed by machine-guns, he led bombers into the position and won part of it, though most of his men became casualties.

Capt. J. BRINDLEY, D.S.O., East Yorkshire Regt. Though wounded, he continued to advance with great gallantry and devotion, and captured sixty-one prisoners.

Sergt. F. COCKSEDGE, Norfolk Regt. Military Medal for bravery in the field. Now only twenty-two years of age, he has been in France since the beginning of the war.

Sec.-Lt. B. W. T. WICKHAM, M.C., South Staffs Regt. Attacked while wiring in No Man's Land and wounded, held his ground till reinforcements came and drove away the enemy.

Pte. ROBERT RYDER, V.C., Middlesex Regt. Dashed absolutely alone at the enemy's trench and cleared it by skilful use of his Lewis gun, turning possible failure into success.

Lt. (Temp. Lt.-Col.) R. B. BRADFORD, V.C., M.C., Durham L.I. By conspicuous bravery and good leadership of two battalions captured the objective and secured his flank.

Drummer E. F. HOOKER, Royal West Kent Regt. Awarded Serbian Distinguished Service Medal. He was a bandsman in the Salvation Army when he enlisted at the age of seventeen.

Cpl. J. HUTCHINSON, V.C., Lancashire Fusiliers. With supreme courage led attack on a trench, shot two sentries, and cleared two traverses, then covering removal of wounded.

Britain's Chosen Sons: More Heroes of the V.C.

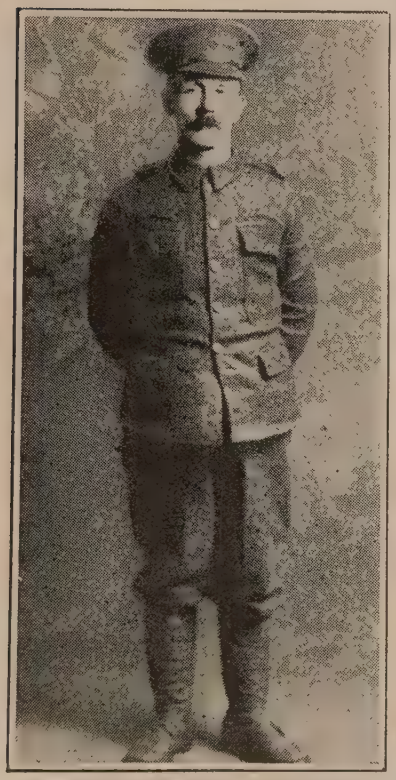
Acting-Sergt. JOHN ERSKINE, Scottish Rifles, T.F., won the V.C. for leaving a mine crater and rescuing his wounded officer, a sergeant, and a private under continuous fire.

Capt. L. W. B. REES, R.A., R.F.C., for gallantly dispersing ten aeroplanes.

Lieut. A. S. C. MACLAREN, R.F.C., won Military Cross. He swooped down on Fokkers and destroyed them.

Pte. G. W. CHAFER, East Yorks, awarded V.C. for initiative in taking an important message from a wounded man and carrying it along a heavily-shelled parapet.

Pte. G. STRINGER, Manchester Regt., won the V.C. for single-handed keeping the enemy off the flank of his battalion by a deft use of hand-grenades, thereby rendering possible a steady withdrawal.



Sapper W. HACKETT, V.C. With four men, he was entombed by a mine explosion. He helped three out, but stayed with the fourth and, the gallery collapsing, both perished.

Lieut. B. J. W. M. MOORE, R.F.C., won Military Cross for destroying two kite-balloons guarded by aircraft.

Lieut. R. B. B. JONES, L. N. Lancs, awarded V.C. for inspiriting his men when trapped in a captured mine crater.

Pte. A. H. PROCTOR, Liverpool Regt., won the V.C. for conspicuous bravery. In civil life he was a clerk and a Sunday-school worker at Birkenhead.

Decorated for Valour: More of Britain's Brave Sons

Pte. CHARLES HULL, V.C., 21st Lancers, saved an officer's life at great risk to his own, under close fire within a few yards of the enemy. The officer was Capt. G. E. D. Learoyd, whose horse had been shot.

Capt. CECIL PHILLIPS, the Welsh Regiment, awarded the Military Cross for bravery with a bombing party on Gallipoli. He won the decoration a few days after landing.

Sergt. H. J. WALLER, the Middlesex Regt., awarded the D.C.M. for his conspicuous bravery in continuing to throw bombs after he had been severely wounded at Loos.

Pte. H. CHRISTIAN, V.C., 2nd R. Lancaster Regt., held a mine crater with a few men in front of our trenches, and was forced to withdraw by German fire. He returned alone to rescue three men.

Sec.-Lieut. A. V. SMITH, 5th East Lancashire Regt. (T.F.), gained the Victoria Cross for a magnificent act of self-sacrifice that saved many lives. He was throwing a grenade when it slipped from his hand and fell to the bottom of the trench, close to several officers and men. He immediately shouted out a warning, but seeing that the officers and men were unable to get into cover, and knowing that the grenade was due to explode, he flung himself down on it, and was instantly killed.

Sergt. S. MAYNARD, 1st Border Regt., awarded the D.C.M. and the French Military Cross for conspicuous bravery at the Dardanelles. He was also mentioned in despatches.

Corpl. W. BARTLETT, 2nd Bedford Regt., awarded the D.C.M. for saving three wounded men by going out three times under heavy fire at Neuve Chapelle. Corpl. Bartlett was killed at Festubert.

Sec.-Lieut. J. K. W. TRUEMAN, 6th Wiltshire Regt., awarded the Military Cross for his bravery at Festubert. He held a perilous position until ordered to withdraw.

Sec.-Lieut. S. P. HANNAN, R.F.A., gained the Military Cross for his bravery when acting as forward observation officer. He sent valuable information to his battery, under heavy fire.

Winners of the V.C. in the Last Weeks of War

CAPTAIN (A.-LIEUTENANT-COLONEL) BERNARD WILLIAM VANN, V.C., M.C., late 1/8th Battalion, attached 1/6th Battalion Notts and Derby Regiment, was awarded the Victoria Cross for most conspicuous bravery and fine leadership during the attack at Bellenglise and Lehaucourt on September 29th, 1918. He led his battalion with great skill across the Canal du Nord through a thick fog, and the attack being held up above Bellenglise, rushed up to the firing-line and inspired the men to sweep forward. Later, he rushed a field-gun single-handed, and knocked out three of the detachment. The success of the day was largely due to Lieut.-Colonel Vann, who was killed four days later near Ramicourt.

Lieutenant (A.-Captain) Andrew Weatherby Beauchamp-Proctor, V.C., D.S.O., M.C., D.F.C., No. 84 Squadron, R.A.F., between August 8th and October 8th, 1918, proved himself victor in twenty-six decisive combats, destroying twelve enemy kite balloons and ten enemy aircraft, driving down four others out of control. In all he had conquered fifty-four foes up to that date. His work in attacking troops on the ground and in reconnaissance has been almost unsurpassed in brilliancy, and made an impression on those serving around him not likely to be forgotten.

Lieutenant Donald John Dean, V.C., 8th Battalion Royal West Kent Regiment, set a superb example of valour, leadership, and devotion to duty while holding an advance post established in a newly-captured trench north-west of Lens from September 24th to 26th. Five times in all, three times heavily, the post was attacked, but by supreme gallantry and devotion it was consolidated and invincibly defended.

Sergeant Horace Augustus Curtis, V.C., 2nd Battalion Royal Dublin Fusiliers, displayed most conspicuous bravery east of Le Cateau on October 18th, 1918. Realising that the attack would fail unless the enemy guns were silenced he rushed through our own barrage and the enemy fire and killed and wounded the teams of two of the guns, whereupon the remaining four sur rendered. Then, turning his attention to a trainload of reinforcements, he captured over a hundred of the enemy before his comrades joined him.

Private Alfred Wilkinson, 1/5th Battalion Manchester Regiment, of Leigh, showed conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty on October 20th, 1918, during the attack on Marou, when four runners in succession having been killed in an endeavour to deliver a message to the supporting company, he volunteered for the task. He succeeded in delivering the message, though the journey involved exposure to extremely heavy machine-gun and shell fire for six hundred yards.

Lt.-Col. B. W. VANN, V.C., Notts & Derby R.

Cpt. A.W. BEAUCHAMP-PROCTOR, V.C., R.A.F.

Maj. W. G. BARKER, V.C., R.A.F.

Capt. J. MacGREGOR, V.C., Cent. Ont. Regt.

Lt. D. J. DEAN, V.C., R.W. Kent Regt.

Sec.-Lt. J. F. HUFFAM, V.C., West Riding Regt.

Sec.-Lt. F. E. YOUNG, V.C., Herts Regt.

Lt. J. C. BARRETT, V.C., Leicester Regt.

Lt. D. S. McGREGOR, V.C., R. Scots & M.G.C.

Lt. G. F. KERR, V.C., Cent. Ont. Regt.

Lt. M. F. GREGG, V.C., R. Can. Regt., N. Scot. R.

Sgt. W. H. JOHNSON, V.C., Notts & Derby.

Lce.-Cpl. W. H. COLTMAN, V.C., N. Staffs R.

Sergt. J. B. DAKYNS, V.C., York & Lanc. R.

Sergt. H. A. CURTIS, V.C., Royal Dublin Fus.

Lce.-Sergt. H. B. WOOD, V.C., Scots Guards.

Sergt. L. McGUFFIE, V.C., K.O.S.B.

Pte. F. LESTER, V.C., Lancs Fusiliers.

Pte. T. W. HOLMES, V.C., Canadian Mtd. Rif.

Pte. A. WILKINSON, V.C., Manchester Regt.

Dvr. H. DALZIEL, V.C., A.I.F.

Sapper A. ARCHIBALD, V.C., R.E.

Pte. J. TOWERS, V.C., Scottish Rifles.

Pte. W. WOOD, V.C., North'd. Fusiliers.

Records of the Regiments

In this section is concluded the thrilling narrative of the record of the splendid regiments which were conspicuous for their share in the victory. Adequately to describe all these would require a volume, but the writer has, within the space at his disposal, given a useful and picturesque outline of the collective heroism and sterling services of the men who won the war.

"Cease Fire!" 11 a.m., November 11th, 1918.

RECORDS OF REGIMENTS IN THE WAR—XLVII.

WELLINGTON BATTALION, N.Z.

GREAT DEEDS EAST AND WEST

THE magnificent physique of the New Zealanders is a thing which strikes every visitor who sees them at the front. All the corps in our great armies contain men of remarkable strength and stamina, men with huge frames, hardened and broadened by the activity and discipline of the soldier's life; but even among such the New Zealanders stand out. And, what is more to the point, their mighty bodies are fitted with mighty hearts.

Egypt, Gallipoli, Egypt, France; August days and nights on Chunuk Bair, where heat and thirst, shells and stenches, fire and pestilence were enough to break the heart and destroy the reason of the strongest; the waves of assault, in spite of all that the cunning and devilry of German scientists could devise, closing remorselessly in upon Pozières. A single article cannot pretend to deal with this great story; it must be confined to one part of it—this time the deeds of the Wellington Battalion.

With the other New Zealanders the Wellingtons were sent, in the late autumn of 1914, to Egypt, and in December they went into camp at Heliopolis. They saw a little fighting early in 1915, when the Turks made an attack on the Suez Canal, and a little later were despatched to take part in the forthcoming attack on Gallipoli.

On April 25th the New Zealanders got ashore with very slight losses at Gaba Tepe, and, when General Birdwood's men had dug some sort of protection, they found themselves on the extreme left.

Achi Baba and Chunuk Bair

The key of the Gallipoli Peninsula, so it was thought, was the hill called Achi Baba, and a big attack on this was arranged for the beginning of May. To share in it, the Wellingtons and the other New Zealanders were put into boats at Gaba Tepe, and sent in trawlers to the end of the Peninsula. There they landed, and were soon in position as reserves to the 88th Brigade of British Infantry, the Wellingtons, under Lieut.-Colonel W. G. Malone, being on the left.

On May 8th they received the order to advance, their object being to carry forward our front line, which was then about four hundred yards from where the Wellingtons were. With their Maori cry of "Ake! Ake!" they charged through a storm of Turkish bullets, reached the trenches wherein were the survivors of the 88th, and carried these on with them in another forward rush. They reached and entered one Turkish trench, killed its inhabitants, and passed beyond it, while to support them up there came further lines of men. They won about seven hundred yards of rugged and broken ground towards the summit of Achi Baba, and having won it they threw up their trenches and held it.

The next big enterprise of the Wellingtons in Gallipoli was their share in the attack on Chunuk Bair on August 7th. Under General Johnston, they were in one wing, the right, of the assaulting troops. In spite of the terrible heat, they made good progress during the morning; they followed the dry bed of a little stream almost to its source, swept across the ridge called Rhododendron, and then, some other troops not being yet in position, were halted for the day. The men were not idle, however. They had to defend themselves when necessary, and their officers proceeded to make arrangements for renewing the attack on the morrow.

That morrow, August 8th, 1915, saw one of the dramatic episodes of the war. The assault on Chunuk Bair was renewed, and after a tremendous struggle the New Zealanders were on the summit of the coveted hill. For a moment, but, alas! for a moment only, the campaign in Gallipoli was successful. Looking across the Peninsula, the New Zealanders saw the waters of the Dardanelles only a few miles away. They were in possession of a spot which commanded the way to Constantinople. Had it been possible to bring up reinforcements and big guns, and with their aid to clear the Turks from the neighbouring heights, our men would have controlled the Peninsula from side to side, and the whole course of the war would have been altered. But it was not.

The Wellingtons will long remember their day in Chunuk Bair. They went into action seven hundred strong, but when they left the hill only fifty-three answered to their names, not ten per cent., their gallant colonel, Malone, being among the dead.

Battle of the Somme

Nearly a year later, in May, 1916, it was officially stated that the Australian and New Zealand troops had arrived in France, and had taken over a portion of the front. Among the latter were the Wellingtons, and such tried soldiers came most opportunely, for on July 1st the Battle of the Somme opened.

This great battle had raged for a full three weeks when the Wellingtons and the other Anzacs entered it. To strengthen the Fifth Army they were moved up from Armentières, where they had been busy damaging the Germans in front of them as much as possible; and on July 23rd another big attack was made.

Just in front of the Anzacs was Pozières, one of the most redoubtable of the village fortresses in the west, and this was not captured in a day. First of all they advanced and seized a sunken road; then, reserves having come up, there was another move, and some trenches were soon in their hands; finally, as far as this phase of the fight is concerned, they got to the main road to the village. Assault after assault was launched; some of them failed, but the Anzacs would not be denied. Inch by inch they won their way forward, and finally, on the 26th, after three days of the most terrible fighting in this most terrible war, the Anzacs were in Pozières.

At Pozières and Flers

Pozières being ours, arrangements were at once made for another advance, and on September 15th there was a further big attack. On this occasion the New Zealanders were sent against Flers, and with the aid of a "tank" they captured it with little difficulty. This being done, they fortified a new line beyond the village, which was probably the most vulnerable point of the new British front.

Anyhow, the Germans thought it vulnerable and, beginning at once, they assailed it again and again. In this fighting the Wellingtons distinguished themselves by making a further gain of ground. On the 16th they were sent forward against the trench from which the Germans had issued to make their first big counter-attack, and they took it. This trench in its turn was attacked by the enemy, but the Wellingtons stuck to it; for five days at close quarters bomb and bayonet did their deadly work, and then at last the Germans had had enough.

The Wellington Battalion has no long history behind it, but during the past three years it has been making a record which will surely live. The New Zealanders who volunteered at the outbreak of the Great War were enrolled as far as possible locally, and one of the centres of recruiting for North Island was obviously Wellington. It was equally obvious that one of the new battalions should bear that name, and so the Wellington Battalion came into existence.

Inspection of New Zealand O.T.C. on Salisbury Plain.

THE 1ST (ROYAL) DRAGOONS

AT YPRES AND LOOS

IN many ways, it cannot be denied, the airmen have taken the place of the cavalry. Like the horsemen of the past they go out to get information about the enemy's strength and dispositions; they precede the advancing infantry into battle, and it is by their vigilance that these are protected from sudden and unsuspected attack. But these facts, momentous as they are in the history of the art of war, must not cause us to forget the deeds done by the cavalry during the Great War, for, sometimes with their horses and sometimes without them, they have done their part in saving civilisation from its destroyer.

Among the stories of our cavalry regiments there are few which, for real interest, surpass that of the 1st Dragoons, called also the Royals. In 1914 to save Ostend, and if possible Antwerp, a division of cavalry was hastily sent across from Southampton to Belgium, and on October 8th this began to disembark. It was under Sir Julian Byng, and was attached to the army corps commanded by Sir Henry Rawlinson.

Arrived at Ostend the division had over a month's hard fighting, in which the men, with little or no experience of trench work, were exposed to every vagary of weather and to a persistent and concentrated shelling. Yet—mark these words—the general said that, with one exception, "No trench has been lost and no ground evacuated." On eight occasions the cavalry were sent in support of the line which had been partially penetrated, and on nearly every one of these its generals were thanked for, and congratulated on, the gallant behaviour of their men.

In Belgium

The first few days in Belgium were spent by the Royals and their comrades of the 6th Brigade in real cavalry work. They scouted across the country, seeking carefully for signs of the Germans, who were first met with on the 14th, and attempting also to join hands with the main British Army, then as now, "somewhere in France." They had the excitement, novel in those days, of helping to shoot down a Taube, of bringing in as prisoners some German stragglers, and, equally pleasant no doubt, the comfort of sleeping for once in billets—at Kemmel and then at Nieuwemolen.

On October 19th the regiment had its first fight, for advancing from St. Pieter it drove the enemy from two Belgian villages. But soon, to keep in touch with some French troops, General Makins ordered his regiments to fall back, and it was on the 21st, while they were at Zonnebeke, that they were sent up to support another cavalry division, which they did by holding two crossings of a canal near Hollebeke. All this, it should be remembered, was in the days when, like a flood, the Germans were sweeping over Belgium.

After a fight at Kruseik came a stubborn defence of our thin line at Hollebeke, and on the next day, the 31st, the Dragoons were dismounted and sent to help some infantrymen to clear the woods near Hooge of the Germans. With this experience to help them, they took over some trenches from an infantry brigade, duties which occupied them during a good part of November.

On November 17th the Dragoons had a worse experience. Our trenches were heavily shelled, and an attack was evidently impending. Indeed, this was practically certain, for an officer of the regiment, the Hon. Julian Grenfell, had been behind the German lines and had found out a good deal about it. It took the form of two infantry attacks, one at one o'clock in the afternoon and the other three hours later. The enemy almost reached the cavalry trenches, but was then beaten back everywhere with heavy losses. On this day Sergeant McClellan won the D.C.M. for gallant conduct; Private Moir, also of the Royals, had won it on October 30th; and Private Shaw on October 19th.

In Trench Warfare

A period of rest followed these exploits in defence of Ypres, and then a few months later came another struggle for the same end. In April, 1915, when the Second Battle of Ypres began, the Dragoons were inured to trench warfare, for they had passed a good part of the winter amid its discomforts, and so it was to no strange surroundings that they hurried on May 13th. A hurricane of shells had almost buried a regiment of their brigade, and it was to save the line that the Royals were sent forward. This they did, but in so doing they lost such valuable officers as Captains Lambert and Atkinson killed, and Lieut.-Colonel Steele and Captains Miles and Waterhouse wounded. In fact, they can have had but few officers left when that day was done. Colonel Steele, who had led the regiment with much ability all the time, died a little later from his wounds.

It was on this occasion, too, that the Royals lost an officer of quite extraordinary gifts. Julian Grenfell, already mentioned for skilful reconnaissance work, was so severely wounded that, on May 26th, he died in hospital. In every way he was a rich and fortunate man. He was Lord Desborough's heir; a few weeks before his death he had revealed himself as a poet of rare merit by those verses published in the "Times," called "Into Battle," and opening with the line: "The naked earth is warm with spring." At Eton and Oxford he had shown himself a fine classical scholar, and, most remarkable of all, he was a champion boxer, having, so it was said, knocked out two professional pugilists about the same time as his verses were written.

At the Battle of Loos

The Dragoons were also useful, although in a different way, at the Battle of Loos. At that time they did good work in obtaining information about the German movements; for instance, on September 28th, Lieutenant W. O. Berryman, with snipers on the watch all round him, carried out a difficult reconnaissance between Hill 70 and Chalk Pit Wood. On the previous day Lieutenant A. W. Wingate had been employed with equal success on a similar errand.

The 1st (Royal) Dragoons is, as its number suggests, one of the oldest of our cavalry regiments. It was raised in 1661 to do garrison duty in Tangier, then in danger from the Moors, and was known first as the Tangier Horse, receiving its present name after its return to England in 1684. As dragoons they fought in Spain and Germany against the French, and with the Scots Greys and the Royal Inniskillings they formed the Union Brigade which, at Waterloo, first rode down the French infantry and seized two of its eagles, and then, dashing on too far, had to retire with heavy loss. Fifty years later they rode in another famous charge, that of the Heavy Brigade at Balaclava, and they were in South Africa during the Boer War.

OFFICERS OF THE 1ST (ROYAL) DRAGOONS.—Back row (left to right): Lieut. G. D'A. Edwardes, Lieut. A. W. Waterhouse, Lieut. J. H. Leckie, Sec.-Lt. W. P. Browne, Lieut. G. H. L. F. Pitt-Rivers, Sec.-Lt. A. Burn, Lieut. V. P. Hutchinson (R.A.M C.). Middle row: Capt. R. Houstoun, Capt. P. E. Hardwick, Major B. E. P. Leighton, Lieut.-Col. G. F. Steele, Capt. T. P. Dorington, Capt. and Adjt. F. W. Wilson-Fitzgerald, Capt. H. Jump. Front row: Lieut. McC. Johnston (A.V.C.), Lieut. Hon. J. Sclater-Booth, Sec.-Lt. W. W. Wynn, Sec.-Lt. R. W. Henderson.

THE DURHAM LIGHT INFANTRY

FINE WORK IN FRANCE

By the end of September, 1917, the great allied attack from which so much was expected had been delivered. Up to a point it had succeeded; in some ways greater results had been secured than we then knew of, but the German retreat had not begun, and the enemy still held places which for two long years he had been fortifying with extraordinary ingenuity.

Bapaume, once a market-town about the size of Buckingham, was one of these, and evidently our generals came to the conclusion that to take this and similar strongholds a slow, methodical, step-by-step advance was, for the time being at least, less costly than a big attack. Five or six miles away from Bapaume was the old Abbey of Eaucourt, and to capture this would bring us a little nearer Bapaume.

The divisions holding our line at this part were one composed of Londoners, which need not concern us now, and the other of Northumbrian and Durham men. On October 1st the attack on the abbey, which the Germans had converted into a fortress, was delivered. The battalion which assailed it on the right came up against a nest of machine-guns, and the men were shot down in scores. The colonel was wounded, and there was serious danger of a reverse, for in these elaborately-planned assaults the failure of one unit often means the failure of all.

The Aisne and Flanders

In support of the battalion in question was one of the Durham Light Infantry, and its colonel, Roland B. Bradford, soon grasped the situation. He went forward to the front, brought up his own Durhams to strengthen the gaps there, and, when this was done, gave the word for the assault to be renewed. Renewed it was, and with such success that the buildings were not only captured, but, sometimes more difficult, they were held. In awarding the V.C. to Colonel Bradford, it was stated that his bravery and leadership "saved the situation on the right flank of his brigade and of the division."

Colonel Bradford belonged to one or other of the numerous battalions which the county of Durham has sent to the Great War. More than a year ago these had been numbered up to twenty-two, and by the summer of 1917 there were doubtless several more. But in the early months of the war the Durhams had only one battalion in the field, for of its two Regular ones the 1st remained in India.

The 2nd Durhams arrived at the front while the Battle of the Aisne was raging, and in September the brigade in which they were, the 16th, was ordered to relieve the 2nd, which had been fighting hard from the start. The change took place unmolested at night, but as soon as the new-comers had settled in the wretched trenches, which were dug on the slope of a hill, the Germans attacked them, and at one point gained their objective. This, however, could not be allowed. A counter-attack was arranged, and on the left of this the 2nd Durhams made their way, in spite of the bareness of the ground, for half a mile, and then got in among the enemy with their bayonets, and recovered the lost trenches. In this fight the Durhams lost heavily, and so they did on October 20th, exactly a month later, when they were in Flanders, fighting for the line of the River Lys.

In April, 1915, a division of Territorials from Yorkshire, Northumberland, and Durham left England for France. The days were critical, for the Germans had just begun to use gas, and by its aid were striving hard to break through to Calais. There was consequently no time to give these Territorials a further spell of training in France; instead, they were hurried to the front at once.

At Grafenstafel

Of the division's twelve battalions, the 8th Durhams were picked out as the most suitable to go first into the trenches. At Grafenstafel they took the place of some Canadian troops, and in the morning of April 25th they were assailed by a shower of shells which, when they burst, gave out a nauseating smell and reduced some men to sickness and insensibility. Behind the shells came the Germans, but for five hours in the afternoon two companies of these Durhams resisted them until, almost annihilated, they were withdrawn. In the confused fighting of those days other battalions of the Durhams took part. The 5th was near Fortuin, where Sergeant J. Coombe carried forward a machine-gun and some ammunition under heavy fire to his comrades. From the 26th to the 30th of the month a company of the 6th Battalion lost 45 men out of 120 while holding a trench under heavy fire when short of food and water, and without the appliances since provided for making trench warfare more tolerable.

To return for a moment to the Durham Regulars. In July the 2nd Battalion was near Hooge, where the Germans introduced a fresh weapon, liquid fire, into warfare. With its aid they rushed some of our front trenches, and it was ten days before all was ready for the counter-attack. The key of the position was the crater, a great hole produced by the explosion of a mine, and the Durhams were one of the two battalions which set out to storm it.

It was a race between the two, and the Durhams got there first. They rushed into the crater, with its maze of dug-outs and refuges of all kinds, and quickly put an end to the German resistance there. At one moment only was the position in danger. Owing to a misunderstanding some of our men were retiring, but thanks to the presence of mind of two young Durham officers they were recalled.

At Fontaine-les-Croiselles

And so it was, with one battalion or another, for three years of war. When on July 1st, 1916, the Battle of the Somme opened, Durham men were near Fricourt, where, surging forward to their stern task, many fell. Others, as already told, were at Eaucourt three months later, and on June 27th last the papers had a little about another worthy exploit. At midnight on the 25th some Durham men went silently "over the top," near a place called Fontaine-les-Croiselles. They were "out" for booty—a piece of rising ground, a fortified road, and some trenches adjacent—and although these were strongly defended, the onrush of the Durhams was so stern and sudden that they were easily taken and held.

The 68th Regiment of Foot, now the 1st Battalion of the Durham Light Infantry, was raised by a Lambton, a notable Durham name, when the Seven Years War broke out in 1756. It had been through several campaigns when it was sent to Spain. In the Crimean War the battalion was noted for gallantry at Inkerman, and its later services were in New Zealand and South Africa. The 2nd Battalion, the old 106th, was raised in 1826, and in 1856 served in Persia. In 1885 it was in Egypt, and it, too, was represented in the long struggle with the Boers.

OFFICERS OF THE DURHAM LIGHT INFANTRY.—Back row (left to right): Sec.-Lieut. S. Boys, Sec.-Lieut. E. A. Welsh, Sec.-Lieut. A. B. Brown, Sec.-Lieut. R. P. Dent, Sec.-Lieut. E. R. Manley, Lieut. R. Watson, Sec.-Lieut. E. A. Pike. Middle row: Sec.-Lieut. H. Walton, Sec.-Lieut. H. Tompson, Sec.-Lieut. J. B. Renton, Sec.-Lieut. R. M. Shepperd, Lieut. J. E. Stafford, Sec.-Lieut. F. W. Ord, Sec.-Lieut. W. Beeton. Front row: Capt. A. J. Raine, Captain A. B. Hare, Major J. A. S. Ritson, M.C., Lieut.-Col. C. Watson, V.D., Capt. and Adj. P. Challons, Capt. M. Storey, Capt. H. King.

THE WORCESTERS—(I)

"THE MEN WHO SAVED THE DAY"

By the courtesy of the Editor and the kindly interest of the readers of The War Album de Luxe, this series of articles, begun at the time of the Battle of Loos, has now reached its jubilee. Since the days when the Jews lived bounteously in Palestine the fiftieth occurrence of anything has been the occasion of a special celebration, and there is no reason why we here should forget this excellent custom.

In thinking the matter over, the question for the writer was to decide to which regiment he should give this place of honour. But in reality the question was decided for him. Writing within a few days of October 31st, 1917, at a time when the whole Empire was turning its thoughts back to that critical day, just three years ago, when the fate of civilisation trembled for one tremendous hour in the balance, he must select the Worcesters, "the men who saved the day."

Those who recall, as most of us do so vividly, the early days of the Great War, will remember the eagerness with which Sir John French's despatches were awaited, and when published devoured. Perhaps of them all, the fourth, dated November 20th, 1914, is the most interesting; it is real history, for it gives the Commander-in-Chief's considered account of the First Battle of Ypres.

The Crisis at Gheluvelt

About the middle of that despatch there is this sentence: "If any one unit can be singled out for especial praise, it is the Worcesters." Sir John—to give him the name he then bore—was referring to the events which took place on the early afternoon of Saturday, October 31st, "the most critical moment in the whole of this great battle." And evidence was produced later to show that his praise of the Worcesters was by no means exaggerated.

With excellent judgment, the Worcestershire County Council, in 1917, issued a description of this event: "The Battle of Gheluvelt: How the Worcesters Saved the Day." It was the 2nd Battalion of this regiment which performed this deed, and the facts are as follows:

Three British divisions—the 1st, 2nd, and 7th—were holding a front of about six miles between the Ypres-Comines Canal and Zonnebeke. To break through this line and to reach Ypres, 100,000 Germans were brought up and, stimulated by the Kaiser's words, they made a most formidable attack on the 30th and 31st.

Assault after assault was repulsed, but fresh men were always available, and at length they broke through near the village of Gheluvelt. Fighting to the last, two British battalions were destroyed, and soon there was a widening gap between the 1st and 7th Divisions. Our men began to fall back, and Sir Douglas Haig issued orders for his brigades to re-form upon a line about three miles from Ypres, and to hold this at all costs. This was that "most critical moment" of which Sir John French spoke. Then suddenly to Headquarters came wonderful news. The German advance had been stopped and the broken divisions were re-forming on their old line.

The 1st South Wales Borderers must share with the Worcesters the credit of bringing about this remarkable change. During all this terrible confusion this battalion had remained holding a sunken road, and no efforts of the Germans could dislodge it. The Worcesters were then in reserve, about a mile behind, and it was General Charles FitzClarence, V.C., killed a few days later, who appears to have been the first to realise that, with their help, the position, bad as it was, might be saved. Accordingly, although not their general, he gave orders to Major E. B. Hankey, commanding the battalion, to advance and to attack the enemy with the utmost vigour. This was about 1.30, and Major Hankey obeyed.

Restoring the Line

One company was sent to hold some protecting trenches, and the three others moved forward to the shelter of a small wood. There they prepared for the attack and received the necessary orders, the battalion scouts having already gone off to find the nature of the ground and to cut any wire in their way.

They were now about one thousand yards away from the Borderers, and this ground was covered by them in a series of rushes. Many were shot down, and their losses were especially severe when they had to cross about two hundred and twenty yards of open ground. However, by three o'clock they were on the sunken road, and in touch with the steadfast Borderers on their left. Their position, however, was by no means comfortable. On their right were Germans, who were cleared out of a house by volunteers, and even after their remaining company came up they were exposed on one flank. But the line was restored. The retiring battalions re-formed. The German attacks grew less and less vigorous, and soon after dusk came on they ceased altogether. The Worcesters had saved the day. Their casualties were one hundred and eighty-seven out of the five hundred and fifty who went into action

Mons, Lens, and "Plug Street"

The Worcestershire Regiment is one of the very few which, before the Great War, had four battalions of Regulars, and as all of these, to say nothing of Territorial and Service ones, were in the thick of the Great War, it would need a volume fully to relate their deeds. The 2nd, the heroes of Gheluvelt, were in the 2nd Division, and had been at the front from the start. The 3rd, in the 3rd Division, went out also in August, 1914. The 1st were in the 8th Division, which reached France at the end of 1914, and the 4th were in that heroic 29th Division which won immortality in Gallipoli.

The Worcesters had no very serious fighting at Mons, but the 2nd lost somewhat heavily after crossing the Aisne, and the 3rd had many casualties during our advance towards Lens in October. The 2nd had some hard days during the earlier part of the First Battle of Ypres, especially on October 22nd when, in driving the enemy from Polygon Wood, they lost six officers and one hundred and sixty men. Then came their great day, Oct. 31st, and on Nov. 10th a desperate attack on the 3rd at "Plug Street."

The 1st Worcesters began their career in this war by a successful raid on a German trench on January 3rd, 1915, and afterwards took part in the three days' Battle of Neuve Chapelle, especially in the latter part of it, when our advance was over and the Germans were delivering furious counter-attacks. There a company under Captain J. H. M. Arden counter-attacked the Germans so successfully that another battalion was able to return to trenches from which it had been driven; and there several attacks were led by Major J. F. S. Winnington.

[Bassano

OFFICERS OF THE WORCESTERSHIRE YEOMANRY.—From left to right (standing): Sec.-Lt. B. Mason, Lieut. Hon. A. H. S. Cripps, Sec.-Lt. D. W. L. Melville, Sec.-Lt. J. G. Henderson, Lieut. R. S. Challands, Sec.-Lt. M. Chennells. Seated: Major E. G. Bromley-Martin, Major H. J. Selwyn, Lieut.-Col. W. W. Wiggin, Major J. T. Lutley, Capt. A. M. Todd, Capt. B. H. Jones.

THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY

GALLANT DEEDS OF AN ANCIENT CORPS

On Saturday, July 21st, 1917, there was a great concourse of people at the Headquarters of the H.A.C. in Finsbury. The gathering was to welcome and congratulate two members of this ancient corps, both then second-lieutenants, R. L. Haine and A. O. Pollard, who had been awarded the Victoria Cross, and who, happily, unlike so many brave fellows, were still hale and hearty. The two officers drove to Finsbury direct from Buckingham Palace, where the King had just presented them with the cross for valour, and on their arrival the enthusiasm of their comrades and friends was unbounded.

To gain an idea of the gallantry of these men we must picture to ourselves a scene very different, indeed, from that friendly and festive hall in Finsbury. We must imagine them surrounded by foes rather than by friends; bombs, not smiles and greetings, hurled at them; darkness and confusion taking the place of light and order; in short, every possible kind o contrast.

On the Somme

The official account of the deeds of the two officers gives no clue to the place or the time of their performance. The London divisions took a big part in the opening attack on the Somme on July 1st, 1916; they were in the thick of the September fighting, the H.A.C. being certainly engaged in the attack on Leuze Wood on September 15th; and they shared also in the assaults delivered in the first half of 1917. The two awards in question were announced on June 8th, 1917, but there is no evidence, rather the reverse, that they were both earned on the same day.

But the when or the where does not really matter much, and ignorance on this point cannot possibly affect the quality of the actions. Pollard, who had already won the D.C.M. and the Military Cross, was with his battalion, and a fierce struggle was in progress. Looking away to his left he saw some troops crouching under a terrific hail of bursting shells. Then he saw them charged and thrown into some confusion by a mass of Germans. He realised that the situation was serious, for the men were beginning to fall back; so, with only four others and some bombs, he dashed out and went for the enemy. Incredible as it may seem, this tiny party broke up their attack and regained the ground that had just been lost, and some more also. By his force of will, dash, and splendid example, coupled with an utter contempt of danger, we are told, "he infused courage into every man who saw him."

Haine was with his battalion, holding a difficult salient, when it was fiercely and frequently attacked. The danger was that the men would be surrounded by the Germans closing up, as it were, the neck of the bottle; so with a soldier's eye this officer picked out the enemy's vital spot and led, not one, but six attacks against it. Bombs were the weapons employed, and with their aid not only was the position taken, but so were fifty prisoners and two machine-guns.

The Germans did not like this; they knew well the importance of the position, so up came a whole battalion of the Prussian Guard. After a struggle they won it again, but Haine was equal to the very dangerous situation. As night was coming on he decided not to attack until the morning, but throwing up a barricade he held his trench against determined assaults all through the darkness. In the morning he again led an attack on the coveted position, and not only drove out the Guard, but made them retire for several hundred yards. A fine performance, indeed; superb courage, quick decision, and sound judgment beyond praise; a personal example which inspired the men to stick to it for more than thirty hours of continuous fighting.

Their First Fighting

After a spell of training at Aveley, in Essex, the 1st Battalion of the H.A.C. went to France in the early autumn of 1914, and their first fighting was around Ypres in November, just as the big battle was dying away. They joined the 7th Brigade, and were sent to the front near La Bassée, a company at a time, in order to gain experience by working with the Regulars. They were also employed at this time in digging trenches under shell fire. During a good part of the winter they were in trenches near Kemmel, and there more than one of them earned mention for gallant conduct.

Day after day, and week after week, this trench warfare continued, until in June there was a little variation.

The 3rd Division was then near Hooge, and close by the Menin Road, the scene of the British push in September, 1917. Its engineers exploded a mine which formed an enormous crater. Around this there was a good deal of fighting, first one side and then the other doing something. On June 16th, after a heavy bombardment, one of our brigades got into some German trenches. Immediately afterwards, as arranged, up came the men of the H.A.C. and set to work to make these trenches capable of resisting a counter-attack. They did this, and then followed the brigade into the second and third lines of enemy trenches, these advances being made under heavy fire.

In the third-line trenches the H.A.C. remained, although they were heavily shelled all through the night. During the next day they had the same experience, but they stuck to it, and the trenches remained ours. It was in this encounter that Second-Lieutenant L. A. McArthur, of the H.A.C., won the Military Cross, and that Sergeant-Major E. F. H. Murray and Private R. Cuther also distinguished themselves.

Hooge and Sanctuary Wood

In September the battalion was still near Hooge, and, to assist the big British onslaught at Loos, the 3rd Division was ordered to cause a diversion there This was on the 25th, and for some days there was heavy fighting in and around Sanctuary Wood. On the 30th the H.A.C. were busily engaged there with bombs, and it was at this time that A. O. Pollard, then a sergeant, won his D.C.M., and was severely wounded. After his first wound he continued to hurl bombs and encourage his men, and a very similar story is told of Second-Lieutenant E. W. F. Hammond, of this regiment.

Origin of the Regiment

The H.A.C. dates back to 1537, when Henry VIII. gave to some of London's citizens, called the Fraternity, or Guild, of St. George, a charter directing them to encourage the science of artillery, which meant in those days "long bowes, crosbowes, and hand-gonnes."

In 1641 the Company obtained the training ground near Bunhill Fields, which is still in its possession. There the train bands of the City of London were drilled during the Civil War, and thereon an armoury and barracks were built. Infantry were soon added to the Company, and before the Great War it consisted of a battalion of infantry and two batteries of artillery. The infantry, as already related, went to the front in September, 1914, and other battalions were quickly raised which in due time took their places in the field.

[Bassano

OFFICERS OF THE HONOURABLE ARTILLERY COMPANY.—Standing (left to right): Lieut. E. J. Amoore, Sec.-Lieut. F. H. Satchwell, Captain E. Boyle, Sec.-Lieut. W. C. Hoare, Lieut. R. Corfield, Sec.-Lieut. W. A. Stone, Sec.-Lieut. G. N. Van der Byl, Sec.-Lieut. C. M. Humble Crofts, Sec.-Lieut. B. W. Noble. Seated: C. J. Bolton, Lieut. W. E. Clare, Col. F. Farrington, Col. L. R. C. Boyle, M.V.O., Surg.-Col. W. Culver James, Major L. Wright, Lieut. R. P. Gosnell, Sec.-Lieut. H. Ommundsen. On ground: Sec.-Lieut. C. C. Sturgis, Sec.-Lieut. R. J. Drury, Sec.-Lieut. H. M. Worsley, Sec.-Lieut. R. C. Hawkins.

THE SOUTH LANCASHIRES

ON THE SOMME AND IN GALLIPOLI

MY war hero is not Sir Douglas Haig, great as have been his services to our country, nor is it Sir Julian Byng, nor Sir Herbert Plumer, nor the late Sir Stanley Maude. It is not even Michael O'Leary, or the Australian Jacka, or Drummer Ritchie, or any of the other brave men who have won the Victoria Cross. It is Lieut. Henry Webber, of the South Lancashires.

On July 28th, 1916, the following appeared in the obituary columns of the "Times": "Webber.—Killed in action, on July 21st, Henry Webber, of Horley, Surrey, J.P. for the county of Surrey, lieutenant, South Lancashire Regt., aged 68 years." Many doubtless thought, on reading this, that the compositor had for once made a mistake and had put 68 in error, perhaps, for 38 or 48. But it was not so. Henry Webber was killed in action when 68 years of age. Just before his end he wrote: "Well, here I am in the thick of it, very fit and well, very happy, and liking my work."

Apart from any personal interest, however, this tells a little of the doings of the South Lancashires. On July 1st the Battle of the Somme opened, and on the 12th Webber wrote: "We have been absolutely in the thickest part of it, and the regiment has received the special thanks of the general for the work it has done." It then went to the rear for a five days' rest, after which it was fighting again, and it was evidently in this further fighting that this old soldier was killed.

Battle of the Somme

In the same week, quite possibly on the same day, there was another death in the ranks of the South Lancashires which aroused a good deal of interest. Lieut. R. G. Garvin, the only son of the editor of the "Observer," was twenty years old, and had shown marked intellectual gifts when he fell. He was in command of his company at the time, and was killed while directing its movements in a hazardous operation.

From these and other isolated bits of information we know that the South Lancashires were engaged in the Battle of the Somme, both in the early fury of July and in its later stages. It was also in the fighting of 1917. More than once the Commander-in-Chief has mentioned in his short despatches the gallantry of Lancashire troops, and among these we know the South Lancashires to have been. In July it was announced that one of them, Private John Readitt, had been awarded the Victoria Cross for acts of bravery which had enabled his battalion to maintain its position at a most critical time, and a number of other honours bore concurrent testimony to the activities of this particular regiment. But as regards its different battalions, Regulars, Territorials, and Service, we know nothing as to dates and places.

Earlier in the war it was different. While the 1st Battalion remained in India, the 2nd went to the front, as part of the 3rd Division, at the very first, and on Monday, August 24th, 1914, it was holding back the German advance a little to the south of Mons, an action which cost it several hundred men. On the next day the battalion performed a similar task, and again incurred serious losses.

With the rest of the British forces, the South Lancashires retreated almost to Paris, and then advanced to the Aisne, which they crossed near Condé. After some fighting there, the men found themselves transferred to Flanders. In October they were fighting around La Bassée, and on the 24th their brigade, the 7th, had a particularly bad time. At the end of the month they were relieved by the Indian troops. During the winter they, like other units, alternated weeks in wet and muddy trenches with days in billets behind the lines.

Fighting at Hooge

In the assault on Neuve Chapelle in March, 1915, the South Lancashires took no part, but they continued their everyday work, digging, patrolling, watching, firing, and all the other incidentals of trench warfare; and so did two Territorial battalions of the regiment, which were at the front early in 1915. These were the 4th from Warrington and the 5th from St. Helens, and from each men were rewarded for acts of special bravery about this time.

On the opening day of the Battle of Loos, September 25th, the South Lancashires fought in a smaller battle, one subsidiary to the big one. This was at Hooge. At 4.30 in the morning their division attacked and seized a ridge. This success, temporary though it was, caused the Germans to hurry up reserves there, instead of sending them to Loos, and having brought about this, our men gave up much of the ground they had taken.

The South Lancashire Regiment, meanwhile, was contributing battalions to the New Army, and some time in 1915 one of these, the 6th, went out to Gallipoli. They were sent to help the Anzacs, and were in the fights of August, our last desperate attempts to throttle the Turks holding the neck of that ill-omened peninsula. In the attack made on Chunuk Bair, on August 7th, the Lancashires were in reserve; but when a fresh one was planned for the following day, they were in General Cox's column of assault. They made their way up the ridge for some distance, in spite of determined opposition, but their great effort was on the 9th. On that day the attack was renewed. With some Indian troops by their side, the South Lancashires won the coveted crest, and could see far beneath them the waters of the Hellespont, and even the Asiatic shore, along which motors were bringing supplies to the lighters.

In Gallipoli

The sequel is one of the few things to which the word "tragedy" can really be applied. The plan was for another column to join them there; but this, owing to the darkness and the awful country, lost its way. They waited for it, but in vain. To quote from Sir Ian Hamilton's despatch, instead there came suddenly a salvo of heavy shell. The Turkish leader was quick to seize his chance. He rallied his troops, and a counter-charge drove our handful of Lancashires and Gurkhas over the crest.

The South Lancashire Regiment, the old 40th and 82nd of the Line, took part in the conquest of Canada, and suffered terribly in San Domingo in 1795. The 1st Battalion was under Abercromby in Egypt in 1801, and in South America in 1807, while the 2nd shared in the attack on Copenhagen in the same year. In the Peninsular War both battalions won splendid reputations. The 1st Battalion was in the squares of Waterloo, and in 1841 in Afghanistan; the 2nd was in India during the Mutiny. The 1st won a great name in South Africa in 1900, especially during the battles for the Relief of Ladysmith.

[Gale & Polden

OFFICERS OF THE SOUTH LANCASHIRE REGIMENT.—Back row (left to right): Sec.-Lieuts. R. H. Ogilsvy, L. M. Dean, J. O. Cocking, H. West, R. Young, and J. E. Goodwin. Middle row: Lieut. J. L. Hadfield, Lieut. H. H. Timson, Sec.-Lieut. R. B. Paul, Sec.-Lieut. A. A. Nimmo, Sec.-Lieut. W. H. E. Holland, Sec.-Lieut. L. E. Tanton. Seated: Capt. A. C. Wallis, Capt. M. L. B. Gould, Lieut.-Col. D. Bates (commanding officer), Major A. H. Schultz (adjutant), Capt. C. W. Stephenson, Capt. J. A. Crowe. On ground: Sec.-Lieut. W. Dickinson and Lieut. T. M. Donald.

ROYAL HIGHLANDERS OF CANADA

HEROIC DEEDS IN FLANDERS

IN spite of the censorship which, except in the vaguest fashion, prevented us from knowing what the various regiments were doing at the front, there was much evidence that 1917 was a notable year for the soldiers of Canada, and therefore for the various regiments which the Dominion sent so willingly to Europe.

Beginning in good time, some Canadians raided a trench on Christmas Eve, 1916, and on New Year's Eve they paid the foe a similar visit. On January 17th they carried out a successful enterprise at Colonne, and nearly a month later another near Souchez, in which a number of dugouts were destroyed. Towards the end of June they made a successful assault on Avion, and about a month later conducted a raid near Lens.

Turning to the big things, there came the capture of Vimy Ridge, on Easter Monday, April 9th. The first guarded reports of this battle mentioned that the Canadians had gone over the crest of the ridge, and later messages told how in three relentless waves they had moved forward behind an advancing barrage and had fought all day under the falling snow. Somewhat later they took Arleux, and in August they were fighting desperately around Lens. On the 15th they forced their way into two of the suburbs of that town, and a few days afterwards they met some Germans in No Man's Land, and there fought a battle which has been called the fiercest of the war.

In the Flanders Battles

In September, when the fighting was mostly concentrated around Ypres, the Canadians had a rest; but in October and November their services were again required. The Passchendaele Ridge had been assailed on October 9th, but the victory was not quite complete. On the 26th the Canadians shared in an attack, as they did also on the 29th, and early in November they seized and held the village from which the ridge is named.

Somewhere in the dust and dirt of these many combats were the Royal Highlanders of Canada, men from Montreal, who were singled out for mention in one official communication. They were in that Canadian division which landed in England in October, 1914, and spent the winter in training on Salisbury Plain. They were part of its 3rd Brigade, and they reached St. Nazaire in the following February, moving up to the front a little later, and being engaged in valuable, although subsidiary, operations during the Battle of Neuve Chapelle.

On April 22nd the Highlanders and the rest of the 3rd Brigade were holding part of the front near Ypres, and next to them were some Zouave and Turco battalions of the French Army. In the afternoon these men were seen suddenly to leave their trenches and run wildly to the rear. Choking and gasping, and with distorted faces, they were evidently in deadly pain; in short, they had been gassed.

The Highlanders were in grave danger of being outflanked, for they were next in the line. However, steps were taken to meet the peril, and reinforcements were hurried up. With the aid of wet handkerchiefs they avoided the worst effects of the poison gas, but they did not escape altogether. Still—and this was the thing that mattered—they held on. Sweeping on through a gap on the left, the Germans had soon almost surrounded those who were in the front trenches, and an attempt to bring up assistance to them had failed.

Fortunately night was coming on, so the Germans could not see the weakness of the Canadian line. The few Highlanders stuck grimly to their task of defence until it was quite dark, when they fell back and joined the rest of the brigade. It was on this day that one of them, Lance-Corporal F. Fisher, won the V.C. For a few days more the battalion fought in a short but memorable retreat, and on the night of May 4th was withdrawn.

The rest, however, was short, and, reinforcements from England having arrived, the battalion took part in an assault on an orchard near La Quinque Rue on May 20th. They relieved the 16th Battalion, moving forward to a position which had just been won under heavy fire, and this they consolidated and held until they in turn were relieved.

Engaged near Hooge

In 1916 the Canadians, by now largely increased in numbers, were heavily engaged at St. Eloi and at Sanctuary Wood, near Hooge, and in the latter engagement the Royal Highlanders were again to the fore. By a sudden thrust on June 2nd the Germans had broken through the line held by the 3rd Canadian Division, and pushed back our line. To make good the loss, reinforcements were brought up, and on the next day there was a counter-attack. In the centre were the Highlanders, their task being to follow up and support the 14th. Owing, however, to congestion on the roads, some of the troops did not reach their positions in time, and the assault failed to achieve its object. Another was arranged for ten days later.

At a quarter to one on the morning of June 13th the bombardment began. Then on the left the Royal Highlanders went forward at the word of command, although unfortunately the German guns had caught them while they were waiting to go "over the top." They advanced in four waves, each being a line composed of half companies, and soon got to their first goal. There a machine-gun caused them some trouble, but some bombers worked their way up to this and put it out of action. Then the advance was renewed, and by half-past two the battalion had made its way to the German lines.

At Courcelette

This encounter was just before the Battle of the Somme opened; indeed, the German attack was probably intended to upset Sir Douglas Haig's plans. In the opening stages of that battle the Canadians took little part, but they were engaged in the attack on Courcelette, delivered on September 15th. From that time onwards, however, facts about the individual battalions are rare, but the Royal Highlanders, we may be sure, were somewhere in the thick of it. Their previous exploits are eloquently summed up by the simple fact that from their entrance into the war to the end of November, 1915, their total casualties were 30 officers and 869 men, practically a whole battalion.

The large and splendid Canadian Army grew from a Militia enrolled to defend the country, and called out in times of danger; for instance, during the rebellion of Louis Riel. It was organised in regiments, which were increased as the country grew more populous, and some of these took names which had welcome associations with the Old Country. Montreal is a great resort of Scotsmen, and it is not surprising that when many of these formed themselves into a Militia regiment they named it the Royal Highlanders of Canada. It is one of the oldest of its kind, being numbered the 10th in the Militia List; but when an expeditionary force was formed it was numbered the 13th.

OFFICERS OF THE ROYAL HIGHLANDERS OF CANADA.—Back row (from left to right): Lieut. I. M. R. Sinclair, Capt. G. E. McCuaig, Lieut. W. S. M. MacTier, Capt. G. M. Drummond, Lieut. E. M. Sellon, Capt. K. M. Perry, Lieut. C. B. Pitblado. Middle row: Lieut. F. S. Molson, Lieut. S. B. Lindsay, Capt. A. G. Cameron, Capt. L. W. Whitehead, Lieut. C. N. McCuaig, Capt. H. F. Walker. Front row: Maj. D. R. McCuaig, Maj. E. C. Norsworthy, Lieut.-Col. F. O. W. Loomis, Maj. V. C Buchanan, Capt. T. S. Morrisey. Reclining: Lieut. A. M. Fisher and Lieut. F. C. Stephens.

THE SOMERSET LIGHT INFANTRY

HEROISM AT LANGEMARCK

"IN the centre British troops rapidly captured their first objectives, and continuing their advance carried the village of Langemarck after heavy fighting. They then fought their way forward for a distance of half a mile beyond the village and established themselves in the German trench system which constituted their final objective for the day."

This extract is taken from Sir Douglas Haig's message of Friday, August 17th, 1917, which described a British attack made on that day east and north of Ypres. It was what is called a local offensive; French troops co-operated on the left, and the result was the gain of a certain amount of ground and the capture of about 2,000 prisoners,

Among the troops in the centre, those that took Langemarck, were some of the Somerset Light Infantry. They started off about five in the morning, and before they got near the village had to pass by blockhouses full of machine-guns and craters wherein snipers lay hidden. Some of these feigned death in order to escape notice, and it was said that one of them had killed four officers, while another had killed fourteen men and wounded eleven. But, in spite of these obstacles, and also of the ample mud and pools of water, the Somersets got to the village.

At Langemarck

It would be more correct, however, to describe Langemarck as a fortress than as a village. The word "village" suggests, to us British folk, comfort and quiet, cottages and gardens, and there was nothing of this there. Instead of quiet there was the endless and terrible roar of the guns; instead of comfort there was dirt, desolation, and ruin; blockhouses had replaced cottages and dug-outs taken the place of gardens.

Headed by a young officer twenty men rushed one of these blockhouses, and out of it came thirty humiliated Germans. With only six men the officer then assailed another. It was, as were the others, of concrete with an iron door, and from within machine-guns were firing merrily. Through the loopholes the officer hurled two bombs, and then two more, which were his last. Then, amidst the din, he shouted at the door, "Come out, you blighters, come out!" And to his surprise forty-two men emerged, one being an English prisoner. Hunger had induced them to surrender, and when our men entered the blockhouse they found there eight machine-guns.

Gradually the village-fortress passed into our hands. One after another the Somersets and their comrades took the blockhouses and the dug-outs, sometimes capturing parties of the enemy, sometimes chasing them as they ran. There was no "order of battle" in the old sense; it was all confused fighting, small parties each engaged on its own stern task. It called, however, for the most heroic qualities, and it was because these were found in the Somersets that Sir Douglas Haig was able to telegraph to England the message quoted above.

Behind these Somersets was a fine record. The 1st Battalion of the régiment was in the division which, on that critical day almost exactly three years before the capture of Langemarck, Sunday, August 23rd, 1914, left the train at Le Cateau and marched towards the guns. We all know the story. The "Old Contemptibles"—the name is likely to stick—were hard pressed, and General Snow, with the 4th Division, was ordered to march towards the line of retreat and protect the flank of Smith-Dorrien's corps.

In the Great Retreat

All military writers admit that an operation of this kind is one of supreme difficulty. The number of possible roads is very limited, and what is going to happen if one brigade meets another marching in the opposite direction along a country lane? A mistake of this kind, with the German hordes close behind, would have meant confusion and disaster. But it was not so on this occasion. Great care was taken with the plans, and so successful were they that the 4th Division was in line for the Battle of Le Cateau on the 26th. Therein the Somersets fought about some quarries near Ligny, then defended that village, and finally fell back upon Malincourt, as part of the general retirement.

After this the battalion had a comparatively easy time, although in those days no time was really easy or anything like it. It took part in the remainder of the retreat and in the advance, and in October it was found in Flanders. On October 21st the Germans crossed the River Lys, and got into the village of Le Gheir. The Somersets helped to drive them back, and nine days later hurled a body of the enemy out of some trenches they had just captured. The hero of those days was Major C. B. Prowse, the battalion commander. He was mentioned by name in Sir John French's despatch, a very unusual honour, and was recommended for a special reward. He received the D.S.O., and had reached general's rank when, in 1916, he was killed.

In 1915 the Somersets had plenty of trench warfare, but little of the excitement of battle. Their corps was not called upon for the attack on Neuve Chapelle, and was in another part of the line when the Germans made their desperate attempts to take Ypres in April and May. By that time other battalions of the Somersets were coming out, and one of these, the 8th, was conspicuous towards the end of the year.

Armentières and Loos

Near Armentières, on the night of Dec. 16th, this battalion made a raid on some German trenches. It appears to have been a complete success. Under Captain R. H. Huntingdon the raiding-party entered the trench undiscovered, disposed of all the Germans found therein, and withdrew safely under heavy fire. This withdrawal was supervised by Lieutenant-Colonel L. G. Howard, commanding the battalion, who showed complete indifference to personal danger. Both he and Captain Huntingdon had done good work at Loos, and each received the D.S.O.

But the men were equally fine, although one instance must suffice. Lance-Sergeant Black was in charge of some bombers in the raid, and showed "conspicuous gallantry" in this work. A few nights later he was active in repelling a German attack, and in another, made on December 20th, he was equally alert. Although his leg was blown off, he continued to give his orders until he was carried away.

The Somerset Light Infantry, the old 13th of the Line, dates from 1685. The first men therein were partly pikemen and partly musketeers, and as such fought against the Highlanders at Killiecrankie. They helped to defend Gibraltar in 1704, and again in 1727, and in the meantime served in Spain as dragoons. Dettingen and Culloden were later battles; in 1801 they were in Egypt, and afterwards in Canada and Burma. In the first Afghan War (1839-41) the Somersets rendered valiant service, especially at the storming of Ghuznee and the defence of Jellalabad. They were in the Crimea, in India during the Mutiny, in South Africa fighting the Zulus, in Burma, and finally, before the Great War, in South Africa.

OFFICERS OF THE SOMERSET LIGHT INFANTRY.—Back row (left to right): Sec.-Lt. Sir C. Lampson, Bart., Lt. H. Moore, Sec.-Lt. S. E. Birrell, Sec.-Lt. R. A. Sommerville, Sec.-Lt. J. N. Black, Sec.-Lt. J. N. Purkis, Lieut. A. MacConnell. Middle row: Sec.-Lt. F. H. Fuge, Lieut. F. Bramwell, Sec.-Lt. C. Thatcher, Lieut. F. C. Caillard, Lieut. G. B. Walrond, Lieut. G. Manson, Sec.-Lt. C. H. C. Nash. Front row: Capt. A. R. S. Sale-Hill, Maj. T. F. Ritchie, Capt. L. E. Worthington-Wilmer (Adjutant), Lt.-Col. C. G. Rawling, C.I.E., Maj. C. F. Lennock, Maj. A. O. C. Cust, Capt. F. D. Bellew.

THE WELSH GUARDS

THE GLORY OF A YOUNG REGIMENT

IN this series of articles we have told step by step the story of the Brigade of Guards during the Great War. It is a wonderful story, and should one day fill an heroic and shining page in martial literature. It began at Mons, and went on year by year in the war, so that by November, 1917, the Guards were fighting as well as ever in the desperate struggle around Cambrai. Our articles began fittingly with the Coldstreams, the oldest regiment in the Army, then followed the Irish, the Scots, and the Grenadier Guards. Each one took the tale a little further, and it is now the turn of the Welsh Guards, the fifth and youngest regiment in the brigade.

Some time during 1915 it was decided to take the various battalions of Guards out of the different divisions and brigades in which they were, and to unite them into a single division, which, owing to the exceptional physique and training of the Guards, would be a corps d'élite. To make up a full division thirteen battalions were required, twelve to compose the division's three brigades of four battalions each, and one to act as pioneers. Of the thirteen battalions eight were already at the front, so five new ones were sent out from England. One of these was the 1st Battalion of the Welsh Guards, raised only a short time before, and it joined the 3rd Guards Brigade.

At Loos

The Welsh Guards received their baptism of fire at Loos. This battle, it will be remembered, began on Saturday morning, September 25th, 1915. Some ground was won, but the advantages could not be pressed home, and it resolved itself into a sanguinary struggle around two or three strong positions.

The Guards were kept in reserve about twenty miles from Loos. Sir John French did not know, when the battle opened, where their services would be required, but he ordered their general, Lord Cavan, to move them up nearer to the front, and on the Saturday they were marching at a steady pace towards the noise of the guns.

On Saturday evening they bivouacked eight miles from Loos, and on Sunday morning Sir John French told Sir Douglas Haig he could make use of them as he thought best. Sir Douglas had no doubts, for during the day some ground near Loos had been lost and it must be won back. The Guards were to win it.

One can imagine the excitement at the headquarters of the division. Lord Cavan has sent for his brigadiers, who motor up and enter his room. Maps are spread out, and expert Staff officers stand around. One tells of what the artillery can do, another how the flying men will assist, and so on. Lord Cavan reads Sir Douglas Haig's orders. These are discussed, and at length a plan of attack is settled. The three brigadiers motor away, each to assemble his colonels and arrange their part in the coming struggle.

Here we are only concerned with the Welsh Guards. Its brigade, the 3rd, was in reserve, and so behind a ridge the men waited while the other two brigades opened the attack. Then came the order that the 3rd was to cross the ridge and move forward to support the 2nd, their objective being the hill marked 70. They marched first through the ruined village of Loos, where gas-shells disabled a good number, but the rest pressed on, and at 5.30 in the afternoon they were ready for their big effort.

The 4th Grenadiers led, but soon their ranks were so thinned that the Welsh went up to support them. The two battalions then pushed steadily forward, and were soon almost on the top of the hill, where there was a redoubt, around which were the dead bodies of the Highlanders who had assailed it on the Saturday. Just in front of it they dug themselves in, and from that line they did not budge. During the night the Scots Guards came up to hold it, and the Welsh were relieved. They had fought their first action and had won.

Battle of the Somme

Two deeds performed on this day are well worthy of mention. Captain Rhys Williams, who was in charge of the battalion's machine-guns, was wounded, but he came back to his work as soon as his injuries had been dressed. Then, lying on his back, for he was unable to stand, he directed his men until the withdrawal at midnight. In the same attack Private G. C. Grant won distinction by carrying ammunition and messages to the front line.

For about a year after Loos little was heard of the Guards. The Battle of the Somme began, and was continued throughout July and August, but yet there was no word of them in action. Rumour said that they were being trained and kept for some special enterprise, and so it may have been. Anyhow, we know that the Tanks and the Guards entered the battle on the same day, September 15th.

The Guards advanced, as required, from Ginchy towards a most formidable position some little distance away. The struggle was terrific. In front of them machine-guns spurted from a sunken road, and from either side they were assailed. They fought on, however, and the casualties to their officers bulked large in the Roll of Honour on the last days of the month. The fighting amidst shell-holes, ruin, and desolation was carried on for some time; it was a confused struggle in which, as one officer said, the things most required were compasses.

At Cambrai

Of the grim details we as yet know very little, and we know even less about the fights of 1917. In October the Guards were in Flanders, where, having rushed a position and taken four hundred prisoners, they held a line close to Houlthulst Forest, which was described as a wilderness of mud and water. In November they were in the fierce fighting for Cambrai, and at Fontaine they distinguished themselves especially.

It was before these autumn attacks, much earlier in the year, that Sergeant Robert Bye, of the Welsh Guards, won the Victoria Cross. An assault was in progress, and two German "pill-boxes," or something of that kind, were in the way. Bye rushed one of them, and it troubled the Guards no more. The attack continued, and it became necessary to clear another line of German defences. Bye offered to lead the party detailed for this hazardous work; this he successfully did, and many prisoners were taken.

As already stated, the Welsh Guards is a very young regiment. In February, 1915, the King gave permission for the formation of this unit. A badge and motto were approved, and from the Grenadier Guards a number of Welshmen were taken for a nucleus. The ranks were quickly filled, and on St. David's Day, March 1st, the regiment mounted guard at Buckingham Palace for the first time.

OFFICERS OF THE WELSH GUARDS.—Front row (left to right): Maj. H. H. Bromfield, D.S.O., Capt. R. G. Williams Bulkeley, Capt. A. P. Palmer, D.S.O., Lt.-Col. W. Murray-Threipland, Maj. G. C. D. Gordon, Capt. O. T. D. Osmond Williams, D.S.O., Capt. G. W. Phillipps, Capt. J. H. Bradney. Second row: Sec.-Lt. C. C. A. Insole, Lt. H. E. Wethered, Sec.-Lt. Hon. E. F. Morgan, Lt. K. G. Minzies, Sec.-Lt. W. A. Fox Pitt, Sec.-Lt. F. A. V. Copland Griffiths, Sec.-Lt. G. C. H. Crawshay. Third row: Lt. W. H. J. Glough, Lt. R. W. Lewis, Sec.-Lt. B. T. V. Hambrough, Sec.-Lt. N. Newall; Sec.-Lt. H. Dene, Sec.-Lt. H. J. Sutton, Lt. H. E. Allen; Lt. J. J. P. Evans, Sec.-Lt. J. L. W. Crawshay. Back row: Sec.-Lt. H. A. Evan Thomas, Sec.-Lt. Hon. P. G. Howard, Lt. P. L. M. Battye, Sec.-Lt. H. M. Martineau, Sec.-Lt. B. C. Williams-Ellis.

Pipers of the Black Watch Celebrate a Victory

Five jolly Highlanders returning from the trenches to the music of the pipes. There is an irresistible appeal about this photograph—the five Scotsmen, the seated observer, the broken road, stray ammunition carts, and the landscape of war.

A photograph reminiscent of a Braemar Gathering. Pipers of the Black Watch playing to their comrades resting along a rail communication in the region of stern fighting. Inset: The gallant piper, A. Boyd, who played his company over the parapet in the attack at Albert, July, 1916.

Man-Hunting 'Mid the Shattered Walls of Puisieux

In their withdrawal north of the Ancre the Germans used all the tricks of war to check and kill our patrols who were feeling the way for our advancing troops. Trip-wires attached to explosives, bombs concealed in German helmets, and other ingenious devices were found on every hand, but they were of small moment compared with the snipers and machine-gunners who were concealed in every cunning corner. There were a lot of these in the ruins of Puisieux, and sharp fighting and a very grim man-hunt went on amid the broken brickwork of that village before our men finally cleared and carried the place.

THE 7TH CANADIAN INFANTRY

FINE WORK AT ST. JULIEN

IN the article in this series about the Royal Highlanders of Canada, we mentioned a few of the doughty deeds done by the Canadian troops as a whole during 1917.

Men from British Columbia took part, we know, in the capture of Vimy Ridge and of Passchendaele. At Passchendaele they were on the right of the advance, and during its progress they were assailed by enfilade fire from machine-guns on Becelaere Ridge. North of the Broodseinde Road they came up against a very strong position, and this they took by working round the end and then rushing it.

The 7th Canadian Infantry Battalion, composed of men from British Columbia, was in the 1st Division which landed in England in 1914, trained on Salisbury Plain through the winter, and reached the front just before the Battle of Neuve Chapelle in March, 1915. The Canadians worked hard in France. Close behind the lines they saw and learned much of the nature of the war in which they were serving, and before long they were pronounced fit for the front line. On April 17th, therefore, the 2nd and 3rd Brigades took over from the French 11th Division a section of the line in front of Ypres, and five days later they were destined to face a terror which had never before assailed British troops.

St. Julien

Everyone knows the story of the first gas attack by which the Germans, on April 22nd, opened a gap in the French lines. The 3rd Canadian Brigade was the one mainly endangered by the French retirement, and to support it, as General Turner moved it round to ward off the German attacks, the British Columbians (the 7th) were sent over from the 2nd.

The battalion was placed on a ridge near St. Julien, and its orders were to make the position safe against a probable attack. It was then afternoon, and this work must be done during the darkness, for the ridge was under constant shell fire. Accordingly, Colonel Hart-McHarg, with one or two of his officers, went out to choose new positions for the trenches. Their experiences were exciting. They had gone forward for some distance when suddenly they found themselves on one side of a hedge and a lot of Germans on the other. Being good soldiers, they threw themselves down flat at once, but Hart-McHarg, having rolled into a shell-hole, was hit. His wounds were dressed, and afterwards he was carried back to his own headquarters, but his injuries were serious, and the next day he died.

Then came days of storm for the battalion. Attacks were made on it, sometimes in front, sometimes on the flanks, sometimes on all together. In less than three days it lost 600 men killed or wounded, every company officer having been hit. With only 100 men left, the British Columbians fell back with the rest of the brigade to which they were attached. Among the heroes of this fight was Sergeant W. Swindells, who, when all the officers of his company had been injured and the few remaining men were retiring, led them back again.

A short rest followed these exertions, but on May 23rd the British Columbians were again in the front line. At this time the fiercest fighting was around Festubert, where our men had tried and failed to seize a redoubt named Bexhill. Another attempt was necessary, so the 5th Canadian Infantry were ordered to try their hands. To assist them, the 7th sent 100 men, 50 to build the necessary bridges, and 50 to consolidate any positions won. The bridges were made, twelve of them crossing a ditch ten feet wide, but heavy losses were incurred in the operation. However, the desired positions were captured, another company from the 7th coming up to assist, and under very heavy fire they were held.

Splendid Trench Raid

The Canadians did not take any part in the Battle of Loos, and the 1st Division —for there were now others in the field— had, during the latter part of 1915, a comparatively quiet time. In November, however, the 7th Battalion took part in a successful trench raid, which is worth a brief description. At nine o'clock in the evening five men crept across No Man's Land and began silently to cut the wire in front of the German trenches. They could only cut when clouds closed over the moon; at other times they just lay still. By midnight they had made two lanes through the wire; these were in the shape of a V, meeting in front of the enemy's trench. A small river was also bridged in three places—another necessary piece of work. At the appointed time two selected parties set out. Each man had his own particular task; everyone wore a black mask, and none carried any badge or mark of identification whatever. Bayonet men, grenade throwers, grenade carriers, wire men, and shovel men went first, while five riflemen, a telephonist, a linesman, and two stretcher-bearers followed.

It was raining hard when these Columbians jumped into the German trench. The two officers leading fell on to a German crouching under some corrugated iron, but they did not spend much time over him. They hurried along the trench, followed by their men. Bombs were used freely, and, as the dug-outs were full, the Germans suffered many casualties. An officer stationed at the entrance sent back word over the wire of the progress of the raid, and kept a sharp look-out for any of the enemy, while our guns were hard at work to cut off reinforcements.

At Hooge

The prisoners taken were passed back from one waiting group to another, and soon the signal to retire was given. The twenty minutes allowed for the stay in the trench were over, and the Canadians retired across No Man's Land. A most successful raid, splendidly planned and carried out, was to the credit of the British Columbians. From this time we know less of these men from the Far West. They were in the fighting near Hooge in June, 1916, and it is tolerably certain that they were not far from Courcelette in the following September.

British Columbia occupies a somewhat isolated and difficult position in the Canadian Federation. Before it joined the other States in 1871 its interests were centred solely on the Pacific coast, and consequently it had no part in those wars and rumours of wars which kept the Canadians on the St. Lawrence alert, and led them to create a militia which was called out in case of need. However, after 1871 they soon formed their own regiments, and these, among them, the 72nd Seaforth Highlanders of Canada, the 102nd Rocky Mountain Rangers, and the 104th joined the Canadian Militia, and proved themselves equal to the best. There was, too, no lack of zeal when the Great Danger came, and, as we have seen, the men of British Columbia threw themselves into the struggle as keenly as if they lived on the German frontier and not some thousands of miles away.

OFFICERS OF THE BRITISH COLUMBIA REGIMENT.—Front row (left to right): Lt. C. C. Holmes, Lt. W. T. Barton, Lt. Hodgson, Lt. O. F. Brothers, Lt. G. H. Leslie, Lt. R. F. Steeves, Lt. T. G. Forshaw. Middle row: Capt. L. E. Haines, Capt. S. D. Gardner (Adjt.), Maj. P. Byng Hall, D.S.O., Lt.-Col. W. Hart-McHarg, Maj. G. Moberley, Maj. P. Rigley, Capt. the Rev. W. Barton. Back row: Lt. L. G. Hornby, Capt. W. H. Edmund-Jenkins, Capt. G. H. Gibson, C.A.M.C., Lt. E. D. Bellew, Lt. N. A. Jessop, Lt. W. Ashton, Capt. T. Locke.

Gunners and Kilties Score on the Somme

While an attack is taking place the advanced field-guns never cease firing, and an endless chain of waggons brings up ammunition to the dumps close to the gun-pits. Here a waggon is being unloaded, and a second has just galloped up behind it, while in the left middle distance a third, just emptied, is held up on its return journey by a bursting shell.

"Y" Ravine is formed by the junction of two deep clefts in the high ground near Beaumont-Hamel. It was stormed by a Scots division, and its capture is spoken of as "The Scotsmen's Show." The fighting was hand to hand up sheer slopes, barred with wire and dotted with machine-guns at every point. Nothing, however, availed to check the impetuous Scotsmen.

THE NORTH STAFFORDSHIRES

BRAVE DEEDS IN FRANCE AND FLANDERS

THERE are some regiments which do not receive very much notice in the newspapers or from the public generally. It is difficult to say why, for those who follow the records know that, when called upon, they do just as well as their comrades. Their officers and men earn their tale of D.S.O.'s and D.C.M.'s, and even an occasional V.C., and it is quite easy to find mentions of the battalions in brigade and other general orders. It may be that it is just because they are those English regiments of the line which everyone takes for granted will do their duty without any fuss whatever. One of them is the North Staffords.

At the opening of the Great War this regiment was not represented at the front, for of its two Regular battalions one was in India and the other in Ireland. However, the 1st, the one in Ireland, soon got orders to move, and in September, 1914, it reached France. The Battle of the Aisne was then raging, but in this the 6th Division (in which the North Staffords were) took little or no part.

Ypres, Armentières, and Hooge

Under General Pulteney the two divisions of the Third Corps, the 4th and the 6th, were soon moved from the Aisne to Flanders. They travelled quickly, for the times were critical. On October 9th the North Staffords were at Compiègne; on the 11th they were lodged in some glassworks at Arques, three miles from St. Omer, and on the 13th they were under shell fire at Hazebrouck. From there they fought their way forward towards the River Lys; Sailly, and then Armentières were reached, but a little later the men came up against the main German line, where they were stopped. Then followed the First Battle of Ypres, in which this Third Corps, on the right of the British line, prevented the Germans from entering Armentières.

There the Staffords remained throughout the doleful winter of 1914-15, and there they were when our men assaulted Neuve Chapelle. To help the big attack, their brigade, the 17th, stormed the hamlet of L'Epinette and held it against counter-attacks. In this fighting Lieutenant V. V. Pope was specially noted for the clever and dashing way he led his company.

Territorial Battalions

About this time Sir John French's army was strengthened by the arrival of Territorial battalions, and among these were the 5th North Staffords from Hanley, and the 6th from Burton-on-Trent. During the gas attacks of April these civilian soldiers were near Kemmel, and there some of them showed their quality by entering a mine gallery to rescue some comrades who had been overcome by gas. For a time they did not have a great deal of hard fighting, but plenty of this was in store for them.

To return for a moment to the Regulars. In July the 1st North Staffords were near Hooge, and on the 5th one of their sergeant-majors won the D.C.M. for rallying a platoon belonging to a neighbouring battalion, leading the men back to their lost trench, and then, with some of his own company, making this again defensible. In August the battalion shared in the fighting by which a big crater near Hooge was recovered, and then was entrusted with the defence of a section of the restored line. They took no part in the Battle of Loos, but on October 30th and 31st they were busy in repelling German attacks on the desirable positions they were protecting.

Battle of Loos

But if the North Stafford Regulars were not engaged in the stern struggle of September and October, 1915, which is known as the Battle of Loos, the Territorials were. After the main encounter had ended it was decided that another attempt should be made on the Hohenzollern Redoubt and its attendant defences. This was fixed for October 13th, and was entrusted to a division of Midland Territorials; in this was a brigade composed of two battalions, the 5th and 6th from North, and two from South Staffordshire.

The plan was for the Staffordshire men to capture the so-called Dump Trench and Fosse 8, which lay behind the Hohenzollern and were connected with it. To reach their objective they had a good distance to go, but the 5th North Staffords, one of the two leading battalions, went "over the top" in good heart. The German machine-guns were numerous and ready, and in crossing the open fully half of the men were shot down. The 6th Battalion, as arranged, followed in support, but it, too, lost so heavily that it was decided the survivors were too few to push the attack home.

In this assault the two battalions, especially the 5th, were almost destroyed, and the losses among the officers tell their own tale. Of the 5th, Colonel J. H. Knight was first returned as missing, but was afterwards found to be dead; the adjutant, Captain Fleming, Captain Ridgway, and several subalterns were killed, and a larger number wounded. The 6th lost Captain Jenkinson killed and several subalterns either killed or wounded.

At Gallipoli

The records of this regiment also include services in Gallipoli. Thither, in a division of the New Army, went the 7th Battalion. It was one of the battalions landed at Anzac Cove to assist the Australians and New Zealanders in their August attacks on the Turkish lines. They were in those desperate struggles, waged against heat and thirst as well as a more tangible foe, which tested human endurance to its very limit. There it was that Sergeant J. Bollington and Quartermaster-Sergeant P. Maddock won the D.C.M. for giving example and encouragement to those under their command.

In the last hours of this Gallipoli Campaign the Staffordshires were to the fore. On January 7th, 1916, the first of the two days selected for the final disembarkation at Cape Helles, the Turks made a big attack on our lines. They sprang two mines, and at two points advanced with the bayonet, but the Staffords completely repulsed this attack, and the enemy retired after a large proportion of his force had been killed or wounded.

Past History

The North Staffordshire Regiment, called also the Prince of Wales's, is composed of the old 64th and 98th. The former, raised in 1758, served against the American Colonists, and in the West Indies, where in 1803 they stormed St. Lucia, and in 1804 assaulted Surinam, in Dutch Guiana. The 98th, raised in 1824, served in China in 1842, and in 1851 against the Afridi tribesmen, while five years later the 64th were in Persia. They fought in the Indian Mutiny under Havelock, and the 2nd Battalion served through the Boer War.

MEN OF THE STAFFORDSHIRES ON THE WESTERN FRONT.—Battalion of the Staffordshire Regiment waiting to go up to the front line. (British official.)

Changing Guard Somewhere on the Somme

At the beginning of the July offensive the British battle-line extended ninety miles from just north of Ypres to the village of Frise on the Somme. As a result of conferences between the allied commanders various re-arrangements were made, and on Christmas night, 1916, "an exchange of powers and duties between the allied armies immediately to the rear was effected with the utmost order and success." When the French soldiers marched away from their positions they exchanged enthusiastic cheers with their British comrades who relieved them, and so assumed responsibility for the safe custody of more miles of France.

The Roll of Honoured Dead

In this section, concluding those of previous volumes, will be found the final groups of portraits of gallant British officers, including heroes from overseas, who fell on the field of honour fighting for their King and Empire. The toll of life in the war was nearly one million, and these heroes, together with those portrayed in previous volumes, may be taken as worthy to represent the names inscribed for ever on the scroll of fame in the Golden Book of British Chivalry.

Maj.-Gen. W. G. BIRRELL, A.M.S.

Maj. R. B. CHARSLEY, King's (Liverpool Regt.).

Maj. J. C. CALLAGHAN, M.C., R.A.F.

Maj. C. D. BOOKER, D.S.C., R.A.F.

Lt.-Col. R. B. WOOD, Tank Corps.

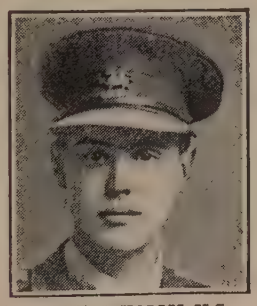
Capt. C. E. H. TEMPEST-HICKS, M.C., Lancers.

Capt. A. J. ROSS, Royal Irish Rifles.

Capt. C. H. MALLINSON, East Lancs Regt.

Capt. G. W. TOWELL, M.C., R.H.A.

Capt. H. J. SKILL, Middlesex Regt.



Lt. C. F. G. HOLLIS, M.C., The Buffs.

Lt. A. H. MALTBY, R.A.F.

Lt. C. E. E. HAY, Lancers.

Sec.-Lt. R. G. BREWSTER, South Irish Horse.

Lt. W. K. ANDERSON, Black Watch.

Sec.-Lt. W. R. LLOYD, Royal Welsh Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lt. G. D. HULBERT, Hussars.

Lt. R. B. MARRIOTT-WATSON, M.C., R. Irish Rif.

Sec.-Lt. W. W. HUTTON, London Regt., attd. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. E. M. KERMODE, D.S.O., M.C., W. Yorks Regt.

Portraits by Bassano, Lafayette, Russell, Elliott & Fry, and Culliford.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL LORD ALFRED EDEN BROWNE, D.S.O., killed in action, was youngest son of the late Marquis of Sligo. Captain in the R.F.A. from 1905 to 1908, and adjutant in 1907 and 1908, he afterwards received the rank of major in the Reserve of Officers. He volunteered for service at the outbreak of war, and was mentioned in despatches in February, 1915, gaining the D.S.O. In 1917 he was appointed Commandant of an R.A. Officers Cadet School. Shortly after returning to France he fell in action in the summer of 1918.

Lieutenant-Colonel Lord Alexander Thynne, D.S.O., M.P., brother of the present Marquis of Bath, was educated at Eton and Balliol. Since 1910 he had represented East Marylebone on the L.C.C., and in that year was elected one of the Members of Parliament for Bath. He served in the South African War with the 1st Battalion Imperial Yeomanry, being on the Staff in 1900-1902, and receiving both medals with five clasps. Subsequently he acted as Secretary to the Lieutenant-Governor of the Orange River Colony, and as Reuter's correspondent with the Somaliland Field Force, when he was awarded the medal and clasp. He went to the front in this war as second in command of a battalion of the Worcestershire Regiment, and later received the command of a battalion of the Wiltshires, afterwards being transferred to another Wilts battalion, with which he was serving when he fell. He was awarded the D.S.O. in 1917.

Captain Geoffrey Bulmer Tatham, M.C., younger son of the late T. C. Tatham, of Millbrook, West Hill, Highgate, was educated at Uppingham and Trinity College, Cambridge, of which he became scholar and Fellow and, in 1910, Junior Bursar, holding this appointment until his death. A good all-round sportsman and amateur actor, and a Past Master of the Isaac Newton University Masonic Lodge, he was also a keen member of the Cambridge University O.T.C., in which corps he was a major. On the outbreak of war he was sent to the War Office, but transferred to the Rifle Brigade as a captain, and in July, 1915, joined a battalion at the front, remaining there until November, 1916, when he was sent home as brigade-major of a training reserve brigade. In May, 1917, he returned to the front, and was appointed Staff captain of an infantry brigade. Since November, 1917, he had been acting brigade-major, and in January last was awarded the Military Cross. He was reported missing on March 30th, 1918, and later "killed in action or died of wounds on or shortly after that date."

Lt.-Col. Lord ALFRED BROWNE, D.S.O., R.F.A.

Lt.-Col. Lord ALEXANDER THYNNE, D.S.O., M.P., Wilts R.

Capt. H. J. WEST, M.C., Bedfordshire Regt.

Lt.-Col. A. E. G. McKENZIE, D.S.O., New Brunswick Regt.

Capt. J. K. MEWS, London Regt.

Capt. G. B. TATHAM, M.C., Rifle Brigade.

Capt. H. A. FANE, M.C., Yeomanry.

Capt. L. P. FIGGIS, M.C., The Buffs.

Capt. R. C. B. FELLOWES, Coldstream Guards.

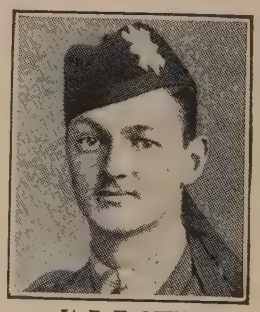
Capt. J. A. HARRIS, M.C., Yorkshire Regt.

Capt. E. O. RIETCHEL, M.C., Manchester Regt.

Lt. D. O'ROURKE, R.G.A.

Lt. A. C. LOVEDAY, Australian Infantry.

Lt. A. G. SHARP, R.F.A.


Lt. B. H. QUINE, Black Watch.

Sec.-Lt. W. A. BARR, R.G.A.

Lt. E. L. WARMAN, R.M.A.

Sec.-Lt. G. C. BRASSEY, Coldstream Guards.

Lt. G. C. HATCH, R.N.

Lt. C. S. MOSSOP, D.S.C., R.A.F.

Portraits by Lafayette, Elliott & Fry, Bassano, Swaine, Russell, and Barnett.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL EDWARD THESIGER FRANKLAND HOOD, D.S.O., R.A., of Nettleham Hall, Lincoln, was educated at Bradfield and the R.M.A., Woolwich. After seeing service in the South African War he retired from the R.H.A. as a subaltern and took a commission in the Lincolnshire Yeomanry. He did valuable service in the Remount Department, and on the outbreak of war was given command of a battery in his old regiment, going to France in 1915. He fought at Loos and on the Somme, and was several times mentioned in despatches and awarded the D.S.O. In 1917 he was given command of a Field Artillery Brigade, and fought at Passchendaele. In the fighting in Flanders, 1918, he was decorated on the field with the Croix de Guerre (Silver Star).

Captain John Henry Ellis Dean, Cheshire Regiment, was youngest son of Mr. and Mrs. J. H. Dean, Heath House, Nocton, Lincoln. Educated at Repton and Pembroke College, Cambridge, he was commissioned in 1914 to the Cheshire Regiment, was gazetted captain in May, 1915, and went to France in November of that year. He was awarded the M.C. for gallant leadership in January, 1916, and was wounded in the Battle of the Somme. Shortly after returning to the front in 1917 he was awarded a Bar to the Military Cross.

Captain Thomas James Prichard, M.C., King's Own Royal Lancaster Regiment, was son of Mr. J. Prichard, of Tennyson Street, Liverpool. Educated at the Liverpool Institute, he was a member of the O.T.C. there for four years, transferring to the 6th K.L.R. (Liverpool Rifles), eighteen months before the war. On the outbreak of war he enlisted, and after being attached to the Army Cyclists' Corps was gazetted Second-Lieutenant in the South Lancashire Regiment in September, 1915, subsequently being transferred to a battalion of the K.O.R.L. Regiment, with which he went to France in May, 1916. He was twice mentioned in despatches, and in June, 1917, was awarded the Military Cross.

Lieutenant Napier Guy Sheppey-Greene, Royal West Kent Regiment, elder son of Lieutenant-Colonel Sheppey-Greene, was educated at Malvern and Worcester College, Oxford. On the outbreak of war, when curate of St. Thomas's, Clapton, he obtained a chaplaincy in the Border Regiment, and was perhaps the first priest allowed by his Bishop to apply for a commission. He passed the musketry course at Hythe with distinction, and for two years was musketry instructor to a battalion of the R.W.K. Regiment. In April, 1918, he went to the front to take command of a company, and was killed on June 13th, 1918, while leading it into the trenches.

Lt.-Col. E. S. CHANCE, Leicester Regt.

Lt.-Col. E. T. F. HOOD, D.S.O., R.F.A.

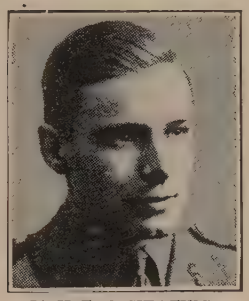
Lt.-Col. B. H. THORNE, North Staffs Regt.

Capt. W. H. P. BENNETT, M.C., Royal Sussex Regt.

Capt. J. H. E. DEAN, M.C., Cheshire Regt.

Capt. T. J. PRICHARD, M.C., K.O.R. Lancs Regt.

Lt. G. M. REID, London Regt.


Lt. H. F. A. KEATING, R.E.

Lt. H. S. COPPOCK, South Lancs Regt.

Lt. N. G. SHEPPEY-GREENE, R.W. Kent Regt.

Lt. J. H. MORRIS, R.H.A., attd. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. K. C. WEBB-WARE, R.G.A.

Lt. W. P. CLOWES, Hussars.

Lt. F. W. SYKES, R.F.A.

Lt. A. C. STEPHEN, M.C., R.F.A.

Sec.-Lt. D. C. E. MARSH, Dragoon Guards.

Lt. S. H. JACKSON, Royal Irish Regt.

Sec.-Lt. D. B. ROBB, South African Infantry.

Sec.-Lt. R. M. CHAMBERLAIN, Scots Guards.

Lt. W. O. EDIS, Yeomanry.

Portraits by Lafayette, Elliott & Fry, Bassano, and Chancellor.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

CAPTAIN WILLIAM REGINALD GUY PEARSON, R.A.F., accidentally killed at a Northern aerodrome, was the second son of Dr. and Mrs. Spencer Pearson, of Clapham Road, London, S.W. An exceptionally skilful and careful pilot, he was officially credited with having brought down eleven German machines, and had been mentioned in despatches.

Captain Ronald Charters Macpherson, died of wounds, was the youngest son of the late Sir J. Molesworth Macpherson, C.S.I., and Lady Macpherson, of Creag Dhu, Onich, Inverness-shire. Educated at Hove and Winchester, he had entered for King's College, Cambridge, but volunteered when war broke out, and in October, 1914, obtained a commission in the Highland Brigade, R.F.A. In June, 1915, he proceeded to France, and had been on constant active service since that time.

Lieutenant George Francis Pauling, M.C., Grenadier Guards, killed in action, was only son of the late Henry Clarke Pauling, C.E., and of Mrs. Hill Kelly, of Llanfoist House, Abergavenny. Educated at Beaumont College and Sandhurst, he was gazetted to the 17th Lancers in August, 1914. In January, 1916, he exchanged into the Grenadier Guards, and won his M.C. at the Battle of the Somme in that year.

Lieutenant Walter Haliburton Routledge Crick, Dorset Regiment, killed in action, was only son of the Rev. Walter Crick, of Oving Vicarage, Sussex. Educated at Lancing, he won an open scholarship in history at St. John's College, Cambridge, at the close of 1914, and in the same week was offered an Exhibition in history at Magdalen College, Oxford, which he decided to accept, but two days after leaving school he was gazetted to the Dorset Regiment.

Second-Lieutenant Benedict Godfrey Allen Bell, R.A.F., fourth son of Canon J. Allen Bell, Vicar of Wimbledon, was killed while carrying out some daring machine-gun work against enemy troops on the ground. He was educated at Shrewsbury, and in 1912 went out to Singapore. Several applications for leave having proved unsuccessful, he resigned his appointment and came home in March, 1917, joining the R.F.C. immediately, and proceeding to France in January, 1918.

Lieutenant Thomas Noel Henry Stretch, M.C., killed in action, was fourth son of the Bishop of Newcastle, New South Wales. Educated at the Geelong Grammar School and at Trinity College, Melbourne University, he was one of the first to enlist in the Australian Imperial Force. In 1915 he obtained a commission in the British Army, and served for some time in the A.S.C. in France. Later he was attached to the Machine Gun Corps, and in July, 1917, he was awarded the M.C., and very shortly afterwards a Bar.

Capt. W. R. G. PEARSON, R.A.F.

Lt.-Col. S. R. SEBASTIAN, M.C., Oxford & Bucks L.I.

Capt. J. D. BELGRAVE, M.C., Ox. & Bucks L.I., attd. R.A.F.

Capt. S. J. GRIFFIN, Oxford & Bucks L.I.

Capt. C. J. STEIN, South African Infantry.

Capt. R. C. MACPHERSON, R.F.A.

Capt. E. F. HARVIE, M.C., Gordon Highlanders.

Capt. E. H. COMBER-TAYLOR, R.A.F.

Sec.-Lt. P. L. CAHILL, Munster Fusiliers.

Lt. A. C. GILMOUR, Can. Rly. Troops, attd. R.A.F.

Lt. G. F. PAULING, M.C., Grenadier Guards.

Lt. W. H. R. CRICK, Dorset Regiment.

Sec. Lt. B. G. A. BELL, R.A.F.

Sec.-Lt. R. Van T. RANNEY, Grenadier Guards.

Lt. T. N. H. STRETCH, M.C., A.S.C., attd. M.G.C.

Lt. B. VAUGHAN, Australian Infantry.

Sec.-Lt. M. G. GUNN, R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. O. W. BERRY, K.O.S.B., attd. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. M. W. TAYLOR, M.C., Royal Irish Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lt. W. G. CROOK, Royal Fusiliers.

Portraits by Elliott & Fry, Bassano, Russell, Lafayette, Swaine, Speaight, and Walter Barnett.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

MAJOR VALENTINE FLEMING, Yeomanry, Unionist Member for South Oxfordshire since 1910, killed in action, had been serving since the early days of the war and won mention in despatches. Born in 1882, he was educated at Eton, where he rowed in the College Eight, and at Magdalene College, Oxford, where he also rowed for his College at Oxford and Henley and in the University Trial Eights. He was called to the Bar but did not practise.

Major Francis R. Gregson, died on active service, was a well-known Aberdeenshire laird and a member of the King's Bodyguard, Royal Scottish Archers. He served in the Sudan, 1884, in the Nile Expedition (Medal with three clasps and Khedive's decoration), and in the Sudan, 1898 (British Medal and Khedive's Medal with clasp). In the South African War he served with the Gordon Highlanders and, later, on the Headquarters Staff of the Cavalry Division (Queen's Medal, five clasps, and King's Medal, one clasp). In 1914 he went to France with the British Expeditionary Force, and at the time of his death was attached to the Australian Divisional Artillery. In previous years he was a captain in the Highland Light Infantry and, later, major in the City of London Imperial Yeomanry.

Major John Burgh Talbot Leighton, M.C., Scots Guards and Royal Flying Corps, was son and heir of Sir Bryan Leighton, Bart. Educated at Eton and Sandhurst, he was gazetted into the Scots Guards in 1912, and in 1914 was seconded to the R.F.C. In November, 1914, he flew to France, where he remained for nine months, and later was sent to Egypt, where he gained the Military Cross. He returned to England to take command of a squadron, and returned to the front in 1916.

Sec.-Lieutenant Harold Hughes, R.F.A., killed in action, son of the Rev. W. Hughes, of Hawnby Rectory, Helmsley, was educated at Christ's Hospital and Archbishop Holgate's Grammar School, York. In 1913 he went to St. Catherine's College, Cambridge, with a view to taking Holy Orders. An all-round athlete, he rowed for his College in the May Races of 1914 and at Henley. A member of the Cambridge O.T.C., he received his commission in December, 1914. He was at Loos and, later, was invalided home, but returned to the front in 1916.

Sec.-Lieutenant Stanley T. Collins, Lancashire Fusiliers, was elder son of Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Collins, of Hastings. He enlisted in the Artists Rifles in January, 1915, and in December of that year was given a commission in the Manchester Regiment. In July, 1916, he was transferred to the Lancashire Fusiliers, left for France in February, 1917, and on April 27th, while on patrol duty, received wounds of which he died.

Maj. A. L. McHUGH, Can. Railway Troops.

Maj. V. FLEMING, M.P., Yeomanry.

Maj. F. R. GREGSON, Att. Australian Div. Art.

Maj. J. B. T. LEIGHTON, M.C., Scots Guards and R.F.C.

Capt. H. E. R. HAMILTON, Can. Railway Troops.

Capt. R. T. PATEY, M.C., King's (Liverpool Regt.).

Capt. B. R. HEAPE, R.F.A.

Lieut. H. F. PICKER, M.C., R.E.

Capt. J. K. BOAL, Royal Irish Fusiliers.

Lieut. C. C. WATSON, North Midland Brigade.

Sec.-Lt. J. C. TREDGOLD, Royal Scots.

Sec.-Lt. A. C. VIGORS, Dub. Fus., att. R. Munster Fus.

Lieut. C. H. TURNER, Australian Pioneers.

Sec.-Lt. J. LOWRY, Shropshire L.I.

Lieut. D. S. BARCLAY, Scots Guards.

Sec.-Lt. H. HUGHES, R.F.A.

Sec.-Lt. H. ANSTEY, Rifle Brigade.

Sec.-Lt. F. RENSHAW, Sherwood Foresters.

Sec.-Lt. J. R. McCRINDLE, M.C., R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. S. T. COLLINS, Lancashire Fusiliers.

Portraits by Lafayette, W. H. Horne, and Brooke Hughes.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

CAPTAIN WALTER JOHNSON FORSTER, B.A. (Oxon.), of the East Lancashire Regiment, who fell in action on May 30th, 1917, was the only child of Mr. and Mrs. J. W. Forster, of 18, Mountfield Gardens, Tunbridge Wells. Born in 1893, he was educated at Tonbridge and Trinity College, Oxford. He was one of the earliest of the Trinity College men to send in his name for active service. In March, 1915, he was severely wounded, and returned to the front as captain last December.

Lieut.-General Robert George Broadwood, C.B., who died on June 21st, 1917, of wounds received in action, was fifty-five years of age. He had retired in 1913, but on the outbreak of the war was re-employed, and in September, 1914, given command of a division. He had seen service with the Dongola Expedition, 1896, and the Nile Expeditions of 1897 and 1898, and later in South Africa. From 1906-10 he was major-general, commanding troops in Southern China, and was gazetted lieut.-general in 1912.

Captain Henry Edward Stewart, of the Royal Sussex Regiment, who fell on June 1st, 1917, was the only son of Lieut.-Colonel and Lady Philippa Stewart. He was twenty-six years of age, and had been mentioned in despatches for distinguished service in the field.

Captain Cecil Aubrey Bradford, of the Yorkshire Regiment, attached to the Nigeria Regiment, was lost at sea on April 24th, 1917, while returning from Nigeria. The second son of Colonel Bradford, of Welparke, Lustleigh, he was born in 1886, and after passing through Wellington College and Sandhurst, was gazetted to his regiment in 1906. He saw service in Cameroon, 1914-15.

Captain M. L. Hilder, M.C., Royal Fusiliers, killed in action May 3rd, 1917, at the age of twenty-two, was a son of Mr. and Mrs. Edward Hilder, of 55, Wellington Road, Regent's Park, N.W. He received the Military Cross for leading his company to the capture of a strong enemy position, April, 1917.

Lieutenant Alan Gordon Harper, Royal Field Artillery, second son of Mr. Peter Harper, of Bromley, Kent, fell on June 1st, 1917. Educated at Dulwich and Magdalen College, Oxford, he had won considerable distinction as a botanist, and had been acting as Professor of Botany at Madras when war broke out and he applied for a commission.

Lieutenant John Edward Raphael, of the King's Royal Rifle Corps, who died on June 11th, 1917, of wounds received in action four days earlier, was the only child of Mrs. Harriet Raphael and the late Albert Raphael, of Hendon. An all-round athlete, he was a double Oxford blue, playing both football and cricket for his University.

Sec.-Lieutenant Henry Tennant, of the Dragoon Guards and Royal Flying Corps, who was killed on May 27th, 1917, was the eldest son of Mr. H. J. Tennant, M.P., ex-Under-Secretary of War. His age was nineteen.

Capt. R. D. ELLIS, Lincolnshire Regt.

Capt. W. J. FORSTER, East Lancashire Regt.

Lt.-Gen. R. G. BROADWOOD, C.B.

Capt. H. E. STEWART, Royal Sussex Regt.

Capt. LORIMER FINDLAY, H.L.I., att. R.F.C.

Capt. C. A. BRADFORD, Yorks Regt., att. Nigeria Regt.

Capt. M. L. HILDER, M.C., Royal Fusiliers.

Lieut. J. F. MANLEY, Canadian Infantry.

Lieut. L. H. GASS, Canadian Artillery.

Lieut. A. G. HARPER, R.F.A.

Lieut. R. C. STONE, R. Lanc. Regt., att. M.G.C.

Lieut. J. E. RAPHAEL, King's Royal Rifles.

Lieut. H. E. BRIDGE, Central Ontario Regt.

Lieut. P. H. G. PYE-SMITH, King's (Liverpool Regt.)

Sec.-Lt. A. W. JONES, H.A.C.

Sec.-Lt. J. B. BRADFORD, M.C., Durham L.I.

Sec.-Lt. P. T. LISTER, King's Own (Yorks. L.I.)

Sec.-Lt. T. C. S. MacGREGOR, Highland L.I., att. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. D. S. FLEMMING, Royal Lancaster Regt.

Sec.-Lt. H. TENNANT, Dragoon Guards and R.F.C.

Portraits by Lafayette, Bassano, Swaine, and Claude Harris.

THE MEMORIAL CROSS OF SACRIFICE ERECTED IN EVERY MILITARY CEMETERY IN FRANCE AND FLANDERS WHERE BRITISH SOLDIERS SLEEP.

To face page 3584

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL THOMAS ROBERT ALEXANDER STANNUS, Leinster Regiment, died of wounds, of Baltyboys, Blessington, co. Wicklow, and Earl's Court Square, was formerly a major in the 4th Battalion Leinster Regiment, and when war broke out was in the Special Reserve of Officers. He was re-employed with his old regiment in October, 1914, and in February, 1917, was appointed acting lieutenant-colonel in one of the Service Battalions. He served in South Africa with the Imperial Yeomanry, and was wounded; he had the Queen's Medal with three clasps.

Major Percy Robert Murdoch Collins, D.S.O., R.G.A., was the youngest son of Mr. Henry M. Collins, late general manager in Australasia of Reuter's, and now of the British Empire Club, St. James's Square. Educated at Cheltenham and Woolwich, he gained his commission in the R.G.A. in 1910, served for three years in China, and recalled to England at the outbreak of the war, joined the heavy siege battery, with which he went to the front in 1915. He had held the command for ten months before he fell in action. He was mentioned in despatches, and awarded the D.S.O. in the Birthday Honours List, 1917.

Captain Robert Cecil Knott, Northumberland Fusiliers, was son of Mr. John E. Knott, of Nesham Street, Newcastle-on-Tyne. Educated at the Royal Grammar School and Armstrong College, and a member of Durham University O.T.C., he enlisted in the 9th Northumberland Fusiliers—the Quaysiders' Company—in September, 1914, and was gazetted lieutenant on Christmas Eve of the same year. He was promoted lieutenant in April, 1915, and captain in June, 1915, and was killed in action in August, 1916.

Lieutenant Thomas Henry Cox, Scottish Rifles, was the son of Mr. and Mrs. Cox, of Plassey Street, Penarth. He enlisted in the Scottish Rifles in 1915, and after serving seven months in France was sent home to qualify for a commission. Passing with honours, he was gazetted to his old regiment, and had only returned to France about a fortnight when he was killed. Prior to the war he was studying for the profession of civil engineer, and had won a scholarship in that branch of science at the South Wales and Monmouthshire University College at Cardiff.

Second-Lieutenant Norman Molyneux Goddard, South Staffordshire Regiment, died of wounds, was the second son of Mr. and Mrs. Arthur Goddard, of Windsor House, Denmark Hill. He first went to the front in 1915 as a private in the Sportsman's Battalion, and after some months of service came home for cadet training and was gazetted to the South Staffordshire Regiment. In his thirty-seventh year at the time of his death, he had been a valued contributor for twenty years to the papers of the Amalgamated Press, for which he wrote a large number of stories under various pen-names, notably that of Mark Darran.

Lieut.-Col. T. R. A. STANNUS, Leinster Regt.

Lieut.-Col. G. E. B. DOBBS, R.E.

Maj. J. P. H. OUCHTERLONY, D.S.O., R.E.

Major P. R. M. COLLINS, D.S.O., R.G.A.

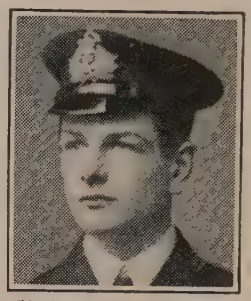
Capt. F. H. MOORE, R.G.A., attd. A.O.D.

Eng.-Lieut. E. SMITH, R.N., H.M.S. Vanguard.

Lieut. S. UPCHER, R.N., H.M.S. Vanguard.

Com. R. G. FANE, R.N., H.M.S. Dartmouth.

Lieut. C. H. DUKE, R.N. H.M.S. Vanguard.


Lieut. O. H. STOEHR, R.N., H.M.S. Vanguard.

Capt. R. C. KNOTT, Northumberland Fusiliers.

Capt. E. A. WICKSON, Canadian Inf., attd. R.F.C.

Lieut. T. H. COX, Scottish Rifles.

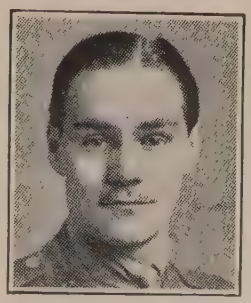
Sec.-Lieut. M. G. WARLAND, Wilts Regt.

Lieut. F. S. CARSE, Australian Field Artillery.

Sec.-Lieut. C. B. CAIRNES, R.F.A.

Sec.-Lieut. M. O. WALSH, K.O.Y.L.I.

Sec.-Lieut. N. M. GODDARD, South Staffs Regt.


Sec.-Lieut. R. M. NEILL, R.F.C.

Sec.-Lieut. H. S. GRAND, Suffolk Regt.

Portraits by Lafayette, Chancellor, Swaine, Russell, Brooke Hughes, Elliott & Fry.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN ARTHUR TANNER, killed in action, was born in 1858, the son of the late J. Tanner, of Poulton, Marlborough, and of Mrs. Tanner. He entered the Army in 1877, was promoted lieutenant-colonel in 1906, and retired in April, 1914, being on the General Staff, India, from 1910 to 1913. He served in the Mahsud Waziri Expedition in 1881, and four years later in the Sudan Expedition, being awarded the medal with clasp and the bronze star. He received the D.S.O. for his services in Burma, 1885-88, and he also took part in the Chitral Expedition in 1895. In 1897 he again saw active service on the North-West Frontier of India. At the time of his death he was chief engineer of a corps at the front.

Captain Douglas S. Howard Keep, M.C., Bedfordshire Regiment, killed in action, was second son of the late John Howard Keep and Mrs. Keep, of Abbots Langley, Hertfordshire. Born at Sydney, N.S.W., he was educated at Leighton Park School, Reading, and Wadham College, Oxford, where he was a member of the O.T.C. and rowed for his college. Enlisting in August, 1914, he received a commission in the Bedfordshire Regiment in the following September, and got his step in the spring of 1915. Proceeding to the front with his regiment he obtained his captaincy in September, 1916, in which month he received the Military Cross for gallantry under fire.

Surgeon Edward Rayner, R.N., killed in the explosion in the Vanguard, was elder son of the late Edward Rayner, of Beechlands, Wadhurst, Sussex, and Mrs. Rayner, at Queen's Hotel, Upper Norwood. Born in 1886 he was educated at the South-Eastern College, Ramsgate, and Pembroke College, Cambridge. He received his medical training at Cambridge and St. Thomas's Hospital, London, qualifying as M.R.C.S. and L.R.C.P. in 1912, in which year he also took the degrees of M.B. and B.C., Cantab. He was House Surgeon at St. Thomas's while working for his F.R.C.S., which he won in 1913. He was House Surgeon in the Isolation Block at his hospital when the war broke out, and at once offered his services to the Admiralty. He served at Gallipoli with the Royal Naval Divisional Engineers, after which he was invalided for five months. In the autumn of 1916 he was appointed to the Vanguard.

Captain William Eric Nixon, K.O.S.B., attached R.F.C., eldest son of the Rev. W. H. Nixon, Vicar of Winster and later Senior Chaplain of the Forces, was born in 1897 and educated at King William's College, Isle of Man. He passed out of Sandhurst in November, 1915, and was gazetted second-lieutenant, being promoted captain in November, 1916. He was twice mentioned in despatches and three times wounded in action. Reported missing, he was subsequently reported to have been killed while leading his flight.

Brig.-Gen. J. A. TANNER, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., R.E.

Maj. C. H. HEWETSON, Gloucestershire Regt.

Maj. L. J. COULTER, D.S.O., Australian Engineers.

Capt. D. S. H. KEEP, M.C., Bedfordshire Regt.

Capt. RANDOLPH BANKS, M.G.C., attd. Egyptian E.F.

Capt. H. P. OSBORNE, New Brunswick R., attd. R.F.C.

Lieut. J. C. HANSON, New Brunswick R., attd. R.F.C.

Surg. E. RAYNER, R.N., H.M.S. Vanguard.

Lieut. HAROLD HAMER, R.F.C.

Capt. W. E. NIXON, K.O.S.B., attd. R.F.C.

Lieut. M. A. P. NOBLE, R.F.A.

Lieut. P. R. J. GRINHAM, Middlesex Regt.

Lieut. N. E. WALKER, Canadian Infantry.

Lieut. G. L. HARVEST, M.C., London Regt.

Lieut. W. E. LOCKHART, Canadian Eng., attd. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lieut. R. TARDUGNO, Royal Welsh Fus., attd. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lieut. A. F. GIBSON, Leinster Regt., attd. R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. A. H. BLOOMFIELD, Gloucestershire Regt.

Sec.-Lt. R. A. F. GRANTHAM, Lincolnshire Regt.

Lieut. R. G. MASSON, E. Ontario Regt., attd. R.F.C.

Portraits by Elliott & Fry, Bassano, Lafayette, and H. Walter Barnett

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

BRIGADIER-GENERAL ALISTER F. GORDON, who died of wounds, was the third son of the late W. G. Gordon, of Drumdevan, Inverness. He was born in 1872, joined the Gordon Highlanders in 1890, and had seen much service in India, West and South Africa. He went to the front at the beginning of the war, was mentioned in despatches in October, 1914, and appointed to command a brigade.

Lieut.-Colonel Eric Beresford Greer, M.C., of the Irish Guards, who was killed in action, went out to France in August, 1914, as a lieutenant, was one of the first recipients of the Military Cross, and in January last was gazetted to a lieutenant-colonelcy at the early age of twenty-four.

Captain Sir John Swinnerton Dyer, M.C., of the Scots Guards, who fell in action, was the only son of the late Sir Thomas Dyer, eleventh baronet. He had served in Belgium and France in the early days of the war.

Captain Noel Godfrey Chavasse, V.C., M.C., who died of wounds in France, was born in 1884, one of the four sons of the Bishop of Liverpool. At Oxford he was well known as an athlete, and before the war he was medical officer of the Royal Southern Hospital, Liverpool. He joined the R.A.M.C. (T.F.), and became a medical officer in the King's (Liverpool Regiment). He received the Victoria Cross for heroism in saving twenty badly wounded men under heavy fire.

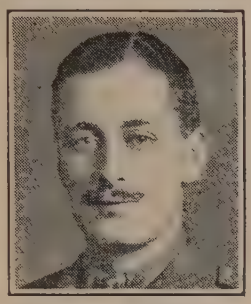
Second-Lieutenant A. H. W. Beatty, of the Manchester Regiment, who was killed in action on July 31st, 1917, was the eldest son of Dr. Bensley Beatty, of Harrow. When war broke out he joined the Civil Service Rifles as a private. After being at the front some time he was invalided home, and then, after a period in a cadet school, gained his commission in the Manchester Regiment. He had taken part in the fighting at Festubert and Loos, and, recognised as a gallant and capable officer, was marked for promotion. He was a contributor to "Answers" and other papers.

Lieutenant Norman Appleby, M.M., of the Canadian Infantry, who was killed at the age of twenty-nine, on March 29th, 1917, in the neighbourhood of Vimy Ridge, was the son of Mr. John Appleby, of Harrogate. Lieutenant Appleby joined the Second Canadian Contingent as a private, gained early non-commissioned promotion, and had already won the Military Medal and a bar to the same when, in 1916, he was given a commission.

Lieutenant the Hon. Esmond Elliot, of the Scots Guards, who fell in action at the age of twenty-two, on August 5th, 1917, was the younger son of the late Earl of Minto, K.G. At the outbreak of the war he received his commission in the Yeomanry, and in 1916 acted as A.D.C. to the Major-General Commanding the Guards Division, being later transferred to the Scots Guards.

Second-Lieutenant Harry Erskine Tyser, of the Black Watch, who fell in action on April 9th, 1917, had been the donor, in December, 1915, and January, 1916, of two gifts of £3,000 to the Army Council for the provision of guns and machine-guns, expressing the wish that his name should not be associated with the gifts.

Brig.-Gen. A. F. GORDON, C.M.G., D.S.O.


Lt.-Col. E. B. GREER, M.C., Irish Guards.

Actg.-Com. F. H. HALL, Royal Navy.

Lieut. I. S. JEFFERSON, Royal Navy.

Capt. Sir J. S. DYER, M.C., Scots Guards.

Capt. C. D. BAKER, Grenadier Guards.

Capt. P. C. P. TATTERSALL, London Regt.

Capt. N. G. CHAVASSE, V.C., M.C., R.A.M.C.

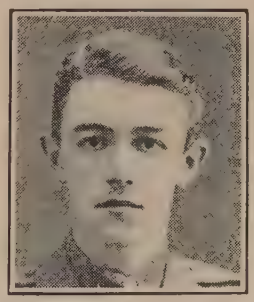
Lieut. G. D. PERRIN, South Staffs Regt.

Lieut. W. C. MORTON, Royal Field Artillery.

Lieut. A. H. W. BEATTY, Manchester Regt.

Lieut. W. E. W. COTTLE, Grenadier Guards.

Lieut. N. APPLEBY, M.M., Canadian Infantry.


Lieut. the Hon. E. ELLIOT, Scots Guards.

Lt. Hon. A. E. G. A. KEPPEL, Rifle Brigade.

Sec.-Lieut. C. W. WALLIS, Middlesex Regt.

Lieut. F. A. DINAN, Royal Field Artillery.

Sec.-Lieut. H. E. TYSER, Black Watch.

Sec.-Lieut. H. W. WELDON, Royal Irish Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lieut. A. E. FENTON, Royal West Kent Regt.

Portraits by Barnett, Lafayette, Swaine, Russell, Bassano, and Hughes.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL HENRY VICTOR MOTTET DE LA FONTAINE, D.S.O., killed in action, was born in 1872, and had his commission in the East Surrey Regiment in 1893. Major in 1911, he was appointed to the command of a Service Battalion of the East Surreys in October, 1915. A graduate of the Staff College, he had seen a good deal of Staff service. He took part in the Relief of Ladysmith, and fought at Vaal Kranz, Tugela Heights, and Pieter's Hill. He was twice mentioned in despatches, and had six bars to the Queen's and the King's Medals. He was appointed to the Distinguished Service Order in the present war.

Major C. B. Stratton was eldest son of the late T. H. M. Stratton, Cramlingham House, Northumberland. Educated at Hawick School and Wren's, he passed into the I.C.S. in 1899, and served for some years in the Federated Straits Settlements. Taking up rubber planting, he was at Negri Sembilan when war broke out, and, coming home, rejoined a reserve battalion of the Berkshire Regiment, exchanging into the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry in November, 1915.

Captain Hubert O'Connor, M.C., was eldest son of Mr. Charles O'Connor, F.R.C.S.I., of The Grove, Celbridge, Co. Kildare. Educated at Clongowes Wood and Trinity College, Dublin, he was called to the Irish Bar, and became a member of the Leinster Circuit. In 1910 he unsuccessfully contested East Limerick as an Independent Nationalist. When war broke out he joined the Trinity College O.T.C., and obtained his commission in the K.S.L.I. in 1915. In June, 1916, he was awarded the Military Cross for conspicuous bravery, going out three times under heavy shell fire to arrange for the carrying in of the wounded. After a special course of training for senior officers at Aldershot, April, 1917, he returned to his regiment, and died August 17th, 1917, of wounds received the previous day.

Captain Geoffrey Robert Wallace, M.C., was the second son of Mr. and Mrs. L. A. Wallace, of Buckingham Gate, and Hawford House, Worcestershire. Educated at Uppingham, he obtained a commission in the Worcestershire Regiment in 1914, and proceeded to France in July, 1915. He won the Military Cross in 1916 and the bar early in 1917.

Lieutenant Max A. E. Cremetti, killed while flying at the London Aerodrome, was third son of Mr. and Mrs. Eugene Cremetti, of Avenue Road, Regent's Park. Educated at Harrow, he was among the first to volunteer when war broke out, and was appointed a despatch-rider. He was present at the Retreat from Mons and wounded at the Battle of the Marne, where he won the D.C.M. and his commission, and was mentioned many times for his bravery. He then joined the R.F.C., and was again wounded while flying over the enemy's lines on the Somme.

Lt.-Col. H. V. M. DE LA FONTAINE, D.S.O., East Surrey R.

Major C. B. STRATTON, Duke of Cornwall's L.I.

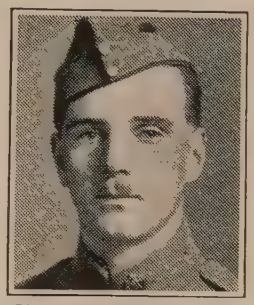
Captain A. L. HARRIS, Loyal North Lancashire Regt.

Capt. H. O'CONNOR, M.C., King's Shropshire L.I.

Capt. G. R. WALLACE, M.C., Worcestershire Regt.

Captain G. L. ALEXANDER, London Regt.

Lt. J. HAMSHERE, D.C.M., Canadian Field Artillery.


Lieut. M. A. E. CREMETTI, R.F.C.

Lieut. W. E. DAVIES, Alberta Regt., attd. R.F.C.

Flight-Lieut. C. V. ARNOLD, R.N.

Sec.-Lieut. H. H. WIGLEY, K.O. (Royal Lancaster Regt.)

Lieut. G. W. CALLENDER, Worcestershire Regt.

Lieut. J. KAY, Can. Scottish Field Artillery.

Lt. & Adj. H. L. SLINGSBY, M.C., K.O.Y.L.I., attd. D.C.L.I.

Lieut. V. UZIELLI, R.F.A.

Sec.-Lieut. J. C. LEE, Royal Berkshire Regt.

Sec.-Lieut. A. H. G. CHATTERTON, R.F.A.

Sec.-Lieut. A. E. DUFFIELD, Middlesex Regt.

Sec.-Lieut. G. ALLGOOD, Royal Dublin Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lieut. R. H. SECRETAN, Hertfordshire Regt.

Portraits by Lafayette, Russell, Chancellor, Bassano, Elliott & Fry.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUT.-COLONEL H. T. KAY ROBINSON, D.S.O. and bar, Royal Sussex Regiment, was the youngest son of the late Rev. W. Kay Robinson, rector of Walwyn's Castle, Pembrokeshire. Educated at St. Edmund's School, Canterbury, and at the beginning of the war on the staff of the Clergy Mutual Assurance Society and a Fellow of the Institute of Actuaries, he joined the Inns of Court O.T.C. and was gazetted to the Royal Sussex Regiment. He went to France in March, 1916, and in little more than a year was in command of a battalion. He was mentioned in despatches on several occasions, and was awarded the D.S.O. for gallantry at Schwaben Redoubt, and the Bar for fine leadership and courage at Tower Hamlets.

Lieut.-Colonel Charles Kenneth James, D.S.O. and Bar, was younger son of Dr. C. A. James, of the Pollard Elms, Upper Clapton, whose elder son was killed early in the war. Educated at Cheltenham and Caius College, Cambridge, he was holding an appointment in Shanghai when war was declared. Returning to England at once, he obtained a commission in the Border Regiment, and served in Gallipoli, being wounded at Anafarta. In July, 1916, he went to France, and was awarded the D.S.O. for fine work at Thiepval. In March, 1917, he was appointed lieutenant-colonel commanding a battalion of the West Yorkshire Regiment. He was awarded the Bar to the D.S.O. for distinguished service at Cambrai last October, and had been mentioned six times in despatches.

Major Charles Clark, M.C., R.F.A., was the eldest son of Mr. James Clark, of Moor Hall Cottages, Thornley, Bishop's Stortford. Born in 1884 and educated at the village school, he left work on the land at an early age and enlisted in the R.H.A., serving both in South Africa and in India, where he was serving as a sergeant when this war broke out. He took up a commission in the R.F.A. and won the M.C. in Gallipoli. Transferred to another front he received rapid promotion, becoming major a few weeks before being killed in action in April, 1918.

Captain Ronald Sinclair Kennedy, M.C., R.A.M.C., was only son of Dr. J. W. Kennedy, of Sydney, N.S.W. Educated at Tonbridge School, Christ's College, Cambridge, and Guy's Hospital, he entered the Egyptian Medical Service in 1913, becoming ophthalmic surgeon to the Dadahlia Province Hospital, engaged exclusively on trachoma, one of the scourges of the native population. Later he was appointed inspector of the Ankylostoma Hospitals, where he did much brilliant research work. He gained the M.C. for conspicuous bravery on the Somme, and was attached to a casualty station near the line, where he met his death on April 17th, 1918.

Lt.-Col. C. J. D. COOK, D.S.O., N.Z. Ex. Force.

Lt.-Col. J. V. P. O'DONAHOE, D.S.O., Quebec Regt.

Lt.-Col. F. B. DENNIS, D.S.O., K.O.S.B.

Lt.-Col. H. T. K. ROBINSON, D.S.O., Royal Sussex Regt.

Lt.-Col. C. K. JAMES, D.S.O., West Yorks Regt.

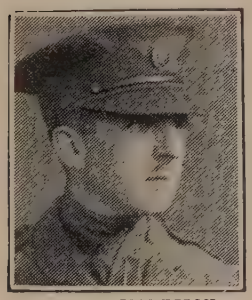
Maj. C. CLARK, M.C., R.F.A.

Capt. G. P. ROCH, Yeo., attd. K.S.L.I.

Capt. H. D. E. RALFE, Australian Art., attd. A.F.C.

Capt. R. S. KENNEDY, M.C., R.A.M.C.

Capt. H. E. K. STRANGER, M.C., R. Guernsey L.I.


Capt. N. V. HARRISON, R.A.F.

Capt. C. Y. PEASE, Yeo., attd. West Yorks Regt.

Capt. G. C. CUTHBERTSON, M.C., R.A.F.

Actg. Lt.-Col. A. L. WRENFORD, Worcestershire Regt.

The Rev. R. A. P. COLBORNE, C.F.

Lt. A. W. LEECH, Northumberland Fusiliers.

Lt. H. WYNN JONES, M.G. Squadron, Cavalry Div.

Sec.-Lt. C. W. JANES, R.A.F.

Lt. G. B. BURRIDGE, M.C., R.F.A.

Lt. FRANCIS L. MOND, R.F.A., attd. R.A.F.

Portraits by Elliott & Fry, Swaine, Lafayette, and Russell.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

MAJOR-GENERAL RICHARD HUTTON DAVIES, C.B., who died on May 9th, 1918, had been in the New Zealand forces, held a commission in the Hawere Mounted Rifles, and went to South Africa with the first New Zealand contingent, subsequently commanding three other contingents from the Dominion, the first oversea officer to be given command of a composite column in the Boer War. He was twice mentioned in despatches and awarded the Queen's Medal with five clasps, the King's Medal with two, and the C.B. In 1906 he was appointed Inspector-General of the New Zealand Forces and a member of the Council of Defence. In 1907 he came to England to the Staff College at Camberley, and was given command of the 6th Infantry Brigade at Aldershot, the first oversea officer to command a British brigade. He commanded it in the early days of the war, and was invalided to England in October, 1914. On recovery he was promoted major-general and given command of the 20th Division, New Armies, in France. Again invalided in 1916, he was appointed to the training centre at Cannock Chase. He was twice mentioned in despatches during the war.

Lieut.-Colonel Hugh Acland Troyte, of Huntsham Court, Bampton, North Devon, was educated at Eton, and served for six years with the 20th Hussars. In 1899 he retired to his estate and devoted himself to public and philanthropic work. At the outbreak of war he commanded a Territorial battalion of the Devonshire Regiment, to which he had belonged for many years, and took it to India and Mesopotamia. After a year at home, invalided, he again volunteered, and was appointed area commandant in Italy and in France, and was killed by a shell while evacuating the civil population of a French village.

Captain Thomas George Deane Burdett, M.C., Royal Welsh Fusiliers, was son of the late Mr. G. Deane Burdett, bank manager at Rhyl. Admitted a solicitor, he was a member of the University of Wales O.T.C. at Aberystwyth, and was given a commission in the Royal Welsh Fusiliers in September, 1914. He saw much service in Gallipoli, Egypt, and Palestine, and was killed in action in the Holy Land. He was mentioned in despatches in March, 1917, and in April, 1918, was awarded the Military Cross.

Captain John Eric Trevor-Jones, M.C., Rifle Brigade, was educated at Downside School and Clare College, Cambridge. He was gazetted to the 6th Rifle Brigade, and went to France in July, 1916, being attached to the 10th Rifle Brigade, of which he became captain and adjutant. He was awarded the M.C. in March, 1917. Six weeks before his death in action he was attached to the brigade in which his brother was serving when killed at the Battle of the Somme on July 1st, 1916.

Maj.-Gen. R. H. DAVIES, C.B.

Lt.-Col. P. A. CLIVE, M.C., Grenadier Guards.

Lt.-Col. H. A. TROYTE, Area Commandant.

Maj. H. P. BERESFORD POER, R.F.A.

Maj. G. P. NUNNELEY, M.C., Bedfordshire Regt.

Capt. T. G. D. BURDETT, M.C., Royal Welsh Fus.

Capt. J. E. TREVOR-JONES, M.C., Rifle Brigade.

Maj. J. S. CHALMERS, Highland Light Infantry.

Capt. E. BUDD, M.C., Irish Guards.

Capt. A. WALSH, M.C., South Lancs Regt.

Lt. H. A. CAMERON, Hampshire Regt.

Lt. M. HUNTER, Lancers.

Lt. O. ROBINSON, R.N.V.R.

Lt. R. R. PLAISTOWE, Norfolk Regt.

Lt. R. N. PERCIVAL-MAXWELL, Lancers.

Lt. W. W. OGILVY, Hussars.

Sec.-Lt. P. St. Q. BRAYSHAW, R.F.A.

Lt. A. W. FORBES, D.S.O., R.N.

Sec.-Lt. G. E. LASCELLES, Rifle Brigade.

Sec.-Lt. H. T. R. EVANS, Royal Warwickshire Regt.

Portraits by Elliott & Fry, Brooke Hughes, Lafayette, Bassano, Swaine, Russell, and Claude Harris.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

BRIGADIER-GENERAL ROBERT CLEMENTS GORE, C.B., C.M.G., was son of the late Nathaniel Gore. Educated at Haileybury and Sandhurst, he entered the Army in 1886, obtaining his commission in the Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders. He served with distinction in this war, in the course of which he was awarded the C.B. and the C.M.G. and mentioned in despatches.

Viscount Ipswich, killed while flying in England, was son and heir of the Earl of Euston, and grandson of the Duke of Grafton. On the outbreak of war he enlisted in the East Kent Regiment, and shortly afterwards was given a commission in the Coldstream Guards, and went to France in November, 1914. In the spring of 1915 he was invalided home with shell shock, but returned to France in the summer of 1916. In the autumn of 1917 he returned to England to train as an observer in the R.F.C., and although considerably above the recognised age-limit, passed on to a pilot's course, and met his death almost at the end of his period of training.

Captain E. W. Monk enlisted in the R.F.A. in September, 1914, and received his commission in the London Regiment in July, 1915, proceeding to France shortly afterwards. He took part in the fighting at Loos and Hulluch, and at the Somme in 1916, where he was slightly wounded. Transferred to the R.F.C. in August, 1916, he was promoted to flight-commander, with the rank of captain, early in 1918. On the occasion when he met his death he was chased by five German machines, and, fighting all the way, had almost succeeded in landing his machine when he was shot through the head, and failing on the controls, caused his machine to nose-dive to earth.

Second-Lieutenant W. Hope Hodgson, R.F.A., was the second son of the late Rev. Samuel Hodgson, and the author of "The Boats of the Glen Carrig," "The Night Land," "Men of the Deep Waters," and other books. His early days were spent in the merchant service, where he gathered material for many of his sea-stories. A notable all-round sportsman, he was awarded the Royal Humane Society's Medal for saving life at sea. At the outbreak of war he was living on the South Coast of France, and returning to England, joined the University of London O.T.C., and received his commission in the R.F.A. in 1915. In 1916 he was gazetted out of the Army as the result of a serious accident, but he never rested until he had passed the medical board as fit, and obtained another commission in the R.F.A., in March, 1917. He saw much active service round Ypres last October, and was killed in action in April, 1918.

Brig.-Gen. R. C. GORE, C.B., C.M.G.

Lt.-Col. J. A. MILNE, D.S.O., Australian Infantry.

VISCOUNT IPSWICH, Coldstream Guards & R.F.C.

Lt.-Col. J. T. R. MITCHELL, D.S.O., R. Scots & A. & S. Hrs.

Lt.-Col. G. E. HOPE, M.C., Grenadier Gds., attd. Lancs F

Major St. J. S. QUARRY, Royal Berks Regt.

Major W. A. CRAIES, Australian Infantry.

Major S. RIGG, Border Regiment.

Major S. J. B. LACON, R. Warwick Regt., attd. A.S.C.

Capt.& Adjt. C. M. WILLIAMS, R.G.A.

Capt. E. W. MONK, London Regt., attd. R.F.C.

Capt. G. E. CARDEW, Devon Regt., attd. Dur. L.I.

Capt. A. L. MILLAR, Rifle Brigade.

Capt. J. A. TUZO, Royal Sussex Regt.

Capt. D. COOKE, Black Watch.

Lieut. T. H. L. ADDIS, M.C., Royal Dublin Fusiliers.

Lieut. W. RUSSELL, R.E. and R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. W. H. HODGSON, R.F.A.

Lieut. D. G. ROUQUETTE, R.F.C.

Engr.-Sub-Lt. H. J. HARRIS, R.N.R.

Portraits by Bassano, Elliott & Fry, Lafayette, and Speaight.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL JOHN HENRY STEPHEN DIMMER, V.C., M.C., K.R.R.C., killed in action, was born in 1884, and after serving six years in the ranks received his commission in the 60th Rifles in 1908. He served with the West African Regiment until 1914, when he rejoined his parent regiment and went to France with the B.E.F. Mentioned in Sir John French's famous October despatch, he was next awarded the Victoria Cross for continuing to serve his machine-gun during the attack at Klein Zillebeke, November 12th, 1914, until he had been shot five times, even then continuing at his post until his gun was destroyed. Later distinguished service won him the Military Cross, and in October, 1917, he was given the command of a Territorial battalion of the Royal Berkshires.

Lieutenant-Colonel Ralph Gerard Alexander Hamilton, Master of Belhaven, R.F.A., formerly 3rd Hussars, killed in action, was the only son of Lord Belhaven and Stenton. Born in 1883, and educated at Eton and Sandhurst, he went to the front with the 7th Division, was present at the First Battle of Ypres, and in 1915 was given the command of a battery of field artillery, which he commanded at Loos and on the Somme. In 1917 he was present at the Battle of Messines, and at the Second Battle of Ypres was given the command of a brigade of field artillery and mentioned in despatches.

Major Claud Frederick Thomas Lindsay, R.F.A., was elder surviving son of Lieutenant-Colonel H. E. M. Lindsay, late R.E., and Mrs. Lindsay, of Ystrad Mynach, Glamorgan, and of Glasnevin House, Dublin, and the third of their sons to fall in the war. Born in 1892, and educated at Wellington and Woolwich, he went to France with the B.E.F. in August, 1914, took part in the retreat from Mons, and served continuously on the western front until he was killed in action on Easter Day, 1918.

Major-General Edward Feetham, C.B., C.M.G., killed in action, was the eldest son of the Rev. W. Feetham, Penrhos Raglan, Monmouthshire. Educated at Marlborough, he entered the Royal Berkshire Regiment in 1883, and had a long record of distinguished service in the Sudan (Medal with two clasps and Bronze Star), and in South Africa (Queen's Medal with five clasps). For services in the war he was mentioned in despatches four times, and awarded the C.B., the C.M.G., and the Italian Order of St. Maurice and St. Lazarus.

Brig.-Gen. H. T. FULTON, C.M.G., D.S.O., N.Z. Army.

Lt.-Col. F. H. A. WOLLASTON, D.S.O., Rifle Brigade.

Lt.-Col. J. H. S. DIMMER, V.C., M.C., K.R.R.C.

Lt.-Col. H. S. C. PEYTON, M.C., Rifle Brigade.

Lt.-Col. Hon. R. G. A. HAMILTON, Master of Belhaven, R.F.A

Major C. F. T. LINDSAY, R.F.A.

Maj.-Gen. E. FEETHAM, C.B., C.M.G.

Maj. P. K. GLAZEBROOK, D.S.O., M.P., Yeomanry.

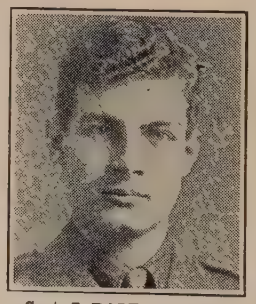
Brig.-Gen. R. B. BARKER, D.S.O. & Bar, late R.W. Fus.

Maj. F. M. KING, K.R.R.C., attd. L.N. Lancs Regt.

Capt. H. DUNKERLEY, R.A.M.C.

Capt. J. R. MOORE, M.C., Cheshire Regt., attd. M.G.C.

Actg.-Cmdr. J. S. SCHAFER, R.N.

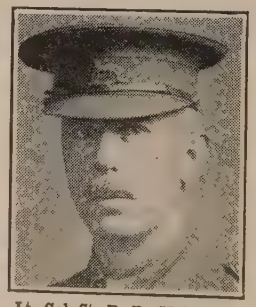

Capt. J. BALFOUR, M.C., Scots Guards, attd. R.E.

Capt. G. H. S. KENT, R.E.

Lt.-Col. H. W. FESTING, Durham Light Infantry.

Lt. W. H. SNYDER, Canadian M.G.C.

Lt. Sir JOHN ANSON, Bart., R.N.


Lt.-Col. St. B. R. SLADEN, The Queen's (R.W. Surrey R.)

Lt. N. H. COGHILL, Scots Guards, attd. M.G.C.

Portraits by Lafayette, Elliott & Fry, Bassano, and Russell.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL SPENCER ACKLOM, D.S.O., M.C., Highland Light Infantry, attached Northumberland Fusiliers, son of Lt.-Col. Spencer Acklom, late Connaught Rangers, was educated at St. Paul's School and Sandhurst, and received his commission in 1901. After serving at Aldershot, Jersey, and in India, he was seconded as adjutant of a battalion of the Highland Light Infantry, and went with it to France in November, 1914, and served there continuously until killed in action in April, 1918. In July, 1916, he was placed in command of a battalion of the Northumberland Fusiliers. He was awarded the Military Cross for gallantry at Richebourg in May, 1916, the Distinguished Service Order for gallantry at La Boisselle in July of the same year, was mentioned four times in despatches, and had been recommended for a brigade.

Lieutenant-Colonel John Evelyn Carmichael Darley, Hussars, was younger son of Mr. and Mrs. Wellington Darley, of Violet Hill, Bray, Co. Wicklow. He obtained a commission in the 5th Lancers in 1899, in which regiment he served throughout the South African War (Queen's Medal and three clasps, King's Medal and two clasps). In December, 1901, he was promoted to a captaincy in an hussar regiment. He was A.D.C. to General Sir Archibald Hunter, Governor of Gibraltar from 1910 to 1913, and promoted to major. He went to France in August, 1914, took part in the retreat from Mons, and the First and Second Battles of Ypres, and in April, 1916, became colonel of his regiment. His only brother, Commander Arthur Tudor Darley, R.N., H.M.S. Good Hope, was killed in action at the Battle of Coronel.

Major David Nelson, V.C., R.F.A., died of wounds, was son of the late Mr. G. Nelson, of Deraghland, Co. Monaghan. A sergeant in the famous I. Battery, R.H.A., he won the Victoria Closs at Néry, September 1st, 1914, during the retreat from Mons, when he was severely wounded. Granted a commision for his service in the field, he was appointed instructor at Shoeburyness, and returned to the front in December, 1917.

Captain F. H. B. Selous, M.C., Royal West Surrey Regiment, attached R.F.C., was the eldest son of the great hunter and explorer. Captain F. C. Selous, D.S O., on the first anniversary of whose death in action in Africa he was killed, at the age of nineteen. He was educated at Rugby and Sandhurst, and went to the front in July, 1916. He was awarded the M.C. for gallantry in action and the Italian Silver Medal for valour in the field.

Lieutenant the Hon. Harold Fox Pitt Lubbock, Grenadier Guards, was son of the late Lord Avebury. Educated at Eton and Cambridge, he served in Gallipoli as adjutant of the West Kent (Queen's Own) Yeomanry until the evacuation. In July, 1917, he exchanged into the Grenadier Guards, went to France in December, and was killed by a shell on April 4th, 1918

Lt.-Col. S. ACKLOM, D.S.O., M.C., H.L.I., attd. Northd. Fus.

Lt.-Col. J. E. C. DARLEY. Hussars.

Lt.-Col. O. St. L. DAVIES. Manchester Regt.

Lt.-Col. A. H. JAMES, D.S.O., Northd. Fus., attd. W. Yorks.

Major J. J. BANHAM, Royal Sussex Regt.

Major D. NELSON, V.C., R.F.A.

Major N. S. THORNTON, Rifle Brigade.

Capt. F. H. B. SELOUS, M.C., R.W. Surrey Rgt., attd. R.F.C.

Capt. & Adjt. K. N. BION, M.C., Sherwood Foresters.

Capt. C. A. FRY, Essex, attd. Suffolk Regt.

Capt. C. B. M. HODGSON, Queen's (R.W. Surrey Regt.)

Lieut. B. J. HODSON, Royal Irish Regt.

Lieut. E. MACLAY Scots Guards.

Lieut. Hon. H. LUBBOCK, Grenadier Guards.

Lieut. C. H. DE WAEL, R.F.A.

Lieut. R. B. STEELE I.A.R.O., attd. R.F.C.

Lieut. W. H. D. DE PASS, Middlesex Regt.

Sec.-Lieut. C. H. BOVILL, Coldstream Guards.

Lt. Hon. R. N. BAKEWALL, Leinster Regt.

Lieut. J. W. GUNNING, Wilts Regt.

Portraits by Lafayette, Bassano, Walter Barnett, Elliott & Fry, Chancellor, and Russell.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

MAJOR FREDERICK HENRY JOHNSON, V.C., Royal Engineers, killed in action, was born in 1890, the son of Mr. Samuel Rogers Johnson, of Streatham. He was educated at Whitgift Middle School and St. Dunstan's, Catford, and continued his studies at the Battersea Polytechnic and the University of London, where he took the B.Sc. degree. A member of the London University O.T.C. before the war, he obtained his commission in the Royal Engineers in October, 1914, when he was appointed to a field company (New Army). He was still a second-lieutenant when he was awarded the Victoria Cross for most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty in the attack upon Hill 70 on September 25th, 1915. He was with a section of his company of the Royal Engineers, and although wounded in the leg stuck to his duty throughout the attack, led several charges on the German redoubt, and at a very critical time, under heavy fire, repeatedly rallied the men who were near him. By his splendid example and cool courage he was mainly instrumental in saving the situation, and in establishing firmly his part of the position which had been taken. He remained at his post until relieved in the evening.

Major Charles Henry Green, South Staffordshire Regiment, attached to the Nigeria Regiment, who died of wounds on November 8th, 1917, was the fourth son of Sir Frederick and Lady Green, of Hainault Lodge, Chigwell Row. Educated at Harrow and Sandhurst, he entered the South Staffordshire Regiment in 1901, served in the West African Frontier Force from 1908 to 1912, and proceeded to France with the 7th Division in October, 1914, being seriously wounded in the First Battle of Ypres, and mentioned in despatches. On recovering, he went to Cameroon, and thence to another front, where he had taken part in all the fighting since January, 1917.

Temporary-Captain and Adjutant Thomas Harvey Henderson, M.C., Rifle Brigade, was the younger and only surviving son of the late William Henderson, of Windsor Terrace, West Glasgow. He had served with distinction, and was appointed adjutant of his battalion in May, 1917.

Second-Lieutenant Robert Cameron Jackson, killed in action, was born in 1882, and after coming to London in 1902 entered the publishing business, working with Messrs. Hutchinson & Co. and Messrs. J. M. Dent & Sons, and in 1908 becoming one of the original directors of Sidgwick & Jackson, Limited. He attested under the Derby scheme, and when called up in March, 1916, enlisted in the London Scottish. At the end of that year he obtained a commission in the Machine Gun Corps, and left for the front in July, 1917, to fall in action on September 23rd.

Major F. H. JOHNSON, V.C., R.E.

Major C. H. GREEN, S. Staffs, attd. Nigeria Regt.

Capt. H. L. EDWARDS, R.N.

Capt. W. O. BELL-IRVING, M.C., Hussars.

Capt. G. H. MORGAN, Royal Welsh Fusiliers.

Capt. & Adjt. T. H. HENDERSON, M.C., Rifle Brigade.

Capt. G. H. DARBYSHIRE, R.F.A.

Capt. H. S. BENJAMIN, Worcestershire Regt.

Capt. J. J. BEDDOW, Essex Regt.

Lieut. C. C. HORSLEY, North Staffs Regt.

Lieut. R. W. HARGREAVES, Welsh Guards.

Lieut. C. W. SHERWOOD, Royal Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lieut. R. R. RIGGS, R.F.C.

Sec.-Lieut. W. CREAGH, Leinster Regt.

Sec.-Lieut. C. P. JOSCELYNE, Suffolk Regt.

Sec.-Lieut. L. TUDSBERY, R.F.A.

Sec.-Lieut. A. C. BOROUGH, Welsh Guards.

Sec.-Lieut. R. C. JACKSON, Machine Gun Corps.

Sec.-Lieut. J. H. JEHN, Yeomanry.

Sec.-Lieut. R. C. DRUMMOND, Coldstream Guards.

Portraits by Bassano, Swaine, Russell and Lafayette.

Britain's Roll of Honoured Dead

BRIGADIER-GENERAL CECIL GODFREY RAWLING, C.M.G., C.I.E., entered the Army in 1891. He saw service on the North-West Frontier of India in 1897-98, and later served with the Tibet Mission. In 1903 he surveyed a great part of Western Tibet, and in 1904-5 commanded the Gartok Expedition across Tibet, receiving the thanks of the Government of India. He was awarded the Murchison Bequest by the Royal Geographical Society in 1909. In 1909-11 he was Chief Survey Officer, and afterwards led the British Expedition to Dutch New Guinea, and was thanked by the Dutch Government. On the outbreak of war he was appointed to the command of the 6th Somerset Light Infantry, and was gazetted temporary brigadier-general in June, 1916.

Major Evelyn Achille de Rothschild was the second son of the late Leopold de Rothschild. Born in 1886, he had a long association with his county Yeomanry, and saw a good deal of service with the first line of his regiment, in which he was promoted major in June, 1916. He was a keen rider to hounds, a good polo player, and owner of a few race-horses, while, after his father's death, he carried on with his brother the famous Southcourt Stud, at Leighton Buzzard.

Captain the Hon. Neil Primrose, M.P., was born in 1882, the younger son of the Earl of Rosebery. Educated at Eton and Oxford, he entered the Diplomatic Service, and in 1910 was elected member for the Wisbech Division of Cambridge. For a few months before the formation of the Coalition Government he was Under-Secretary for Foreign Affairs, afterwards became Military Secretary to the Ministry of Munitions, and in December, 1916, Chief Liberal Whip under the National Government. Shortly afterwards he rejoined the regiment of Yeomanry in which he was a captain, and died of wounds received in the fighting in Palestine, the fourteenth Member of Parliament to fall in this war.

Lieutenant Christian Harold Ernest Boulton, second son of Captain Harold Boulton, C.V.O., was born in 1897, educated at Stonyhurst, and joined the Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders in August, 1914. He went to the front in May, 1915, and fought in the Battle of Loos and other engagements. Invalided home in 1916, he was appointed A.D.C. to the Governor of New South Wales, and in March, 1917, A.D.C. to Sir Eric Geddes. Eventually he rejoined his battalion and was killed in action. A contributor to various magazines, Lieutenant Boulton was also part author of "Elegant Edward," produced at the Haymarket Theatre, 1916.

Second-Lieutenant George McFarquhar Kelly-Lawson, R.G.A., killed in action, was the elder son of Mr. Dermot Kelly-Lawson, of Hampden Estate, Jamaica. Born in 1896, he was educated at George Watson's College, Edinburgh, and at King's School, Canterbury. He passed into Woolwich in April, 1915, and was gazetted in October of that year.

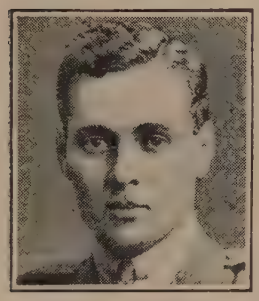
Brig.-Gen. C. G. RAWLING, C.M.G., C.I.E.

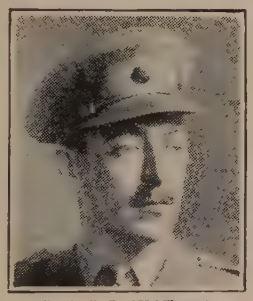
Lt.-Col. A. D. MURPHY, D.S.O., M.C., Leinster Regt.

Major EVELYN DE ROTHSCHILD, Yeomanry.

Capt. the Hon. NEIL PRIMROSE, M.P., Yeomanry.

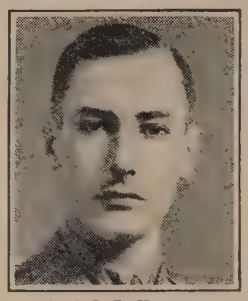
Lieut.-Col. A. C. THYNNE, D.S.O., Yeomanry.

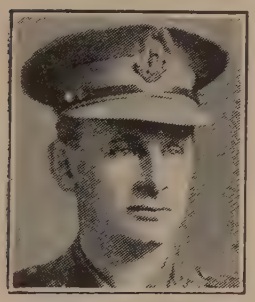

Major A. D. NEWTON, R.F.A.


Capt. C. L. WATERS, R. Berks, attd. Nigeria Regt.

Eng.-Lt.-Comdr. W. H. CLEGHORN, R.N.

Capt. J. W. EGERTON-GREEN, Rifle Brigade.


Capt. L. B. HODGE, London Regt.


Capt. A. B. HOARE, Loyal North Lancs Regt.

Capt. R. V. J. R. AGIUS, London Regt.

Lieut. C. H. E. BOULTON, Q.O. Cameron Highlanders.

Lt. R. S. M. INCH, M.C., Norfolk Regt.

Lieut. A. JOHNSTON, R.F.C.

Sec.-Lt. A. H. LANG, Grenadier Guards.

Lieut. C. S. HASLAM, Yeo., attd. W. Yorks Regt.

Sec.-Lieut. R. BEVIR, Royal Fusiliers.

Sec.-Lt. G. McF. KELLY-LAWSON, R.G.A.

Sec.-Lieut. J. BENNETT, R.E.

Portraits by Lafayette, Brooke Hughes, Russell, Bassano, and Swaine.

DIARY OF THE LAST PHASE OF THE GREAT WAR

Progress of Events in all Theatres of the War from Beginning of the Fifth Year to the Signing of Peace

1918

AUG. 4.—French reach the Vesle at several points east of Fismes; latter taken by Americans.

Announced Allies capture Mudjuga Island from Bolshevists.

AUG. 5.—German rearguards withdraw to north bank of Vesle. Zeppelin raid on East Anglian coast; one airship brought down in flames, and another damaged.

AUG. 6.—**General Foch appointed a Marshal.**

AUG. 7.—East of Braine, French and Americans cross the Vesle.

AUG. 8.—**Great Allied Attack.**—The British Fourth Army and the French First Army attack on a twenty-mile front from Avre River, at Braches, north to neighbourhood of Morlancourt. Greatest depth of advance is about seven miles. Prisoners total 7,000.

AUG. 9.—Allied battle-front extended, and the attack is renewed. On front of British Fourth Army, Canadian and Australian troops capture line of outer defences of Amiens.

English and American troops attack in angle between the Somme and the Ancre, and take Morlancourt. Total prisoners captured by Allies exceed 24,000.

French attack south of Montdidier and take 2,000 prisoners.

AUG. 10.—French develop attack south of Montdidier, which falls into their hands, and progress on whole front between Avre and Oise, penetrating farthest south into wooded region between Rivers Matz and Oise.

British advance their line north of the Somme.

AUG. 11.—Germans heavily attack British positions at Lihons, but are repulsed.

French gain ground between the Avre and the Oise. South of the Avre they occupy Marquevillers and Grivillers and reach line Armancourt-Thilleloy.

AUG. 12.—British line advanced in neighbourhood of the Roye Road and east of Fouquescourt. South of Somme our troops capture Broyart. French capture Gury.

Announced British in Siberia join the Czechs on the Ussuri front.

AUG. 13.—French progress to north-east of Gury, gain footing in park of Plessis de Roye and reach Belval.

Announced 28,000 prisoners captured by French First Army and British Fourth Army since morning of August 8.

AUG. 14.—Germans evacuate forward positions at Beaumont-Hamel, Serre, Puisieux-au-Mont, and Bucquoy.

French progress between Matz and Oise, and capture Ribécourt, and advance north and east of Lassigny Massif.

AUG. 15.—**French complete capture of the Lassigny Massif.**

Canadian troops capture villages of Damery and Parvillers (between Chaulnes and Roye).

Announced British troops hold the road from Bagdad through Persia to Enzeli, on the Caspian Sea; from Enzeli a British detachment has been sent by sea to Baku, where it is aiding Armenians and other pro-Entente elements in defending town against the Turks.

United States severs relations with the Bolshevists.

AUG. 16.—Continued progress towards Roye, and between latter and Lassigny.

AUG. 17.—British progress on a front of nearly a mile north of Lihons.

French progress north and south of the Avre, capturing trenches of Cæsar's Camp in region west of Roye.

AUG. 18.—British carry out successful operation between Vieux Berquin and Bailleul, advancing to depth of from 1,000 to 2,000 yards. The village of Oultersteene is captured.

New French Blow.—Attacking in the angle of the Oise and Aisne the French army under General Mangin pushes forward to a point less than a mile south of Carlepont. The plateau to west of Nampcel is occupied, and Nouvron-Vingre captured.

AUG. 19.—French, completing successes between Carlepont and Fontenoy, capture Morsain; total prisoners since August 18 number 2,200. Between the Matz and the Oise they capture Fresnières and reach western outskirts of Lassigny.

British advance in Merville sector and enter that town.

AUG. 20.—**Magnin's New Blow.**—General Mangin's Tenth French Army attacks on a front of 16 miles from region of Bailly as far as the Aisne. On the left it reaches southern borders of Forest of Ourscamps, in centre it captures Lombray, on the right the villages of Vezaponin, Tartiers, and Courtil are captured. The average advance is 2½ miles, and over 8,000 prisoners are taken.

British gain further ground astride the Lys, taking l'Epinette. North of Merville, Vierhouck and La Couronne are taken.

AUG. 21.—**General Byng's Attack.**—British Third Army opens an offensive on a ten-mile front, north of the Ancre and advances three miles; Beaucourt, Bucquoy, Ablainzeville, and Moyenneville taken in first stage of advance, and later Achiet-le-Petit and Courcelles.

French enter Lassigny. Farther south they reach outskirts of Ochiry Ourscamps, and enter Cuts, Camelin, and Pontoise. Nearer to Soissons they capture Laval.

British air raids on Cologne, Frankfort, and Trèves.

AUG. 22.—**Recapture of Albert.**—British attack between Somme and Ancre, and advance two miles on front of over six miles. Albert is reoccupied.

AUG. 23.—British front active from south of Arras to Lihons. Among many villages captured are: Gomiécourt, Achiet-le-Grand, Bihucourt, and the ridge overlooking Irles.

Australians capture Bray.

AUG. 24.—**Great British Advance in Somme Sector.**—By the night British troops are astride the Thiepval Ridge and take La Boisselle, Ovillers, Mouquet Farm, Thiepval, Grandcourt. New Zealand troops drive towards Bapaume taking Loupart Wood, Grévillers and Biefvillers. British Guards on extreme left take St. Léger and Henin-sur-Cojeul.

AUG. 25.—British enter Neuville Vitasse, and master whole of road from Albert to south of Bapaume, taking Martinpuich, Le Sars, Warlencourt, Mametz, and Mametz Wood. Total prisoners since August 21 exceed 17,000.

General Mangin pressing his advance on line Crécy-au-Mont to Chavigny.

AUG. 26.—**New Battle of Arras.**—British attack along both banks of the Scarpe, and, north of the river, reach outskirts of Rœux; south of the river Canadian divisions take Orange Hill, Wancourt, and Monchy. On the Canadian right high ground between Croisilles and Héninel is captured, and below this Bazentin-le-Grand. South, again, Australians advance north and south of Somme, and take Suzanne and Cappy.

Austrians claim to have retaken Berat, in Albania.

AUG. 27.—British hold outskirts of Bapaume, and capture Rœux, Gavrelle, Longueval, and Vermandovillers.

French capture Roye.

AUG 28.—British take Croisilles, Hardecourt, and Curlu; French take Chaulnes and Nesle.

AUG. 29.—**Fall of Bapaume and Noyon.**

AUG. 30.—British take Bullecourt and Heudecourt, but lose

1918

them again. Later Bullecourt is retaken. French enter Chévilly and British enter Bailleul.

M. Lenin shot at in Moscow.

AUG. 31.—**British regain Kemmel Hill.**

British capture 57,318 German prisoners and 657 guns during August.

SEPT. 1.—**Australian troops capture Peronne.** Sailly-Saillisel, Saillisel, Bouchavesnes, and Rancourt taken. On the Lys front Neuve Eglise is captured.

SEPT. 2.—**German "Switch" Line Broken.**—Canadians break through the Drocourt-Quéant line on front of six miles. They capture Cagnicourt and Villers; prisoners total 10,000. General Mangin takes Neuilly.

SEPT. 3.—South of the Lys River British take Richebourg-St. Vaast and establish themselves between La Bassée road and Estaires, which is occupied.

SEPT. 4.—Canal du Nord forced. British force passage of the Tortille River and Canal du Nord, north of Moislains. Northern outskirts of Havrincourt Wood, east of the canal line, are reached. West bank is gained opposite Démicourt and Boursies Mœuvres is occupied, and Hill 63 and Ploegsteert captured.

French compel German retreat between Nord Canal and the Oise and from the line of the Vesle.

SEPT. 5.—British advance north and south of Péronne and north-east of Wulverghem. French reach the Aisne between Condé and Vieil-Arcy.

Japanese troops enter Khabarovsk.

SEPT. 6.—French occupy Chauny, Ham, and Tergnier. British capture southern and western portions of Havrincourt Wood.

SEPT. 7.—British reach line Beauvois-Roisel-Havrincourt Wood. French force passage of St. Quentin Canal at Pont de Tugny and St. Simon.

SEPT. 8.—British enter area of defensive systems constructed by them prior to German March offensive on southern portion of battle-front. Prisoners taken during first week of September exceed 19,000.

French carry Vaux, Fluquières, and Happencourt.

SEPT. 9.—British capture Gouzeaucourt Wood, and French push across Crozat Canal.

SEPT. 10.—French progress east of Crozat Canal, and British north-east of Neuve Chapelle.

SEPT. 11.—British capture Attilly, Vendelles, and Vermand. French defeat counter-attack to south-east of Roupy.

SEPT. 12.—**Great American Offensive.**—American First Army, assisted by French units, attacks in the St. Mihiel sector, and advances five miles; 8,000 prisoners taken.

British capture Havrincourt and Mœuvres with 1,500 prisoners, and capture whole of Holnon Wood. French occupy Savy.

Liner Galway Castle torpedoed; over 154 missing.

SEPT. 13.—Complete success of General Pershing's First American Army; the St. Mihiel salient flattened out; prisoners increased to 15,000, and 200 guns taken.

Austria issues Peace Note.

SEPT. 14.—British progress south and north of Holnon Wood. British evacuate Baku.

SEPT. 15.—British capture Maissemy, and advance astride the Ypres-Comines Canal. French capture Vailly and Mont des Singes.

Victory in Balkans.—Serbian and French troops carry Bulgarian positions in mountainous zone of the Dopropolje, and take 800 prisoners.

SEPT. 16.—Slight advance in neighbourhood of Ploegsteert and east of Ypres. French progress north-east and east of Sancy.

Gotha raid on Paris.

Franco-Serbian advance, on front of 16 miles, reaches depth of five miles. Over 4,000 prisoners and 30 guns taken.

SEPT. 17.—Franco-Serbians reach the Cerna.

SEPT. 18.—British Third and Fourth Armies attack between Holnon to Gouzeaucourt, storm outer defences of Hindenburg line, particularly before Le Verguier, Villeret, and Hargicourt, and west and south-west of Bellicourt. Lempire taken; 6,000 prisoners. French capture Savy Wood and Fontaine-les-Clercs.

Serbian cavalry reach Poloshko; another cavalry force approaching Prilep; Bulgarians in full retreat. British and Greek troops attack west and east of Lake Doiran.

Japanese occupy Blagoveshtchensk.

SEPT. 19.—**Great British attack in Palestine,** between Rafat and the sea. Infantry advances 12 miles to Tul Keram, while cavalry advance east of Shechem and north-east on Afuleh and Beisan; 8,000 prisoners.

Serbians within eight miles of the Vardar and along the Cerna.

1918

British gain ground north of Gauche Wood; over 10,000 prisoners to date.

SEPT. 20.—French take Benay, south of St. Quentin.

In Palestine General Allenby's cavalry occupies Nazareth, Afuleh, and Beisan.

SEPT. 21.—**The Turkish Debacle.**—British infantry advances in Palestine to the line Beit Dejan-Samaria-Bir Asur, while the cavalry operate south from Jenin and Beisan. The prisoners total 18,000, and 120 guns are captured.

Franco-Serbian armies reach the Vardar in direction of Negotin.

SEPT. 22.—The Victory in Palestine.—British seize passages of Jordan at Jisr ed Damieh. The Seventh and Eighth Turkish Armies cease to exist; 25,000 prisoners and 260 guns counted.

Bulgarians retreat on 100-mile front, embracing Lake Doiran in east and Monastir in west. Allies take Ghevgeli.

SEPT. 23.—French reach the Oise about three miles north of La Fère.

Turks retreat east of the Jordan. In north British cavalry occupy Haifa and Acre.

French carry Prilep.

SEPT. 24.—**Bulgarians retreat in disorder** to Strumitza, harassed by pursuing Allies.

French capture Francilly-Selency.

SEPT. 25.—British cavalry occupy Tiberias, Semakh, and Es Samrah, on Sea of Galilee; also Amman, on Hedjaz Railway; 45,000 prisoners and 265 guns taken to date. British capture Selency.

SEPT. 26.—**Franco-American attack in Argonne** on 40-mile front, from the middle of Champagne to the Meuse; French, under General Gouraud, advance on the left several miles; American First Army, under General Pershing, advances to an average depth of seven miles, taking Montfaucon and Varennes.

British enter Strumitza.

SEPT. 27.—**Battle for Cambrai.**—British attack from Sauchy l'Estrées south to before Gouzeaucourt. Bourlon Wood, Beaucamp, and Flesquières captured. The Canal du Nord is crossed, and Sauchy l'Estrée and Sauchy Cauchy are taken; prisoners total over 10,000.

Americans take Véry, Epionville, and 8,000 prisoners.

In Macedonia the whole Belashitza range is in Allies' hands. Serbians take Deli Carmen.

SEPT. 28.—**Allied Blow in Flanders.**—Belgian and British offensive from Dixmude to Ploegsteert. Belgians capture most of the Houthulst Forest and 4,000 prisoners.

British capture Gouzeaucourt, Marcoing, and Fontaine-Notre-Dame. French capture Somme-Py and heights north of Fontaine-en-Dormois, and Malmaison Fort.

Bulgarian envoys arrive at Salonika.

SEPT. 29.—British and American troops attack north-west of St. Quentin. Main Hindenburg defences on eastern bank of Scheldt Canal stormed by the 46th Division. During last three days over 22,000 prisoners captured on St. Quentin-Cambrai front.

French occupy Forest of Pinon and reach the Ailette. They cross the St. Quentin-La Fère road, and advance 1½ miles between Ailette and the Aisne.

Allies in Belgium take Passchendaele, Gheluvelt, and Messines; 6,000 prisoners are captured.

SEPT. 30.—**Bulgaria accepts Allied terms and surrenders.**

General Berthelot's army attacks Germans between Vesle and the Aisne. British-Belgian advance reaches the Roulers-Menin road. The number of prisoners taken by British and Arabs in Palestine since Sept. 18 is 60,000. British capture 66,300 prisoners in France during September.

OCT. 1.—**French troops capture St. Quentin.**

North of St. Quentin British take Levergies and Estrées, and win high ground south of Le Catelet and village of Vendhuile. The Rumilly-Beaurevoir-Fonsomme defences are broken.

British occupy Damascus; over 7,000 prisoners taken.

OCT. 2.—German retreat between the Vesle and the Aisne, and from Armentières to the south towards Lens. Fleurbaix is taken. French capture Challerange, in Champagne.

Italian and British warships raid Durazzo.

OCT. 3.—In Champagne French carry crest of Blanc Mont and, north-west of Rheims, Cornicy.

German retreat on Lille. Germans continue retreat on a 20-mile front from Armentières to Lens, evacuating Armentières, La Bassée, and Lens. British advanced troops reach general line—Avion, Vendin-le-Vieil, Hautay, and Herlies—and are east of Bois Grenier.

North of St. Quentin British attack on an eight-mile front, and advance three miles. Sequehart is taken and the Scheldt Canal crossed, and Le Catelet and Gouy taken.

1918

Announced Prince Max of Baden appointed German Chancellor.

Oct. 4.—British advance towards Lille, occupying Wavrin and Erquinghem. French and American troops advance between Rheims and Verdun.

German Note to President Wilson inviting opening of peace negotiations.

Oct. 5.—British advance east of the breach in the Hindenburg line and take Beaurevoir and Aubencheul.

King Ferdinand of Bulgaria abdicates in favour of his son, Crown Prince Boris.

Germans retreat on 28-mile front towards the Suippe and the Arnes.

Oct. 6.—French pursuit of enemy along whole of Suippe front. British gain Fresnoy.

Allied troops take 80,000 prisoners to date in Palestine.

Oct. 7.—Heavy fighting continues on the Suippe to north and north-east of Rheims. French follow up German retreat, cross the river near Bertricourt and capture the village. Across the Aisne, Berry-au-Bac is recaptured.

Beirut occupied by French, Sidon by British.

Oct. 8.—**Great British Victory.**—British, French, and American troops attack in Picardy on 21-mile front from Cambrai to St. Quentin, inflicting a heavy defeat on enemy; over 10,000 prisoners and 200 guns captured. General Gouraud takes Isles-sur-Suippe.

President Wilson demands explanation of Prince Max's Note.

Oct. 9.—**Fall of Cambrai to British.**—French advance five miles east of St. Quentin, and in valley of Aisne take Grand-Ham and Lançon.

Oct. 10.—British capture Le Cateau.

Irish mail boat Leinster torpedoed; 451 missing.

Oct. 11.—**Widespread German Retreat.**—In Champagne French pressure compels enemy to abandon on a 37-mile front all positions north of the Suippe and the Arnes. Farther to east French progress and occupy Machault and many villages. They enter Vouzièrs.

British capture Fessies, and advance north and south of River Sensée.

Oct. 12.—General advance of the French continued. La Fère captured.

British progress towards valley of the Selle and reach outskirts of Douai.

Serbians capture Nish.

German Government accepts President Wilson's terms.

Oct. 13.—**French capture Laon.** British cross Sensée Canal at Aubigny-au-Bac.

Germans abandon Chemin des Dames, St. Gobain Forest, and line of the Suippe.

Oct. 14.—Battle in Belgium.—Belgian, French, and British forces attack from Dixmude to Wervicq. Roulers and Iseghem are taken, also Cortemarck Station, 15 miles from Bruges; over 8,000 prisoners captured.

Italians occupy Durazzo.

Oct. 15.—Further Allied Advance in Belgium.—British capture Menin; over 12,000 prisoners taken in two days.

President Wilson's Reply to German Note of October 12 published.

Oct. 16.—British, fighting east of Ypres, capture Comines and Welverghem.

French and Belgians take Ingelmunster and Lichtervelde.

To south-west of Lille British cross the Haute Deule Canal.

Oct. 17.—**Ostend, Lille, and Douai** occupied by allied forces. Vice-Admiral Sir Roger Keyes lands at Ostend; British Fifth Army occupies Lille. British, American, and French attack between Le Cateau and Bohain, and advance three miles; over 4,000 prisoners taken.

Oct. 18.—British and American troops continue advance and enter Bazuel.

British occupy Roubaix and Tourcoing.

Zeebrugge and Bruges occupied.

Oct. 19.—Allied advance between the Oise and Le Cateau continued.

French storm the Hunding Stellung.

French reach the Danube in region of Vidin (Bulgaria).

Oct. 20.—British force passage of Selle River five miles from Valenciennes, and gain high ground overlooking Valley of the Harpies; 3,000 prisoners.

East of Vouzièrs French reach outskirts of Perron.

Oct 21.—German reply to President Wilson published.

Oct. 22.—Troops of the British First Army enter suburbs of Valenciennes, and north of it penetrate into Raismes Forest.

French and Belgian forces attack along line of Lys Canal towards Ghent; canal is crossed and 1,100 prisoners taken.

Oct. 23.—Big British advance between the Scheldt and Le Cateau. The First Army pushes through the Raismes Forest and takes Bruay.

Oct. 24.—British resume attack on whole front between the Sambre-et-Oise Canal and the Scheldt, and overcome enemy's resistance. Over 7,000 prisoners since morning of 23rd.

President Wilson's reply to German Note of October 21 published.

Allied offensive in Italy on Trentino front and on the Middle Piave.

Oct. 25.—British progress on front south of River Scheldt; Sepmeries and Querenaing captured.

French progress on eight-mile front on the Souch, and on 17-mile front between the Souch and the Aisne, near Château Porcien.

British reach Kirkuk.

Oct. 26.—Italians advance in Grappa sector, and hold Asolone and Pertica. They take 4,000 prisoners.

British occupy Aleppo.

General von Ludendorff resigns.

Oct. 27.—The Tenth Italian Army, under Lord Cavan, attacks on the Piave, which is crossed at island of Grave di Papadopoli. Over 9,000 prisoners taken.

British occupy Muslimie Station.

General Marshall's eastern column approaches outskirts of Altun Keupri, 60 miles south-east of Mosul.

Oct. 28.—**Austria-Hungary Capitulation.**—Austria-Hungary, in reply to President Wilson's Note of October 18, declares herself ready to negotiate a separate armistice.

British take Kalat Shergat, on Tigris.

Oct. 29.—Great Italian advance. Passage of Monticano, north of Oderzo, by Tenth Army; Mt. Cosen and Conegliano captured; 33,000 prisoners.

Oct. 30.—Surrender of Turkish Army on Tigris after battle near Kalat Shergat; 7,000 prisoners.

Oct. 31.—**Sweeping Defeat of Austria.**—Italians completely break down resistance of Austrians, who are in full retreat from Asiago plateau to the sea; prisoners exceed 50,000. Austrians cross Italian fighting-line for purpose of obtaining an armistice.

Surrender of Turkey.—An armistice comes into operation at noon. Terms include free passage for Allied Fleets through Bosphorus to Black Sea; occupation of forts in Dardanelles and Bosphorus necessary to secure their passage, and immediate repatriation of all allied prisoners of war.

Nov. 1.—British attack on six-mile front and reach the southern outskirts of Valenciennes. Franco-American troops advance between Aisne and Meuse.

Count Tisza, formerly Austro-Hungarian Foreign Minister, murdered in Vienna.

Serbians reoccupy Belgrade.

Nov. 2.—Franco-American attack makes great progress; Semuy and southern bank of Canal des Ardennes captured.

Fall of Valenciennes to British.

Von Lettow-Vorbeck's force, marching into Rhodesia, attacks frontier post of Fife.

Nov. 3.—Italian troops and naval forces land at Trieste.

Austria Surrenders.—General Diaz, Italian Commander-in-Chief, signs an armistice, to take effect at 3 p.m., Nov. 4.

Nov. 4.—British, with Debeney's army on their right, begin great offensive on thirty-mile front from the east of Valenciennes to outskirts of Guise. Landrecies is captured, and over 10,000 prisoners and 200 guns.

Franco-American attack between Aisne and Meuse, opened on November 2, completely successful. Argonne cleared of enemy.

Italians report that since October 24 Allied Armies have captured 300,000 prisoners and 5,000 guns.

Nov. 5.—Germans in full retreat in the west; British press on, occupying Forest of Mormal and Le Quesnoy. French occupy Guise and capture Sains. Between Aisne and Meuse they are over the Ardennes Canal. Continued American advance.

Marshal Foch announced as being in supreme strategical direction of all forces operating against Germany on all fronts.

Nov. 6.—Text of armistice terms between Allied Powers and Austria-Hungary published.

Great German retreat continues from the Scheldt to the Meuse.

President Wilson's Note to Germany conveying decision of Versailles Conference as to armistice, also stating two qualifications of the terms already laid down.

Americans reach Sedan.

Nov. 7.—British advance five miles, entering Avesnes, taking Bavai, and reaching Haumont, three miles from Maubeuge.

Announced Kiel and Hamburg in hands of committees

1918

of workmen and soldiers. Part of German Fleet is flying the Red Flag.

German armistice delegates at Marshal Foch's Headquarters.

Nov. 8.—Armistice terms handed to German delegates.

Prince Max of Baden resigns as Chancellor.

Revolution movement spreading in Germany.

British take Condé and Maubeuge.

Nov. 9.—**Abdication of the Kaiser,** who takes refuge in Holland.

Herr Ebert, a Majority Socialist, becomes Imperial Chancellor.

French capture Hirson.

Nov. 10.—British reach Mons.

Revolution in Berlin.

Nov. 11.—**Canadians capture Mons.**

Hostilities Suspended.—Armistice between Allies and Germany signed at 5 a.m.; hostilities cease at 11 a.m.

At suspension of hostilities British troops had reached the line—Franco-Belgian frontier east of Avesnes, Jeumont, Givry, four miles east of Mons, Chievres, Lessines, Grammont.

Allied forces on the Dwina defeat Bolshevists.

Nov. 12.—Coalition Ministry formed in Germany, consisting of the two Socialist Parties.

Abdication of Emperor Charles of Austria.

Nov. 13.—Allied Fleet arrives off Constantinople.

Admiralty announces H.M.S. Audacious sunk after striking a mine off North Irish coast on October 27, 1914.

Nov. 14.—General Election fixed for December 14.

British Labour Party, by majority of 1,307,000 votes, decides to "terminate the conditions under which the Party entered the Coalition."

Allied troops in the west begin a forward movement along the whole front.

German force from German East Africa surrenders.

Nov. 15.—British naval representatives meet German delegates off Rosyth to arrange for carrying out of naval terms of armistice.

Nov. 16.—King and Queen attend a Thanksgiving Service of Free Churches at Albert Hall.

Mr. Lloyd George opens Government election campaign at Central Hall. In stating the outlines of the Government's appeal for renewed confidence, he said the first necessity was that it, through the Prime Minister, should represent the country and Empire at the Peace Conference with full authority.

Nov. 17.—Allied Armies begin forward movement to Rhine. The Second French Army under General Hirschauer enters Mulhouse.

Thanksgiving Services held in all churches throughout the country.

British and Russian troops occupy Baku.

Nov. 18.—British Second and Fourth Armies continue their march; Charleroi is occupied.

Belgians enter Brussels.

Nov. 19.—King and Queen of the Belgians enter Antwerp; French troops enter Metz.

King George delivers Historic Message to Empire to both Houses of Parliament.

Nov. 20.—First instalment of German submarines, consisting of twenty, surrendered to British off Harwich.

Nov. 21.—**Surrender of German Fleet.**—In accordance with naval conditions of the armistice the first and main instalment of the German High Sea Fleet surrenders to Admiral Beatty off the Firth of Forth. The surrendered ships include: Six battle-cruisers, ten battleships, eight light cruisers, two mine-layers, and forty-nine destroyers.

Prorogation of Parliament.

Constantinople occupied by French troops.

Nov. 22.—**King Albert re-enters Brussels.**

British reach line of the River Ourthe.

Nov. 23.—Announced Mr. Clynes, Food Controller, and Lord Robert Cecil resign from the Ministry.

American Third Army reaches German frontier.

Mr. McAdoo, U.S. Secretary of the Treasury, resigns.

Nov. 24.—**British reach German frontier** immediately north of Duchy of Luxemburg.

Nov. 25.—Official entry of Marshal Foch into Strasbourg.

British mine-sweepers leave port to clear a passage from Kattegat to the Baltic for British squadron which is to proceed to Kiel.

Nov. 26.—Announced total naval casualties to November 11 are 39,766, and for Mercantile Marine 17,956.

Bolshevists invade Baltic Provinces and take Pskoff.

Nov. 27.—Announced Belgium now clear of German troops. French armies over the German frontier.

1918

Nov. 28.—King George arrives in Paris.

Kaiser formally abdicates.

Nov. 29.—Mr. Lloyd George at Newcastle makes emphatic statement about punishment of Germans responsible for war crimes.

King Nicholas of Montenegro deposed.

Nov. 30.—**Belgian Royal Family enter Liege.**

Dec. 1.—**Marshal Foch and M. Clemenceau arrive in London,** and are greeted with great enthusiasm. American troops occupy Treves.

Dec. 2.—Allied Conference in London.

British warships arrive at Libau.

Dec. 3.—Allied Conference ends.

Dec. 4.—**President Wilson sails from America** to France to discuss with the Allies the terms of peace.

British squadron under Admiral Browning arrives at Wilhelmshaven.

Nomination day for the General Election, which Mr. Lloyd George says will be decided on punishment of enemy for offences, provision for returned soldiers and sailors, and other measures bearing on the war.

H.M.S. Cassandra mined and sunk in Baltic; 11 missing.

Dec. 5.—Mr. Lloyd George issues statement of policy and aims. He states definitely that the Kaiser must be prosecuted "for a crime which has sent millions of the best young men in Europe to death and mutilation"; that the Allies have accepted principle that Central Powers must pay the cost of war; a commission of experts to be set up to report on best method of exacting indemnity.

Admiralty announces Goeben surrendered and is interned in Bosphorus, together with all Turkish warships.

Dec. 6.—**British troops enter Cologne.**

At Berlin soldiers arrest the Soviet, which action leads to rioting.

Dec. 7.—Belgian cavalry occupy Meusz and Crefeld.

Announced from Paris that Marshal Foch has informed German delegates that blockade must be maintained, and that freedom of communication between the occupied Rhine lands cannot be allowed.

Dec. 8.—Units of the Third American Army reach the line Meckenhiem-Kempenich.

British advanced troops reach the Rhine between Godesberg and Cologne. British cavalry enter Bonn.

Dec. 9.—Third American Army reaches the Rhine from Rolandseck to Brohl.

Dec. 10.—**British Naval Commission arrives at Hamburg** in order to inspect thirty British merchant ships there.

King George returns to London from France and Belgium.

Emir Feisul, third son of King of Hedjaz, arrives in England.

Dec. 11.—Belgian troops reach the line Viersen-Dülken.

H.M.S. Hercules, with Allied Naval Commission on board, accompanied by two destroyers, arrives in Kiel Harbour.

Dec. 12.—Announced that Major-General W. G. H. Salmond, D.S.O., has flown from Cairo to India.

Reported that the German General von Tesny, formerly Military Governor of Belgian Luxemburg, has been arrested at Trèves for his responsibility for the execution of 112 inhabitants of Arlon in 1914.

British squadron enters Reval.

Dec. 13.—**President Wilson at Brest.**

American troops cross the Rhine and occupy Coblenz bridge-head.

Dec. 14.—**General Election held.**

Senhor Sidonio Paes, President of Portuguese Republic, assassinated.

Armistice Renewed.—A treaty is signed at Treves prolonging armistice until January 17. It will be extended, if Allied Governments approve, until conclusion of a preliminary peace. A condition is added that Allies reserve right to occupy neutral zone from Cologne bridge-head to Dutch frontier. British demand surrender of battleship Baden instead of armoured cruiser Mackensen.

Dec. 15.—Disturbances break out at Dresden owing to food troubles. Five people killed and fourteen wounded.

Dec. 16.—General Botha arrives in London.

Poland breaks off relations with Germany.

Freedom of Paris conferred on President Wilson.

Announced British squadron in Gulf of Finland bombards Bolshevist forces invading Esthonia, 60 miles east of Reval.

Dec. 17.—Bolshevist troops cross the Dwina near Frederickstadt.

Dec. 18.—Announced from Berlin that Bolshevist advance is assuming a menacing character.

Dec. 19.—**Haig's Return Home.**—Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig and his five Army Commanders receive enthusiastic welcome at Dover and in London when they return home.

1918

Sir Eric Geddes appointed to co-ordinate the activities of the various Government Departments in regard to demobilisation.

DEC. 20.—Proclamation published revoking and amending previous Proclamations issued during the war by withdrawing all prohibitions imposed by them on export of manufactured goods, except to Switzerland.

DEC. 21.—Executive Committee of Berlin Soldiers' Council dissolved, and a Central Council substituted.

Count Brockdorff-Rantzau succeeds Dr. Solf as Foreign Secretary of Germany.

Death of Dr. W. H. Page, late U.S. Ambassador to Great Britain.

DEC. 22.—A number of relaxations in food, building, and motoring control imposed during war announced.

DEC. 23.—Reported that British Government has informed Government of the Netherlands of its intention to forward supplies to British Army of Occupation on the Rhine by way of the Scheldt and Dutch Limburg.

Severe fighting in Berlin between sailors holding the Royal Palace and Berlin garrison.

DEC. 24.—King's Christmas greeting to the fighting forces published.

DEC. 25.—Sir Douglas Haig issues Special Order of the Day to troops in France congratulating them on their Victory Christmas Day.

DEC. 26.—**President Wilson arrives in London.**

DEC. 27.—Important conferences held in London between President Wilson, Mr. Lloyd George, and Mr. Balfour.

Announced British have captured two Bolshevist destroyers near Reval.

DEC. 28.—**Results of General Election announced.**—The Coalition Party under Mr. Lloyd George has a majority of 262 over all the other parties. The old Liberal Front Bench, with Mr. Asquith at its head, disappears from the House of Commons.

President Wilson receives Address of Welcome from City of London. In his speech at Guildhall, referring to League of Nations, the President said it had been delightful in his conference with the leaders of the British Government to find their hands moving along exactly the same lines.

DEC. 29.—Announced from Berlin that Government crisis has been solved by retirement of Independent Socialists from the Government.

Announced General Koltchak's troops have captured Perm from the Bolshevists, taking 18,000 prisoners and 60 guns.

Important speeches in French Chamber of Deputies by M. Pichon and M. Clemenceau. Latter defends the system of the balance of power, and remarks that it will be his guiding thought at the Conference.

Poland's Future.—Reports reach Copenhagen that the Polish leaders have resolved to occupy Danzig and to proclaim a Polish Republic, with M. Paderewski as President. The latter's arrival in Posen with a British Mission arouses great enthusiasm among the Poles.

DEC. 30.—President Wilson receives the Freedom of the City of Manchester.

DEC. 31.—President Wilson leaves for Paris after his five days' visit to England.

Capt. W. Leefe Robinson, V.C., recently returned from Germany, where he had been prisoner, dies at Stanmore.

1919

JAN. 1.—M. Paderewski arrives in Warsaw.

JAN. 2.—Germans evacuate Riga.

JAN. 4.—Bolshevist troops capture Riga.

JAN. 6.—Fighting in Berlin. Spartacus Party attempt to seize the administrative offices.

JAN. 8.—Sir Douglas Haig's despatch published, dealing with operations of British Armies in France and Belgium from May to Nov. 11, 1918.

JAN. 9.—Announced a Supreme Council has been established by Associated Governments, to deal with various questions involved in revictualling and supply of liberated and enemy

1919

territory. Lord Reading and Sir John Beale to represent Great Britain.

Dr. Karl Liebknecht reported killed in Berlin fighting.

JAN. 11.—New Ministry announced. Mr. Churchill, Secretary of State for War and Air Minister; Mr. Walter Long, First Lord of Admiralty.

Mr. Lloyd George and other British delegates leave for Peace Conference in Paris.

Republic proclaimed in Luxemburg; Grand Duchess retires.

Government forces in Berlin defeat Spartacus Party.

JAN. 12.—Inter-Allied Conference Representatives of Allied and Associated Governments sitting as the Supreme War Council at the Quai d'Orsay, Paris, consider various matters connected with the renewal of the armistice with Germany. Thereafter sitting in informal conference they exchange views in regard to procedure and other questions connected with the future Peace Conference.

JAN. 13.—Fall of Medina to King Hussein.

JAN. 15.—**New Armistice Terms.**—New Armistice Convention signed at Trèves prolonged armistice until Feb. 17.

Peace Conference.—Announced that Britain, America France, Italy, and Japan are to be represented by five delegates apiece. Two delegates are allotted to Australia, Canada, South Africa, and India, and one to New Zealand. Brazil is to have three, and following States two—Belgium, China, Greece, Poland, Portugal, the Czecho-Slovak Republic, Rumania, and Serbia. Other States are to have one.

Announced M. Paderewski becomes Prime Minister of Poland.

Karl Liebknecht and Rosa Luxemburg, the leaders of the Spartacists, killed in Berlin.

JAN. 18.—First Peace Conference meeting. The delegates are welcomed by President Poincaré, and M. Clemenceau is elected Chairman of the Conference.

JAN. 20.—Allied Peace Conference occupied with the subject of Russia.

JAN. 25.—Second plenary sitting of Peace Conference. It is resolved that a League of Nations should be established, and that this League should be treated as an integral part of the general Treaty of Peace.

JAN. 26.—Commissions are appointed to deal with breaches of the laws of war, responsibility of the authors of the war, reparation for damages, and other points.

JAN. 27.—The chief peace delegates in Paris discuss the future of German colonies and possessions in the Far East.

FEB. 3.—League of Nations Commission preliminary sitting.

FEB. 9.—Supreme Economic Council decided on.

FEB. 14.—**League of Nations Covenant** read by President Wilson to plenary sitting of Peace Conference.

MAR. 14.—Field-Marshal Sir Douglas Haig appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Forces in Great Britain in succession to General Sir William Robertson, who is given Command of the Army of the Rhine.

APRIL 29.—Full text of the League of Nations Covenant published.

MAY 1.—German delegates formally received at Versailles.

MAY 7.—Terms of peace presented to Germans at Versailles.

MAY 14.—Nurse Cavell's body arrives in England for burial.

MAY 21.—Period of grace granted to Germans for their observations on peace terms extended until May 29.

MAY 26.—Allies recognise Admiral Koltchak's Government.

MAY 27.—German counter-proposals to Allies peace terms announced from Berlin.

JUNE 2.—**Terms of peace presented to Austrian delegates** at St. Germain.

JUNE 16.—Allied final reply to German counter-proposals for peace communicated to Germans at Versailles, containing some concessions and modifications.

JUNE 21.—**End of German Fleet.**—At Scapa Flow all interned German battleships and battle-cruisers, except battleship Baden, five light cruisers, and a number of destroyers, are sunk by their crews.

JUNE 28.—**Peace Treaty signed.**—The peace treaty with Germany is signed in the Hall of Mirrors at Versailles by representatives of twenty-eight Allied and Associated Powers and Germany, whose delegates are Herr Hermann Müller and Dr. Bell.

End of Volume X.